

Transformed

128 Biblical Articles



by Sylvia Huffnagle

Transformed 121 Biblical Articles

By

Sylvia Huffnagle

E-BookTime, LLC

Montgomery, Alabama

Transformed

121 Biblical Articles

Copyright © 2009 by Sylvia Huffnagle

All rights reserved. No part of this book may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording, or by any information storage and retrieval system, without permission in writing from the copyright owner.

Library of Congress Control Number: 2009933552

ISBN: 978-1-60862-075-3

First Edition

Published August 2009

E-BookTime, LLC

6598 Pumpkin Road

Montgomery, AL 36108

www.e-booktime.com

[Introduction.](#) 7

[The Purpose for These Articles.](#) 9

[There is One God.](#) 11

[Why Did Jesus Have to Die?.](#) 12

[Jesus, the Second Adam..](#) 14

[Bible Passages Pointing to the Savior](#) 15

[Choose Life.](#) 30

[Living by Every Word of God.](#) 32

[Covenant Blessings.](#) 33

[The Father/Child Covenant Relationship.](#) 34

[How to Receive a New Heart](#) 36

[God's Peculiar People.](#) 38

[What We Have in Jesus.](#) 40

[Holy Spirit in the Earth.](#) 43

[The Fear of the Lord.](#) 46

[Keeping Scriptures in Context](#) 47

[Saved by Grace.](#) 51

[The Reconciliation.](#) 54

[God Heareth Not Sinners.](#) 55

[What God Says About Israel – Ezek: 36.](#) 56

Apologetics

[The Love of God.](#) 59

[The Great Commission.](#) 61

[The “True” Love of God.](#) 64

[What is Biblical Christianity.](#) 65

[What Do I Get?. 66](#)
[What about Evolution?. 69](#)
[The Rapture: to Be or Not to Be?. 70](#)
[The Scriptures Do Claim to Be Inerrant 76](#)
[Everything Happens for a Reason. 82](#)
[Punishment or the Breaks?. 86](#)
[Christianity Vs Humanism.. 86](#)
[Is it Faith or Presumption?. 87](#)
[The Inevitable Result 90](#)
[Christianity – The Way It Really Is. 100](#)
[Christians Believe Different 105](#)
[Lighten up?. 112](#)
[What about the Law?. 114](#)
[Why Christians Should Be Involved in Government 120](#)
[Works. 122](#)

Balance Series

[1. Biblical Balance. 129](#)
[2. Balanced Christianity. 130](#)
[3. Why Are So Many Christians Succumbing to Divorce?. 132](#)
[4. Love Rules Not Mercy. 135](#)
[5. God is the God of Past, Present, and Future. 137](#)
[6. He is Daddy and He is God. 138](#)
[7. Do You Have On the Wedding Garment?. 142](#)

[Biblical Prayers for the Saints. 143](#)
[Getting Your Prayers Answered. 146](#)
[Biblical Prayers for the Church and America. 147](#)
[If Your Armor is Not of God. 150](#)

[How to Enter the Promised Land.](#) 153
[Is Not This the Fast That I Have Chosen?.](#) 159
[It's the Engraved Word That Saves Your Soul](#) 161
[Prepare You the Way of the Lord.](#) 163
[Romans 6-8.](#) 164
[Who Can Receive from God?.](#) 168

Sowing Series

[1. Sowing and Reaping.](#) 177
[2. How to Sow the Word – Isa: 28.](#) 179
[3. A Time to Sow and a Time to Reap.](#) 182
[4. Break Up the Fallow Ground.](#) 183
[5. Sowing the Right Seeds.](#) 185
[6. They Have Sown Wheat, But Reaped Thorns.](#) 188

[We Must Put On the Mind of Christ – New Testament Thinking.](#) 192
[Relating Proverbs to Today.](#) 203
[Deliverence.](#) 213
[Paying the Price.](#) 215
[Overcoming the Carnal Nature.](#) 220
[God Covered Every Need.](#) 222
[The Blessings and Obedience Go Hand in Hand.](#) 223
[Break the Cycle.](#) 226
[How to Protect Your Heart](#) 228
[Circumcision of the Heart](#) 229
[Be Ye Transformed.](#) 231
[Be Not Worldly-minded.](#) 232
[My Sheep Hear My Voice.](#) 236
[The Kingdom of God.](#) 237

[Do Not Fear Man.](#) 246
[Endued With Power from On High.](#) 249
[Cancer! Cut it Out](#) 253
[Who are Christians to Fellowship With?.](#) 256
[Do You Act Like a Christian?.](#) 259
[Christian Witness.](#) 262
[Judging.](#) 265
[Our Light Affliction.](#) 269
[Who Is Going to Win?.](#) 275
[To Be Led By the Spirit](#) 276
[When God Raises Up a Ruler](#) 278
[It's the Little Foxes that Spoil the Vine.](#) 280

Church Series

[1. The Clear Call to Salvation.](#) 284
[2. Hebrews 10.](#) 285
[3. In 'Christ' the Church is Built Together](#) 287
[4. It's Time to Be the Church.](#) 294
[5. Washing One Another's Feet](#) 297
[6. The Spotless Bride of Christ](#) 298
[7. A Message for the Church.](#) 301
[8. If They Had Stood in My Council](#) 305
[9. Strangers in the Sanctuary.](#) 308
[10. Call the Solemn Assembly.](#) 312
[11. God's Plan of Salvation.](#) 316
[12. What Church is All About](#) 326
[13. The Writer's Ink.](#) 328

- [14. The Love of the Great Body.](#) 330
- [15. The Way is Straight and Narrow..](#) 332
- [16. The Prophet of the Five-fold Ministry.](#) 334
- [17. The Spirit of Co-operation in Operation.](#) 337
- [18. What Not To Wear](#) 338

End-Times Series

- [1. The Flying Scroll](#) 342
- [2. Warning! Worship God, the Creator](#) 345
- [3. Uncircumcised Ear – Jer: 6.](#) 350
- [4. Sound the Alarm..](#) 353
- [5. God’s Strange Army.](#) 356
- [6. The Beginnings of Birth Pangs.](#) 360
- [7. Revelation 12.](#) 363
- [8. Cares, Riches, and Lusts.](#) 365

- [9. Keep Active and Alert](#) 367
- [10. Jesus’ Letters to the Churches.](#) 370
- [11. The Word of God.](#) 375
- [12. Woe to the Foolish Prophets.](#) 377
- [13. The Saints Are Given Over](#) 380
- [14. Why is this Happening? – Jer: 4-5.](#) 385
- [15. The Man of Lawlessness.](#) 389
- [16. They Loved Not the Truth.](#) 392
- [17. Pray, that Ye Be Accounted Worthy.](#) 394

Introduction

These articles are unique in that you will not find them to be repeats of former articles that you have read. Nor will you feel that they mimic the average sermon you may have heard. For they have been written from the prophet's perspective. They were inspired by God and their intent is to open the eyes of the people to see what the Bible really says and what the Bible really teaches. TIME SAVING – for the earnest inquirer, all Bible text is included in the articles. This is a distinctive and very handy feature, but it has added to the cost of the book.

The Purpose for These Articles

Col: 1:9-19: For this cause we also, since the day we heard it, do not cease to pray for you, and to desire that ye might be filled with the knowledge of his will in all wisdom and spiritual understanding; That ye might walk worthy of the Lord unto all pleasing, being fruitful in every good work, and increasing in the knowledge of God; Strengthened with all might, according to his glorious power, unto all patience and longsuffering with joyfulness; Giving thanks unto the Father, which hath made us meet to be partakers of the inheritance of the saints in light: Who hath delivered us from the power of darkness, and hath translated us into the kingdom of his dear Son: In whom we have redemption through his blood, even the forgiveness of sins: Who is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn of every creature: For by him were all things created, that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether they be thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers: all things were created by him, and for him. And he is before all things, and by him all things consist. And he is the head of the body, the church: who is the beginning, the firstborn from the dead; that in all things he might have the preeminence. For it pleased the Father that in him should all fulness dwell;

There is One God

There is one God; the God of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob. In God's communication with Israel He revealed why Adam fell. It was because he put his own desires before what was right. God reveals what is right in the law and judgments. In Deut: 28 He reveals the blessings of living right (following Him) and the inevitable results of not following Him (curses). He promised to be their God if they would heed or listen to Him, but they kept backsliding and eventually only Judah had any relationship with God at all and they became subject to the Romans. It was time for God's Savior! God sent the answer to all of mankind's problems...there is born this day in the city of Bethlehem, a SAVIOR, which is Christ, the Lord.

That Savior is Jesus and He said: Think not that I have come to destroy the law and the prophets, I am not come to destroy, but to fulfill. How did Jesus fulfill the law? First, why couldn't the Jews obey the law? Rom: 7:14 says the law is spiritual, but we are carnal – flesh-minded. The details of how the Savior saves us are found in Rom: 6-8, especially Rom: 8:3-8: For God has done what the law could not do, [its power] being weakened by the flesh [that is, the entire nature of man without the Holy Spirit]. Sending His own Son in the guise of sinful flesh and as an offering for sin, [God] condemned sin in the flesh– subdued, overcame, deprived it of its power [over all who accepted that sacrifice. So that the righteous and just requirements of the Law might be fully met in us who live and move not in the ways of the flesh, but in the ways of the Spirit – our lives governed not by the standards and according to the dictates of the flesh, but controlled by the (Holy) Spirit. (Amp. V.) For they that are after the flesh do mind the things of the flesh (such as Adam did), but they that are after the Spirit, the things of the Spirit. (Such as Jesus did) for to be carnally minded is death; but to be spiritually minded is life and peace. Because the carnal mind is enmity against God: for it is not subject to the law of God neither indeed can be. Then in Rom: 8:14 it says: So they that are in the flesh cannot please God.

Jesus remained sinless because he was born spiritually alive – that's why he was born of a virgin without an earthly father – and walked by the Spirit and not by the flesh. He did what Adam was supposed to do, but didn't. Therefore he is called the second Adam.

How does all this help us? Gal: 2:20: I am crucified with Christ: nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me. The Amplified Bible says it this way: the life which I now live in the flesh I live by the faith in the Son of God, who loved me, and gave Himself for me.

So we are saved from sin and death by receiving Jesus' sacrifice for us and receiving Jesus into our heart as Lord. We are thereby "born again" of the Spirit of God and become as Adam and Eve were before the fall. Then, having Jesus as Lord (the one we obey), we can walk the walk and talk the talk just as He did. By our choice, we enter into His crucifixion to deaden the carnal nature, which gained ascendancy and power through Adam's choice, and we are raised to new life by letting the Spirit of Christ reign in our hearts. The Gospel proclaims that we are restored to the place we had with God before the fall and that believers live under grace, meaning if and when they fail, they can get up and try again. So we have more than Adam and Eve had. We have the one who overcame, as our Lord, we have grace, the blood, the knowledge as well as the Spirit. PTL

Why Did Jesus Have to Die?

When Adam and Eve *chose* the knowledge of good and evil and *chose* to listen to the liar and *chose* to disobey and distrust God and *chose* to do their own thing instead of what was right, they were *making a choice* to die spiritually because God had warned them that that is what would happen if they ate that fruit.

When they died spiritually, they were alienated from God. God could no longer be their Father, *because they no longer had the spirit to obey him*. They had a spirit to do their own thing and a spirit to listen to half truths and lies in order to justify what they wanted to do.

The Bible then records what happens to mankind when they make bad choices and it records how God in his mercy rescued mankind over and over. And then at just the right time, God sent Jesus to provide the way of true and eternal salvation.

How? Jesus was born of a virgin by the Holy Spirit so that he could be spiritually alive just like Adam and Eve were before the fall. You see everything bears after its own kind so all people after Adam and Eve were born spiritually dead, up until Jesus.

God taught his Son, Jesus, all his precepts, teachings, and promises in the Old Testament, opening up their meaning to him. Jesus learned to walk by the spirit and not by the flesh as Adam and Eve had done. *He walked the walk and talked the talk*. He always obeyed the Father. He refused to listen to reasoning that would justify

his own desires.

When he had accomplished his mission of overcoming sin, he further obeyed his Father and offered himself as the sinless offering for all of mankind. Why did he have to do that? He was taking our place so that we could take his. He had to choose to give up his life because Adam and Eve had chosen to have their own life apart from God. (Mankind soon learned that life without God [light, life, love] is death.) Jesus had to bear our sins and sicknesses so that we wouldn't have to. And he had to counter everything that Adam and Eve chose in order to restore. They chose self, he chose righteousness. They listened to the liar, he listened to God. They did their own thing, he did God's bidding. They sinned; he committed the greatest act of Agape Love. They gave the kingdom over to Satan by submitting to him and Jesus took the kingdom back by ruling over all temptation and keeping God on the throne of his heart. He never listened to the liar. (Satan) The kingdom belongs to him and he's coming back to rule very soon.

He had to die in order to provide a way for mankind's carnal nature to be crucified. Remember, Adam and Eve had given their carnal or flesh nature ascendancy, *i.e.* power. Jesus had to deny the carnal nature entirely and to the uttermost in order to defuse it. That's God's plan of redemption – *He restores our choice*. He washes away our sin in the blood of the pure lamb, Jesus. Who can argue with such a powerful cleansing agent as pure blood shed for mankind? Through Jesus, God restores those who choose him – choose life, choose righteousness – back to spiritual life. In order to have your soul saved, you must put on the Lord Jesus Christ and learn to walk by the spirit and not by the flesh. Learn to do what God teaches even when your lower nature abhors it.

Go for it! You need Jesus!

Ref: Gen: 1-3, Deut. 30:19-20, Isa: 61-62, Jn: 3:16, Rom: 5-8, 1Cor: 15:21-26, 45-49, 2Corinth: 5:21, 1Jn: 4:10

Ask him to save you, right now. Ask God to forgive you for sinning. Ask Jesus to come into your heart and rule and reign there. He'll give you a new nature. Get a Bible and study to show yourself approved. Be a hearer and a doer of the Word. Remember, everything we receive from God is by faith.

No, God did not send Jesus to the cross because he couldn't look at sin. He wanted a relationship with us, so he had to make a way to cleanse us.

God sent Jesus to the cross to do everything that needed done, so that God could have sons and daughters.

Isa: 9:6-7: For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given: and the government shall be upon his shoulder: and his name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, The mighty God, The everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace.

Of the increase of his government and peace there shall be no end, upon the throne of David, and upon his kingdom, to order it, and to establish it with judgment and with justice from henceforth even for ever. The zeal of the LORD of hosts will perform this.

Jesus, the Second Adam

Jesus, the Second Adam, came to fix what the first Adam messed up when he made a wrong choice.

Adam and Eve had a major choice to make in the Garden of Eden. They could choose to obey God (hearken unto the Father) or they could hearken unto the liar (at that time in the form of a snake). The liar (devil, Satan) encouraged Eve to go ahead and do what she wanted to do, which was taste the forbidden fruit. He even went so far as to tell her that she would not die as God had said, but that she would be wise like God. She had a major choice to make. Would she choose righteousness or would she choose to do her own thing? She ate of the fruit. She offered Adam some of the fruit and he ate of the fruit.

They made one wrong choice and gave sin and death opportunity in the earth. Their one wrong choice caused their immediate spiritual death and eventually their physical death. Their one bad choice caused them to become subject to the liar, making him god of this world. Their one bad choice also gave pre-eminence to their lower nature (carnal nature, flesh) so that from that time on they would be strongly tempted to obey the desires of their mind and bodies rather than doing the right thing. Their choice was selfish and selfish choices have caused all the innocent bloodshed that has been shed in the world. History tells the bloody story of man's struggle to save himself from tyranny, oppression, sickness, disease, assaults, greed, poverty, starvation, pestilence, loneliness, heartaches, and untimely deaths. There was no way or . . . was there?

There is one who is called The Way. Let me tell you what He did. He was born 4000 years after Adam and Eve. He was sent by God to fix all the damage caused by Adam and Eve's bad choice. His name is Jesus and He was born of a virgin and born of God so that He could be born flesh and blood, yet be spiritually alive as Adam and Eve were before the fall. Being flesh and blood, He was tempted like we are. He lived His life here cleaving to God and resisting evil – just as God has told us to do. He lived His life loving God with all His heart, mind, soul, and strength – just as we are told to do. He lived His life on earth walking by the spirit – not by His carnal desires – once we are born again; we are mandated to walk by the spirit – where God lives – and not by our carnal desires. He lived His life here believing, trusting, and obeying God – just as we are told to do. His life is a picture of what God is creating and what God expects of His sons. He walked the walk and talked the talk.

Once Jesus had ruled over His carnal nature and walked it out, He was in a position to do something about eternal death. It was in the Garden of Gethsemane that the second Adam met His Waterloo. It was the same scenario as Adam and Eve in the other garden. He sweated like great drops of blood as He resisted the liar (tempter) who was trying to get Him to choose His lower nature. The liar tried to tell Him that surely His loving Father would not require this of Him. But He prayed for God's will to be done and not His will. He made the

right choice. He chose to believe God and not the liar. He chose righteousness and agape love over self. He chose to shed His innocent blood for the world making complete atonement for Adam and Eve's wrong choice. He chose to die so that we can live. He gave His spiritual nature pre-eminence over His carnal nature. In making these right choices He took the kingdom back from Satan and paid the price so that we can be saved from the penalty of sin and be given spiritual life again.

Now we have a choice to make – we can choose to follow Adam, but if we do, we will surely die just as he did. Or we can choose to follow Jesus, be born again of the Spirit of God and learn to walk by the spirit and not by the flesh and be sons of the living God.

Ref: Gen: 1:26-28, 3:1-19, Isa: 53, 54, Jn: 3, Rom: 3:10-18, 5:8, 5:14-21, 6:23, Rom: 6-8, 1Cor: 15:21, 50, 2Cor: 5:21, Gal: 5:16-26, Eph: 2:1-6

Bible Passages Pointing to the Savior

Bible Passages Pointing to Jesus and His Mission:

Jn: 3:16-21: For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life. 17: For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through him might be saved. 18: He that believeth on him is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God. 19: And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil. 20: For every one that doeth evil hateth the light, neither cometh to the light, lest his deeds should be reproved. 21: But he that doeth truth cometh to the light, that his deeds may be made manifest, that they are wrought in God.

His Mission:

Jer: 24:7: And I will give them an heart to know Me, that I am the Lord: and they shall be My people, and I will be their God: for they shall return unto Me with their whole heart.

Jer: 32:39: And I will give them one heart, and one way that they may fear me for ever, for the good of them, and of their children after them: (This is what God intended the new birth to do.)

Ezek: 11:19: And I will give them one heart, and I will put a new spirit within you; and I will take the stony heart out of their flesh, and will give them a heart of flesh: (This is what Jesus' sacrifice was really about. Through what He did we can receive this new heart – a heart to please God.)

Ezek: 18:31-32: A new heart also will I give you, and a new spirit will I put within you: and I will take away the stony heart out of your flesh, and I will give you a heart of flesh. And I will put my spirit within you, and cause you to walk in my statutes, and ye shall keep my judgments, and do them. (This is the covenant – Heb: 8:10)

Joel: 2:12-13: Therefore also now, saith the Lord, turn ye even to me with all your heart, and with fasting, and with weeping, and with mourning: And rend your heart, and not your garments, and turn unto the Lord your God: for He is gracious and merciful, slow to anger, and of great kindness, and repenteth Him of the evil. (This is how you receive it.)

Matt: 15:8-9: This people draweth nigh unto me with their mouth, and honoureth me with their lips; but their heart is far from me. But in vain they do worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men. (This is why people don't receive it.)

Heb: 8:10: For this is the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel after those days, saith the Lord; I will put my laws into their mind, and write them in their hearts: and I will be to them a God, and they shall be to me a people:

1Jn: 5:11-13: And this is the record that God hath given to us eternal life, and this life is in his Son. He that hath the Son hath life; and he that hath not the Son of God hath not life. These things have I written unto you that believe on the name of the Son of God; that ye may know that ye have eternal life, and that ye may believe on the name of the Son of God.

The Promise of a Savior:

Deut: 18:15: The LORD thy God will raise up unto thee a Prophet from the midst of thee, of thy brethren, like unto me; unto him ye shall hearken;

Isa: 4:1-6: And in that day seven women shall take hold of one man, saying, We will eat our own bread, and wear our own apparel: only let us be called by thy name, to take away our reproach. 2: In that day shall the branch of the LORD be beautiful and glorious, and the fruit of the earth shall be excellent and comely for them that are escaped of Israel. 3: And it shall come to pass, that he that is left in Zion, and he that remaineth in Jerusalem, shall be called holy, even every one that is written among the living in Jerusalem: 4: When the Lord shall have washed away the filth of the daughters of Zion, and shall have purged the blood of Jerusalem from the midst thereof by the spirit of judgment, and by the spirit of burning. 5: And the LORD will create upon every dwelling place of mount Zion, and upon her assemblies, a cloud and smoke by day, and the shining of a flaming fire by night: for upon all the glory shall be a defence. 6: And there shall be a tabernacle for a shadow in the daytime from the heat, and for a place of refuge, and for a covert from storm and from rain.

Isa: 9:6-7: For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given: and the government shall be upon his shoulder: and his name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, The mighty God, The everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace. 7: Of the increase of his government and peace there shall be no end, upon the throne of David, and upon his kingdom, to order it, and to establish it with judgment and with justice from henceforth even for ever. The zeal of the LORD of hosts will perform this.

Isa: 11:1-16: And there shall come forth a rod out of the stem of Jesse, and a Branch shall grow out of his roots: 2: And the spirit of the LORD shall rest upon him, the spirit of wisdom and understanding, the spirit of counsel and might, the spirit of knowledge and of the fear of the LORD; 3: And shall make him of quick understanding in the fear of the LORD: and he shall not judge after the sight of his eyes, neither reprove after the hearing of his ears: 4: But with righteousness shall he judge the poor, and reprove with equity for the meek of the earth: and he shall smite the earth with the rod of his mouth, and with the breath of his lips shall he slay the wicked. 5: And righteousness shall be the girdle of his loins, and faithfulness the girdle of his reins. 6: The wolf also shall dwell with the lamb, and the leopard shall lie down with the kid; and the calf and the young lion and the fatling together; and a little child shall lead them. 7: And the cow and the bear shall feed; their young ones shall lie down together: and the lion shall eat straw like the ox. 8: And the sucking child shall play on the hole of the asp, and the weaned child shall put his hand on the cockatrice' den. 9: They shall not hurt nor destroy in all my holy mountain: for the earth shall be full of the knowledge of the LORD, as the waters cover the sea. 10: And in that day there shall be a root of Jesse, which shall stand for an ensign of the people; to it shall the Gentiles seek: and his rest shall be glorious. 11: And it shall come to pass in that day, that the Lord shall set his hand again the second time to recover the remnant of his people, which shall be left, from Assyria, and from Egypt, and from Pathros, and from Cush, and from Elam, and from Shinar, and from Hamath, and from the islands of the sea. 12: And he shall set up an ensign for the nations, and shall assemble the outcasts of Israel, and gather together the dispersed of Judah from the four corners of the earth. 13: The envy also of Ephraim shall depart, and the adversaries of Judah shall be cut off: Ephraim shall not envy Judah, and Judah shall not vex Ephraim. 14: But they shall fly upon the shoulders of the Philistines toward the west; they shall spoil them of the east together: they shall lay their hand upon Edom and Moab; and the children of Ammon shall obey them. 15: And the LORD shall utterly destroy the tongue of the Egyptian sea; and with his mighty wind shall he shake his hand over the

river, and shall smite it in the seven streams, and make men go over dryshod. 16: And there shall be an highway for the remnant of his people, which shall be left, from Assyria; like as it was to Israel in the day that he came up out of the land of Egypt.

Isa: 28:16: Therefore thus saith the Lord GOD, Behold, I lay in Zion for a foundation a stone, a tried stone, a precious corner stone, a sure foundation: he that believeth shall not make haste.

Isa: 35:1-10: The wilderness and the solitary place shall be glad for them; and the desert shall rejoice, and blossom as the rose. 2: It shall blossom abundantly, and rejoice even with joy and singing: the glory of Lebanon shall be given unto it, the excellency of Carmel and Sharon, they shall see the glory of the LORD, and the excellency of our God. 3: Strengthen ye the weak hands, and confirm the feeble knees. 4: Say to them that are of a fearful heart, Be strong, fear not: behold, your God will come with vengeance, even God with a recompence; he will come and save you. 5: Then the eyes of the blind shall be opened, and the ears of the deaf shall be unstopped. 6: Then shall the lame man leap as an hart, and the tongue of the dumb sing: for in the wilderness shall waters break out, and streams in the desert. 7: And the parched ground shall become a pool, and the thirsty land springs of water: in the habitation of dragons, where each lay, shall be grass with reeds and rushes. 8: And an highway shall be there, and a way, and it shall be called The way of holiness; the unclean shall not pass over it; but it shall be for those: the wayfaring men, though fools, shall not err therein. 9: No lion shall be there, nor shall any ravenous beast go up thereon, it shall not be found there; but the redeemed shall walk there: 10: And the ransomed of the LORD shall return, and come to Zion with songs and everlasting joy upon their heads: they shall obtain joy and gladness, and sorrow and sighing shall flee away.

Isa: 42:1-7: Behold my servant, whom I uphold; mine elect, in whom my soul delighteth; I have put my spirit upon him: he shall bring forth judgment to the Gentiles. 2: He shall not cry, nor lift up, nor cause his voice to be heard in the street. 3: A bruised reed shall he not break, and the smoking flax shall he not quench: he shall bring forth judgment unto truth. 4: He shall not fail nor be discouraged, till he have set judgment in the earth: and the isles shall wait for his law. 5: Thus saith God the LORD, he that created the heavens, and stretched them out; he that spread forth the earth, and that which cometh out of it; he that giveth breath unto the people upon it, and spirit to them that walk therein: 6: I the LORD have called thee in righteousness, and will hold thine hand, and will keep thee, and give thee for a covenant of the people, for a light of the Gentiles; 7: To open the blind eyes, to bring out the prisoners from the prison, and them that sit in darkness out of the prison house.

Jn: 7:42: Hath not the scripture said, That Christ cometh of the seed of David, and out of the town of Bethlehem, where David was?

1 Pet: 2:6: Wherefore also it is contained in the scripture, Behold, I lay in Sion a chief corner stone, elect, precious: and he that believeth on him shall not be confounded. (Isa: 28:16)

Jesus' Ministry:

Ps: 7:1-12: Why do the heathen rage, and the people imagine a vain thing? 2: The kings of the earth set themselves, and the rulers take counsel together, against the LORD, and against his anointed, saying, 3: Let us break their bands asunder, and cast away their cords from us. 4: He that sitteth in the heavens shall laugh: the Lord shall have them in derision. 5: Then shall he speak unto them in his wrath, and vex them in his sore displeasure. 6: Yet have I set my king upon my holy hill of Zion. 7: I will declare the decree: the LORD hath said unto me, Thou art my Son; this day have I begotten thee. 8: Ask of me, and I shall give thee the heathen for thine inheritance, and the uttermost parts of the earth for thy possession. 9: Thou shalt break them with a rod of iron; thou shalt dash them in pieces like a potter's vessel. 10: Be wise now therefore, O ye kings: be instructed, ye judges of the earth. 11: Serve the LORD with fear, and rejoice with trembling. 12: Kiss the Son, lest he be angry, and ye perish from the way, when his wrath is kindled but a little. Blessed are all they that put their trust in him.

Ps: 78:1-7: Give ear, O my people, to my law: incline your ears to the words of my mouth. 2: I will open my mouth in a parable: I will utter dark sayings of old: 3: Which we have heard and known, and our fathers have told us. 4: We will not hide them from their children, shewing to the generation to come the praises of the LORD, and his strength, and his wonderful works that he hath done. 5: For he established a testimony in Jacob, and appointed a law in Israel, which he commanded our fathers, that they should make them known to their children: 6: That the generation to come might know them, even the children which should be born; who should arise and declare them to their children: 7: That they might set their hope in God, and not forget the works of God, but keep his commandments:

Isa: 49:1-26: Listen, O isles, unto me; and hearken, ye people, from far; The LORD hath called me from the womb; from the bowels of my mother hath he made mention of my name. 2: And he hath made my mouth like a sharp sword; in the shadow of his hand hath he hid me, and made me a polished shaft; in his quiver hath he hid me; 3: And said unto me, Thou art my servant, O Israel, in whom I will be glorified. 4: Then I said, I have laboured in vain, I have spent my strength for nought, and in vain: yet surely my judgment is with the LORD, and my work with my God. 5: And now, saith the LORD that formed me from the womb to be his servant, to bring Jacob again to him, Though Israel be not gathered, yet shall I be glorious in the eyes of the LORD, and my God shall be my strength. 6: And he said, It is a light thing that thou shouldest be my servant to raise up the tribes of Jacob, and to restore the preserved of Israel: I will also give thee for a light to the Gentiles, that thou mayest be my salvation unto the end of the earth. 7: Thus saith the LORD, the Redeemer of Israel, and his Holy One, to him whom man despiseth, to him whom the nation abhorreth, to a servant of rulers, Kings shall see and arise, princes also shall worship, because of the LORD that is faithful, and the Holy One of Israel, and he shall choose thee. 8: Thus saith the LORD, In an acceptable time have I heard thee, and in a day of salvation have I helped thee: and I will preserve thee, and give thee for a covenant of the people, to establish the earth, to cause to inherit the desolate heritages; 9: That thou mayest say to the prisoners, Go forth; to them that are in darkness,

Shew yourselves. They shall feed in the ways, and their pastures shall be in all high places. 10: They shall not hunger nor thirst; neither shall the heat nor sun smite them: for he that hath mercy on them shall lead them, even by the springs of water shall he guide them. 11: And I will make all my mountains a way and my highways shall be exalted. 12: Behold, these shall come from far: and, lo, these from the north and from the west; and these from the land of Sinim. 13: Sing, O heavens; and be joyful, O earth; and break forth into singing, O mountains: for the LORD hath comforted his people, and will have mercy upon his afflicted. 14: But Zion said, The LORD hath forsaken me, and my Lord hath forgotten me. 15: Can a woman forget her sucking child, that she should not have compassion on the son of her womb? yea, they may forget, yet will I not forget thee. 16: Behold, I have graven thee upon the palms of my hands; thy walls are continually before me. 17: Thy children shall make haste; thy destroyers and they that made thee waste shall go forth of thee. 18: Lift up thine eyes round about, and behold: all these gather themselves together, and come to thee. As I live, saith the LORD, thou shalt surely clothe thee with them all, as with an ornament, and bind them on thee, as a bride doeth. 19: For thy waste and thy desolate places, and the land of thy destruction, shall even now be too narrow by reason of the inhabitants, and they that swallowed thee up shall be far away. 20: The children which thou shalt have, after thou hast lost the other, shall say again in thine ears, The place is too strait for me: give place to me that I may dwell. 21: Then shalt thou say in thine heart, Who hath begotten me these, seeing I have lost my children, and am desolate, a captive, and removing to and fro? and who hath brought up these? Behold, I was left alone; these, where had they been? 22: Thus saith the Lord GOD, Behold, I will lift up mine hand to the Gentiles, and set up my standard to the people: and they shall bring thy sons in their arms, and thy daughters shall be carried upon their shoulders. 23: And kings shall be thy nursing fathers, and their queens thy nursing mothers: they shall bow down to thee with their face toward the earth, and lick up the dust of thy feet; and thou shalt know that I am the LORD: for they shall not be ashamed that wait for me. 24: Shall the prey be taken from the mighty, or the lawful captive delivered? 25: But thus saith the LORD, Even the captives of the mighty shall be taken away, and the prey of the terrible shall be delivered: for I will contend with him that contendeth with thee, and I will save thy children. 26: And I will feed them that oppress thee with their own flesh; and they shall be drunken with their own blood, as with sweet wine: and all flesh shall know that I the LORD am thy Saviour and thy Redeemer, the mighty One of Jacob.

Isa: 61:1-7: Give ear, O my people, to my law: incline your ears to the words of my mouth. 2: I will open my mouth in a parable: I will utter dark sayings of old: 3: Which we have heard and known, and our fathers have told us. 4: We will not hide them from their children, shewing to the generation to come the praises of the LORD, and his strength, and his wonderful works that he hath done. 5: For he established a testimony in Jacob, and appointed a law in Israel, which he commanded our fathers, that they should make them known to their children: 6: That the generation to come might know them, even the children which should be born; who should arise and declare them to their children: 7: That they might set their hope in God, and not forget the works of God, but keep his commandments:

Mk: 12:10: And have ye not read this scripture; The stone which the builders rejected is become the head of the corner:

Lk: 4:17-22: And there was delivered unto him the book of the prophet Esaias. And when he had opened the book, he found the place where it was written, 18: The Spirit of the Lord is upon me, because he hath anointed me to preach the gospel to the poor; he hath sent me to heal the brokenhearted, to preach deliverance to the captives, and recovering of sight to the blind, to set at liberty them that are bruised, 19: To preach the acceptable year of the Lord. 20: And he closed the book, and he gave it again to the minister, and sat down. And the eyes of all them that were in the synagogue were fastened on him. 21: And he began to say unto them, This day is this scripture fulfilled in your ears. 22: And all bare him witness, and wondered at the gracious words which proceeded out of his mouth. And they said, Is not this Joseph's son?

Crucifixion:

Zech: 11:10-13: And I took my staff, even Beauty, and cut it assunder, that I might break my covenant which I had made with all the people. 11: And it was broken in that day: and so the poor of the flock that waited upon me knew that it was the word of the LORD. 12: And I said unto them, If ye think good, give me my price; and if not, forbear. So they weighed for my price thirty pieces of silver. 13: And the LORD said unto me, Cast it unto the potter: a goodly price that I was prised at of them. And I took the thirty pieces of silver, and cast them to the potter in the house of the LORD.

Ps: 22:1-31: My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me? why art thou so far from helping me, and from the words of my roaring? 2: O my God, I cry in the daytime, but thou hearest not; and in the night season, and am not silent. 3: But thou art holy, O thou that inhabitest the praises of Israel. 4: Our fathers trusted in thee: they trusted, and thou didst deliver them. 5: They cried unto thee, and were delivered: they trusted in thee, and were not confounded. 6: But I am a worm, and no man; a reproach of men, and despised of the people. 7: All they that see me laugh me to scorn: they shoot out the lip, they shake the head saying, 8: He trusted on the LORD that he would deliver him: let him deliver him, seeing he delighted in him. 9: But thou art he that took me out of the womb: thou didst make me hope when I was upon my mother's breasts. 10: I was cast upon thee from the womb: thou art my God from my mother's belly. 11: Be not far from me; for trouble is near; for there is none to help. 12: Many bulls have compassed me: strong bulls of Bashan have beset me round. 13: They gaped upon me with their mouths, as a ravening and a roaring lion. 14: I am poured out like water, and all my bones are out of joint: my heart is like wax; it is melted in the midst of my bowels. 15: My strength is dried up like a potsherd; and my tongue cleaveth to my jaws; and thou hast brought me into the dust of death. 16: For dogs have compassed me: the assembly of the wicked have inclosed me: they pierced my hands and my feet. 17: I may tell all my bones: they look and stare upon me. 18: They part my garments among them, and cast lots upon my vesture. 19: But be not thou far from me, O LORD: O my strength, haste thee to help me. 20: Deliver my soul from the sword; my darling from the power of the dog. 21: Save me from the lion's mouth: for thou hast heard me from the horns of the unicorns. 22: I will declare thy name unto my brethren: in the midst of the congregation will I praise thee. 23: Ye that fear the LORD, praise him; all ye the seed of Jacob, glorify him; and fear him, all ye the seed of Israel. 24: For he hath not despised nor abhorred the affliction of the afflicted; neither hath he hid his face from him; but when he cried unto him, he heard. 25: My praise shall be of thee in the great congregation: I will pay my vows before them that fear him. 26: The meek shall eat and be satisfied: they shall

praise the LORD that seek him: your heart shall live for ever. 27: All the ends of the world shall remember and turn unto the LORD: and all the kindreds of the nations shall worship before thee. 28: For the kingdom is the LORD's: and he is the governor among the nations. 29: All they that be fat upon earth shall eat and worship: all they that go down to the dust shall bow before him: and none can keep alive his own soul. 30: A seed shall serve him; it shall be accounted to the Lord for a generation. 31: They shall come, and shall declare his righteousness unto a people that shall be born, that he hath done this.

Ps: 69:19-21: Thou hast known my reproach, and my shame, and my dishonour: mine adversaries are all before thee. 20: Reproach hath broken my heart; and I am full of heaviness: and I looked for some to take pity, but there was none; and for comforters, but I found none. 21: They gave me also gall for my meat; and in my thirst they gave me vinegar to drink.

Isa: 50:1-11: Thus saith the LORD, Where is the bill of your mother's divorcement, whom I have put away? or which of my creditors is it to whom I have sold you? Behold, for your iniquities have ye sold yourselves, and for your transgressions is your mother put away. 2: Wherefore, when I came, was there no man? when I called, was there none to answer? Is my hand shortened at all, that it cannot redeem? or have I no power to deliver? behold, at my rebuke I dry up the sea, I make the rivers a wilderness: their fish stinketh, because there is no water, and dieth for thirst. 3: I clothe the heavens with blackness, and I make sackcloth their covering. 4: The Lord GOD hath given me the tongue of the learned, that I should know how to speak a word in season to him that is weary: he wakeneth morning by morning, he wakeneth mine ear to hear as the learned. 5: The Lord GOD hath opened mine ear, and I was not rebellious, neither turned away back. 6: I gave my back to the smiters, and my cheeks to them that plucked off the hair: I hid not my face from shame and spitting. 7: For the Lord GOD will help me; therefore shall I not be confounded: therefore have I set my face like a flint, and I know that I shall not be ashamed. 8: He is near that justifieth me; who will contend with me? let us stand together: who is mine adversary? let him come near to me. 9: Behold, the Lord GOD will help me; who is he that shall condemn me? lo, they all shall wax old as a garment; the moth shall eat them up. 10: Who is among you that feareth the LORD, that obeyeth the voice of his servant, that walketh in darkness, and hath no light? let him trust in the name of the LORD, and stay upon his God. 11: Behold, all ye that kindle a fire, that compass yourselves about with sparks: walk in the light of your fire, and in the sparks that ye have kindled. This shall ye have of mine hand; ye shall lie down in sorrow.

Ps: 118:22-29: The stone which the builders refused is become the head stone of the corner. 23: This is the LORD's doing; it is marvellous in our eyes. 24: This is the day which the LORD hath made; we will rejoice and be glad in it. 25: Save now, I beseech thee, O LORD: O LORD, I beseech thee, send now prosperity. 26: Blessed be he that cometh in the name of the LORD: we have blessed you out of the house of the LORD. 27: God is the LORD, which hath shewed us light: bind the sacrifice with cords, even unto the horns of the altar. 28: Thou art my God, and I will praise thee: thou art my God, I will exalt thee. 29: O give thanks unto the LORD; for he is good: for his mercy endureth for ever.

Zech: 13:1-9: In that day there shall be a fountain opened to the house of David and to the inhabitants of Jerusalem for sin and for uncleanness. 2: And it shall come to pass in that day, saith the LORD of hosts, that I will cut off the names of the idols out of the land, and they shall no more be remembered: and also I will cause the prophets and the unclean spirit to pass out of the land. 3: And it shall come to pass, that when any shall yet prophesy, then his father and his mother that begat him shall say unto him, Thou shalt not live; for thou speakest lies in the name of the LORD: and his father and his mother that begat him shall thrust him through when he prophesieth. 4: And it shall come to pass in that day, that the prophets shall be ashamed every one of his vision, when he hath prophesied; neither shall they wear a rough garment to deceive: 5: But he shall say, I am no prophet, I am an husbandman; for man taught me to keep cattle from my youth. 6: And one shall say unto him, What are these wounds in thine hands? Then he shall answer, Those with which I was wounded in the house of my friends. 7: Awake, O sword, against my shepherd, and against the man that is my fellow, saith the LORD of hosts: smite the shepherd, and the sheep shall be scattered: and I will turn mine hand upon the little ones. 8: And it shall come to pass, that in all the land, saith the LORD, two parts therein shall be cut off and die; but the third shall be left therein. 9: And I will bring the third part through the fire, and will refine them as silver is refined, and will try them as gold is tried: they shall call on my name, and I will hear them: I will say, It is my people: and they shall say, The LORD is my God.

Zech: 12:7-10: The LORD also shall save the tents of Judah first, that the glory of the house of David and the glory of the inhabitants of Jerusalem do not magnify themselves against Judah. 8: In that day shall the LORD defend the inhabitants of Jerusalem; and he that is feeble among them at that day shall be as David; and the house of David shall be as God, as the angel of the LORD before them. 9: And it shall come to pass in that day, that I will seek to destroy all the nations that come against Jerusalem. 10: And I will pour upon the house of David, and upon the inhabitants of Jerusalem, the spirit of grace and of supplications: and they shall look upon me whom they have pierced, and they shall mourn for him, as one mourneth for his only son, and shall be in bitterness for him, as one that is in bitterness for his firstborn.

Mk: 15:28: And the scripture was fulfilled, which saith, And he was numbered with the transgressors.

Jn: 13:18: I speak not of you all: I know whom I have chosen: but that the scripture may be fulfilled, He that eateth bread with me hath lifted up his heel against me. (Ps: 41:9)

Jn: 19:24: They said therefore among themselves; Let us not rend it, but cast lots for it, whose it shall be: that the scripture might be fulfilled, which saith, They parted my raiment among them, and for my vesture they did cast lots. These things therefore the soldiers did.

Jn: 19:36: For these things were done, that the scripture should be fulfilled, A bone of him shall not be broken. (Ps: 34:20)

Jn: 19:37: And again another scripture saith, They shall look on him whom they pierced. (Zech: 12:10)

Acts:8:32: The place of the scripture which he read was this, He was led as a sheep to the slaughter; and like a lamb dumb before his shearer, so opened he not his mouth: (Isa: 53:7-8)

Resurrection:

Ps: 16:10-11: For thou wilt not leave my soul in hell; neither wilt thou suffer thine Holy One to see corruption.
11: Thou wilt shew me the path of life: in thy presence is fulness of joy; at thy right hand there are pleasures for evermore.

Jn: 2:22: When therefore he was risen from the dead, his disciples remembered that he had said this unto them; and they believed the scripture, and the word which Jesus had said.

Jn: 19:28: After this, Jesus knowing that all things were now accomplished, that the scripture might be fulfilled, saith, I thirst. (Ps: 69:21)

Jn: 20:9: For as yet they knew not the scripture, that he must rise again from the dead. (Ps: 16:10)

Ascension:

Ps: 68:18-19: Thou hast ascended on high, thou hast led captivity captive: thou hast received gifts for men; yea, for the rebellious also, that the LORD God might dwell among them. 19: Blessed be the Lord, who daily loadeth us with benefits, even the God of our salvation. Selah.

Jn: 3:13: And no man hath ascended up to heaven, but he that came down from heaven, even the Son of man which is in heaven.

Jn: 20:17: Jesus saith unto her, Touch me not; for I am not yet ascended to my Father: but go to my brethren, and say unto them, I ascend unto my Father, and your Father; and to my God, and your God.

Acts: 2:22-36: Ye men of Israel, hear these words; Jesus of Nazareth, a man approved of God among you by

miracles and wonders and signs, which God did by him in the midst of you, as ye yourselves also know: 23: Him, being delivered by the determinate counsel and foreknowledge of God, ye have taken, and by wicked hands have crucified and slain: 24: Whom God hath raised up, having loosed the pains of death: because it was not possible that he should be holden of it. 25: For David speaketh concerning him, I foresaw the Lord always before my face, for he is on my right hand, that I should not be moved: 26: Therefore did my heart rejoice, and my tongue was glad; moreover also my flesh shall rest in hope: 27: Because thou wilt not leave my soul in hell, neither wilt thou suffer thine Holy One to see corruption. 28: Thou hast made known to me the ways of life; thou shalt make me full of joy with thy countenance. 29: Men and brethren, let me freely speak unto you of the patriarch David, that he is both dead and buried, and his sepulchre is with us unto this day. 30: Therefore being a prophet, and knowing that God had sworn with an oath to him, that of the fruit of his loins, according to the flesh, he would raise up Christ to sit on his throne; 31: He seeing this before spake of the resurrection of Christ, that his soul was not left in hell, neither his flesh did see corruption. 32: This Jesus hath God raised up, whereof we all are witnesses. 33: Therefore being by the right hand of God exalted, and having received of the Father the promise of the Holy Ghost, he hath shed forth this, which ye now see and hear. 34: For David is not ascended into the heavens: but he saith himself, The LORD said unto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, 35: Until I make thy foes thy footstool. 36: Therefore let all the house of Israel know assuredly, that God hath made that same Jesus, whom ye have crucified, both Lord and Christ.

Eph: 4:8: Wherefore he saith, When he ascended up on high, he led captivity captive, and gave gifts unto men.

Eph: 4:9: (Now that he ascended, what is it but that he also descended first into the lower parts of the earth?

Eph: 4:10: He that descended is the same also that ascended up far above all heavens, that he might fill all things.)

Conditions right before His coming to Reign:

Isa: 3:1-26: For, behold, the Lord, the LORD of hosts, doth take away from Jerusalem and from Judah the stay and the staff, the whole stay of bread, and the whole stay of water, 2: The mighty man, and the man of war, the judge, and the prophet, and the prudent, and the ancient, 3: The captain of fifty, and the honourable man, and the counsellor, and the cunning artificer, and the eloquent orator. 4: And I will give children to be their princes, and babes shall rule over them. 5: And the people shall be oppressed, every one by another, and every one by his neighbour: the child shall behave himself proudly against the ancient, and the base against the honourable. 6: When a man shall take hold of his brother of the house of his father, saying, Thou hast clothing, be thou our ruler, and let this ruin be under thy hand: 7: In that day shall he swear, saying, I will not be an healer; for in my house is neither bread nor clothing: make me not a ruler of the people. 8: For Jerusalem is ruined, and Judah is fallen: because their tongue and their doings are against the LORD, to provoke the eyes of his glory. 9: The shew of their countenance doth witness against them; and they declare their sin as Sodom, they hide it not. Woe unto

their soul! for they have rewarded evil unto themselves. 10: Say ye to the righteous, that it shall be well with him: for they shall eat the fruit of their doings. 11: Woe unto the wicked! it shall be ill with him: for the reward of his hands shall be given him. 12: As for my people, children are their oppressors, and women rule over them. O my people, they which lead thee cause thee to err, and destroy the way of thy paths. 13: The LORD standeth up to plead, and standeth to judge the people. 14: The LORD will enter into judgment with the ancients of his people, and the princes thereof: for ye have eaten up the vineyard; the spoil of the poor is in your houses. 15: What mean ye that ye beat my people to pieces, and grind the faces of the poor? saith the LORD GOD of hosts. 16: Moreover the LORD saith, Because the daughters of Zion are haughty, and walk with stretched forth necks and wanton eyes, walking and mincing as they go, and making a tinkling with their feet: 17: Therefore the LORD will smite with a scab the crown of the head of the daughters of Zion, and the LORD will discover their secret parts. 18: In that day the Lord will take away the bravery of their tinkling ornaments about their feet, and their cauls, and their round tires like the moon, 19: The chains, and the bracelets, and the mufflers, 20: The bonnets, and the ornaments of the legs, and the headbands, and the tablets, and the earrings, 21: The rings, and nose jewels, 22: The changeable suits of apparel, and the mantles, and the wimples, and the crisping pins, 23: The glasses, and the fine linen, and the hoods, and the veils. 24: And it shall come to pass, that instead of sweet smell there shall be stink; and instead of a girdle a rent; and instead of well set hair baldness; and instead of a stomacher a girding of sackcloth; and burning instead of beauty. 25: Thy men shall fall by the sword, and thy mighty in the war. 26: And her gates shall lament and mourn; and she being desolate shall sit upon the ground.

Isa: 5:20-30: Woe unto them that call evil good, and good evil; that put darkness for light, and light for darkness; that put bitter for sweet, and sweet for bitter! 21: Woe unto them that are wise in their own eyes, and prudent in their own sight! 22: Woe unto them that are mighty to drink wine, and men of strength to mingle strong drink: 23: Which justify the wicked for reward, and take away the righteousness of the righteous from him! 24: Therefore as the fire devoureth the stubble, and the flame consumeth the chaff, so their root shall be as rottenness, and their blossom shall go up as dust: because they have cast away the law of the LORD of hosts, and despised the word of the Holy One of Israel. 25: Therefore is the anger of the LORD kindled against his people, and he hath stretched forth his hand against them, and hath smitten them: and the hills did tremble, and their carcasses were torn in the midst of the streets. For all this his anger is not turned away, but his hand is stretched out still. 26: And he will lift up an ensign to the nations from far, and will hiss unto them from the end of the earth: and, behold, they shall come with speed swiftly: 27: None shall be weary nor stumble among them; none shall slumber nor sleep; neither shall the girdle of their loins be loosed, nor the latchet of their shoes be broken: 28: Whose arrows are sharp, and all their bows bent, their horses' hoofs shall be counted like flint, and their wheels like a whirlwind: 29: Their roaring shall be like a lion, they shall roar like young lions: yea, they shall roar, and lay hold of the prey, and shall carry it away safe, and none shall deliver it. 30: And in that day they shall roar against them like the roaring of the sea: and if one look unto the land, behold darkness and sorrow, and the light is darkened in the heavens thereof.

Isa: 8:9-22: Associate yourselves, O ye people, and ye shall be broken in pieces; and give ear, all ye of far countries: gird yourselves, and ye shall be broken in pieces; gird yourselves, and ye shall be broken in pieces. 10: Take counsel together, and it shall come to nought; speak the word, and it shall not stand: for God is with us. 11: For the LORD spake thus to me with a strong hand, and instructed me that I should not walk in the way of

this people, saying, 12: Say ye not, A confederacy, to all them to whom this people shall say, A confederacy; neither fear ye their fear, nor be afraid. 13: Sanctify the LORD of hosts himself; and let him be your fear, and let him be your dread. 14: And he shall be for a sanctuary; but for a stone of stumbling and for a rock of offence to both the houses of Israel, for a gin and for a snare to the inhabitants of Jerusalem. 15: And many among them shall stumble, and fall, and be broken, and be snared, and be taken. 16: Bind up the testimony, seal the law among my disciples. 17: And I will wait upon the LORD, that hideth his face from the house of Jacob, and I will look for him. 18: Behold, I and the children whom the LORD hath given me are for signs and for wonders in Israel from the LORD of hosts, which dwelleth in mount Zion. 19: And when they shall say unto you, Seek unto them that have familiar spirits, and unto wizards that peep, and that mutter: should not a people seek unto their God? for the living to the dead? 20: To the law and to the testimony: if they speak not according to this word, it is because there is no light in them. 21: And they shall pass through it, hardly bestead and hungry: and it shall come to pass, that when they shall be hungry, they shall fret themselves, and curse their king and their God, and look upward. 22: And they shall look unto the earth; and behold trouble and darkness, dimness of anguish; and they shall be driven to darkness.

Isa: 10:20: And it shall come to pass in that day, that the remnant of Israel, and such as are escaped of the house of Jacob, shall no more again stay upon him that smote them; but shall stay upon the LORD, the Holy One of Israel, in truth.

Jesus the King:

1Chron: 17:11-14: And it shall come to pass, when thy days be expired that thou must go to be with thy fathers, that I will raise up thy seed after thee, which shall be of thy sons; and I will establish his kingdom. 12: He shall build me an house, and I will stablish his throne for ever. 13: I will be his father, and he shall be my son: and I will not take my mercy away from him, as I took it from him that was before thee: 14: But I will settle him in mine house and in my kingdom for ever: and his throne shall be established for evermore.

Ps: 45:1-17: My heart is inditing a good matter: I speak of the things which I have made touching the king: my tongue is the pen of a ready writer. 2: Thou art fairer than the children of men: grace is poured into thy lips: therefore God hath blessed thee for ever. 3: Gird thy sword upon thy thigh, O most mighty, with thy glory and thy majesty. 4: And in thy majesty ride prosperously because of truth and meekness and righteousness; and thy right hand shall teach thee terrible things. 5: Thine arrows are sharp in the heart of the king's enemies; whereby the people fall under thee. 6: Thy throne, O God, is for ever and ever: the sceptre of thy kingdom is a right sceptre. 7: Thou lovest righteousness, and hatest wickedness: therefore God, thy God, hath anointed thee with the oil of gladness above thy fellows. 8: All thy garments smell of myrrh, and aloes, and cassia, out of the ivory palaces, whereby they have made thee glad. 9: Kings' daughters were among thy honourable women: upon thy right hand did stand the queen in gold of Ophir. 10: Hearken, O daughter, and consider, and incline thine ear; forget also thine own people, and thy father's house; 11: So shall the king greatly desire thy beauty: for he is thy Lord; and worship thou him. 12: And the daughter of Tyre shall be there with a gift; even the rich among the

people shall intreat thy favour. 13: The king's daughter is all glorious within: her clothing is of wrought gold. 14: She shall be brought unto the king in raiment of needlework: the virgins her companions that follow her shall be brought unto thee. 15: With gladness and rejoicing shall they be brought: they shall enter into the king's palace. 16: Instead of thy fathers shall be thy children, whom thou mayest make princes in all the earth. 17: I will make thy name to be remembered in all generations: therefore shall the people praise thee for ever and ever.

Ps: 72:1-20: Give the king thy judgments, O God, and thy righteousness unto the king's son. 2: He shall judge thy people with righteousness, and thy poor with judgment. 3: The mountains shall bring peace to the people, and the little hills, by righteousness. 4: He shall judge the poor of the people, he shall save the children of the needy, and shall break in pieces the oppressor. 5: They shall fear thee as long as the sun and moon endure, throughout all generations. 6: He shall come down like rain upon the mown grass: as showers that water the earth. 7: In his days shall the righteous flourish; and abundance of peace so long as the moon endureth. 8: He shall have dominion also from sea to sea, and from the river unto the ends of the earth. 9: They that dwell in the wilderness shall bow before him; and his enemies shall lick the dust. 10: The kings of Tarshish and of the isles shall bring presents: the kings of Sheba and Seba shall offer gifts. 11: Yea, all kings shall fall down before him: all nations shall serve him. 12: For he shall deliver the needy when he crieth; the poor also, and him that hath no helper. 13: He shall spare the poor and needy, and shall save the souls of the needy. 14: He shall redeem their soul from deceit and violence: and precious shall their blood be in his sight. 15: And he shall live, and to him shall be given of the gold of Sheba: prayer also shall be made for him continually; and daily shall he be praised. 16: There shall be an handful of corn in the earth upon the top of the mountains; the fruit thereof shall shake like Lebanon: and they of the city shall flourish like grass of the earth. 17: His name shall endure for ever: his name shall be continued as long as the sun: and men shall be blessed in him: all nations shall call him blessed. 18: Blessed be the LORD God, the God of Israel, who only doeth wondrous things. 19: And blessed be his glorious name for ever: and let the whole earth be filled with his glory; Amen, and Amen. 20: The prayers of David the son of Jesse are ended.

Isa: 52:7-15: How beautiful upon the mountains are the feet of him that bringeth good tidings, that publisheth peace; that bringeth good tidings of good, that publisheth salvation; that saith unto Zion, Thy God reigneth! 8: Thy watchmen shall lift up the voice; with the voice together shall they sing: for they shall see eye to eye, when the LORD shall bring again Zion. 9: Break forth into joy, sing together, ye waste places of Jerusalem: for the LORD hath comforted his people, he hath redeemed Jerusalem. 10: The LORD hath made bare his holy arm in the eyes of all the nations; and all the ends of the earth shall see the salvation of our God. 11: Depart ye, depart ye, go ye out from thence, touch no unclean thing; go ye out of the midst of her; be ye clean, that bear the vessels of the LORD. 12: For ye shall not go out with haste, nor go by flight: for the LORD will go before you; and the God of Israel will be your rereward. 13: Behold, my servant shall deal prudently, he shall be exalted and extolled, and be very high. 14: As many were astonished at thee; his visage was so marred more than any man, and his form more than the sons of men: 15: So shall he sprinkle many nations; the kings shall shut their mouths at him: for that which had not been told them shall they see; and that which they had not heard shall they consider.

Isa: 53:1-12: Who hath believed our report? and to whom is the arm of the LORD revealed? 2: For he shall grow

up before him as a tender plant, and as a root out of a dry ground: he hath no form nor comeliness; and when we shall see him, there is no beauty that we should desire him. 3: He is despised and rejected of men; a man of sorrows, and acquainted with grief: and we hid as it were our faces from him; he was despised, and we esteemed him not. 4: Surely he hath borne our griefs, and carried our sorrows: yet we did esteem him stricken, smitten of God, and afflicted. 5: But he was wounded for our transgressions, he was bruised for our iniquities: the chastisement of our peace was upon him; and with his stripes we are healed. 6: All we like sheep have gone astray; we have turned every one to his own way; and the LORD hath laid on him the iniquity of us all. 7: He was oppressed, and he was afflicted, yet he opened not his mouth: he is brought as a lamb to the slaughter, and as a sheep before her shearers is dumb, so he openeth not his mouth. 8: He was taken from prison and from judgment: and who shall declare his generation? for he was cut off out of the land of the living: for the transgression of my people was he stricken. 9: And he made his grave with the wicked, and with the rich in his death; because he had done no violence, neither was any deceit in his mouth. 10: Yet it pleased the LORD to bruise him; he hath put him to grief: when thou shalt make his soul an offering for sin, he shall see his seed, he shall prolong his days, and the pleasure of the LORD shall prosper in his hand. 11: He shall see of the travail of his soul, and shall be satisfied: by his knowledge shall my righteous servant justify many; for he shall bear their iniquities. 12: Therefore will I divide him a portion with the great, and he shall divide the spoil with the strong; because he hath poured out his soul unto death: and he was numbered with the transgressors; and he bare the sin of many, and made intercession for the transgressors.

Dan: 7:13-14: I saw in the night visions, and, behold, one like the Son of man came with the clouds of heaven, and came to the Ancient of days, and they brought him near before him. 14: And there was given him dominion, and glory, and a kingdom, that all people, nations, and languages, should serve him: his dominion is an everlasting dominion, which shall not pass away, and his kingdom that which shall not be destroyed.

Ps: 110:1-7: The LORD said unto my Lord, Sit thou at my right hand, until I make thine enemies thy footstool. 2: The LORD shall send the rod of thy strength out of Zion: rule thou in the midst of thine enemies. 3: Thy people shall be willing in the day of thy power, in the beauties of holiness from the womb of the morning: thou hast the dew of thy youth. 4: The LORD hath sworn, and will not repent, Thou art a priest for ever after the order of Melchizedek. 5: The Lord at thy right hand shall strike through kings in the day of his wrath. 6: He shall judge among the heathen, he shall fill the places with the dead bodies; he shall wound the heads over many countries. 7: He shall drink of the brook in the way: therefore shall he lift up the head.

Choose Life

Deut: 30:19-20: See, I have set before thee this day life and good, and death and evil; In that I command thee this day to love the LORD thy God, to walk in his ways, and to keep his commandments and his statutes and his judgments, that thou mayest live and multiply: and the LORD thy God shall bless thee in the land whither thou goest to possess it. But if thine heart turn away, so that thou wilt not hear, but shalt be drawn away, and worship other gods, and serve them; I denounce unto you this day, that ye shall surely perish, and that ye shall not prolong your days upon the land, whither thou passest over Jordan to go to possess it. I call heaven and earth to record this day against you, that I have set before you life and death, blessing and cursing: therefore choose life, that both thou and thy seed may live: That thou mayest love the LORD thy God, and that thou mayest obey his voice, and that thou mayest cleave unto him: for he is thy life, and the length of thy days: that thou mayest dwell in the land which the LORD sware unto thy fathers, to Abraham, to Isaac, and to Jacob, to give them.

Gal: 3:13-14: Christ hath redeemed us from the curse of the law, being made a curse for us: for it is written, Cursed is every one that hangeth on a tree: That the blessing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles through Jesus Christ; that we might receive the promise of the Spirit through faith.

(From that passage one would assume that when we choose Jesus, we choose life and are therefore free of curses, yet we hear good preachers telling us we can bring curses upon ourselves by foolish practices.

Both thoughts are true and here is the explanation: When one chooses Jesus, they are choosing life and are immediately born again of the eternal life Spirit. Then, being spiritually alive, they are free to make righteous choices. All they have to do is seek to please God and walk by the spirit, no longer seeking to please the lower nature. (Rom: 8:1-15) That's how you get and stay free from the curse of the law – abide in Christ.)

Jn: 15:5-10: teaches us about abiding. I am the vine, ye are the branches: He that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: for without me ye can do nothing. If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered; and men gather them, and cast them into the fire, and they are burned. If ye abide in me, and my words abide in you, ye shall ask what ye will, and it shall be done unto you. Herein is my Father glorified, that ye bear much fruit; so shall ye be my disciples. As the Father hath loved me, so have I loved you: continue ye in my love. If ye keep my commandments, ye shall abide in my love; even as I have kept my Father's commandments, and abide in his love.

(So you see that we must deliberately determine to abide in the vine. Why? Because there is a thief who is always going about like a roaring lion, seeking whom he may devour. 1Pet: 5:6-9

Once you've chosen Jesus, you must choose daily to walk by the spirit and not by the carnal nature. You choose whether you will put on the full armor of God. You choose whether you will abide in the vine, firmly united. You choose whether you will take up your cross and follow Jesus. You choose whether you will serve God or

your own appetites.

When God gave you the free gift of righteousness, he did not take away the power to choose death; he gave you the power to choose life. If you abide in Jesus, you are free from all curses – but if you choose to live carnally, you are not, taking advantage of your gift from God and you forfeit the blessings and live under the curses, because they are the inevitable result of making wrong choices.)

Living by Every Word of God

Deut: 30:15-19: See, I have set before thee this day life and good, and death and evil; In that I command thee this day to love the LORD thy God, to walk in his ways, and to keep his commandments and his statutes and his judgments, that thou mayest live and multiply: and the LORD thy God shall bless thee in the land whither thou goest to possess it. But if thine heart turn away, so that thou wilt not hear, but shalt be drawn away, and worship other gods, and serve them; I denounce unto you this day, that ye shall surely perish, and that ye shall not prolong your days upon the land, whither thou passest over Jordan to go to possess it. I call heaven and earth to record this day against you, that I have set before you life and death, blessing and cursing: therefore choose life, that both thou and thy seed may live: That thou mayest love the LORD thy God, and that thou mayest obey his voice, and that thou mayest cleave unto him: for he is thy life, and the length of thy days: that thou mayest dwell in the land which the LORD sware unto thy fathers, to Abraham, to Isaac, and to Jacob, to give them.

I am greatly emphasizing this passage of scripture because it pretty much establishes how God deals with us and what he thinks is important.

Many today believe that because of what Jesus has done for mankind; God no longer demands this of us. Some believe that pretty much what God wants is for us to love and accept each other. I believe the Bible. I believe the above scripture pretty much says it. You may be thinking, how can you say that? I answer with a question – does the New Testament say, God is the same, yesterday, today, and forever? Heb: 13:8

Does the New Testament teach that all scripture is God breathed and profitable for doctrine, reproof correction, and instruction in righteousness? 1Tim: 3:16

Did Jesus say, those who obey God are his brothers and sisters? Matt: 12:50

Is obeying God loving and accepting others in modern understanding or is obeying God obeying the scriptures? Jas: 1:21-22 says, Wherefore lay apart all filthiness and superfluity of naughtiness, and receive with meekness the engrafted word, which is able to save your souls. But be ye doers of the word, and not hearers only, deceiving your own selves.

Jesus quoted Deut: 8:3 in Matt. 4:4: It is written, Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God.

Based upon what I've shared here, I beg you to receive the engrafted word and live by it.

Covenant Blessings

God has entered into covenant with man. In the Old Testament God lays out the terms of the covenant both the stipulations and the benefits. You need to understand that these terms are "the way it is." Therefore if we learn to trust and obey God, it will be well with us and if we don't, it won't be well with us. (Deut: 30:19-20, Jer: 7:23, Matt: 10:7-14, Mk: 11:23-24, Lk: 1:71-75, Lk: 19:42, 2Cor: 1:20)

In the old covenant the blessings were obtained by trying to be good, trying to obey God, and trying to trust God. When God's people missed it, there were procedures to go through so that they could receive forgiveness and continue in their covenant relationship. But in the new covenant God gives us His Spirit so that we can do His will. (Jn: 20:21-23, Acts: 2:38, Rom: 8:2-17, Heb: 8:10-11)

It works like this: Jesus, the second Adam, denied the flesh and walked by the spirit, hearkened unto God and not the liar, and shed his own innocent blood to atone for Adam's first bad choice, which started the shedding of innocent blood in the earth. Through his choices, Jesus took the kingdom back out of Satan's hands and has placed it forever into the hands of spirit-filled men. (The Gospel in Mt, Mk, Lk, Jn, Rom: 3:10-18, 5:8, 14-21, 6:23, 1Cor: 15:21-50, 2Cor: 5:21)

He also, before paying the price and defeating the devil, fulfilled man's part of the old covenant which was to

obey God and walk in His ways. Since Jesus fulfilled the covenant, it stands as a sealed agreement forever – all God promised to man belongs to Jesus – the covenant is between Jesus and The heavenly Father and it is sure to Him and all those who abide in Him.

The new covenant is that God fully equips the believer to be able to walk in covenant with Him as Jesus did. God has provided the believer with His Spirit, with Jesus as their example, fore-runner, captain, shepherd, savior, high priest, big brother, (study Jewish custom there) and the author and finisher of their faith. He is also the Way, the Truth, the Life, the Bread, the Light and the true Vine for believers. God has also provided believers with the full armor of God (study Eph. 6), the written Word, and the great and precious promises. Not only that but the believer is reconciled to God as His child and this covenant is literally a Father/child relationship written out and sealed by the blood of the lamb. (Rom: 5:10-11, 8:14, Ga1: 4:5, 1Pet: 1:21-25)

God has provided believers with all good things including the equipment to overcome. Isa: 53-54, 2Pet: 1:3 He promises to be their Father, love them, never leave them, and give them a spirit that cries, “abba Father” – in other words, a spirit that knows a kinship to God and delights to please Him. God guides, leads, and teaches believers by His Spirit – the Spirit of Truth who is always with the believer to help them combat the liar. Jn: 16:7-15

The believer’s part of the covenant is to trust and obey God. God’s part is to be a Father to them. The believer abides in Christ by trusting and obeying – being a doer of the Word and not a hearer only. Jas: 1

2Cor: 1:20 boldly states that all promises are ‘yes’ in Jesus because the covenant between God and Jesus is sure and if the believer abides in Jesus, it is sure for them. The covenant is not based upon the believer’s merits – thus the promises are sure – they can only be null and voided by the believer’s choice to abide in the world instead of in Jesus.

The Father/Child Covenant Relationship

The covenant relationship that we have with God through Jesus is a Father/child covenant. All the promises in the Old Testament had stipulations with them – such as – if you will listen diligently to the voice of the Lord your God, being watchful to do all his commandments, the Lord will set you high above all the nations of the earth. And all these blessings shall come upon you and overtake you. Deut: 28

The Old Testament tells us that God's people, the Israelites, could not keep their end of the covenant even though God had set it up in a way that made allowances for their weaknesses – providing unending restoration for them. Their carnal nature was in command of their behavior, causing them to be led astray to the point of being alienated from the life of God. At the appointed time, God sent Jesus.

Jesus kept man's part of the covenant perfectly because He was born of a woman so that He would be like us, but He was born of the Holy Spirit so that He could be spiritually alive like Adam was before the fall. You see, that's how He overcame. That's how He perfectly kept His end of the covenant; He walked by the spirit and not by the flesh. Now in order to walk by the spirit and not by the flesh He had to love God with all of His being, He had to cleave to God and hate evil, He had to spend much time in prayer, and He had to be subject to God and resist evil. In other words, He overcame the same way He told us to.

Once He had lived a sinless life, He bore our sins and death so that if a person will choose Him as their Lord instead of the devil they can have their sins washed away and be born again of the Spirit of God. Through this process, God is able to restore us to spiritual life – the life that Adam and Eve had before the fall. For the person who does this, the mandate is the same as at the beginning – hearken unto to God only – do righteousness – walk by the spirit and not by the flesh.

Through this process, we are reconciled to God – this means that He is our Father again as He was Adam's Father. Truly, all the promises in the Bible are for God's children and are what He always intended to do for His children.

Since Jesus is the only one who perfectly obeyed the stipulations, the covenant is between the Father and Jesus. The covenant is in full effect for all those who receive and abide in Jesus. 2Cor: 1:20

Since the covenant is between the Father and Jesus, it is not based on the recipient's performance – it is based upon Jesus' past performance, therefore as long as the believer abides in Jesus, (See Jn: 15) all promises are "yes" for them.

But what I want you to see is that this covenant is a description of the Father/child relationship that Christians have with God. He promises to take care of His children, meet their needs, put them over in life, protect them, deliver them, heal them, teach them, minister to them, and discipline them. In other words – be all that a Father should be.

The believer's part of the covenant is to trust and obey Him and He made this possible by providing for them to

be born again of His Spirit. He provided all that was needed so that Christians can walk by the spirit and not by the flesh. He took care of their sin. He restored them to himself. He provided the perfect example in Jesus. Jesus is their fore-runner. Jesus is their Savior, Lord, Shepherd, High Priest (study this office in O.T.). He is their big brother (study Jewish meaning here), He is the Way, the Truth, and the Life. God gave them the written Word full of truth and grace. He gave them the Father/child covenant sealed in the blood of the Lamb so that it can't be stolen. He has given them the Spirit of Truth so they can combat the liar. Jesus showed them the Father. Jesus is their role model and hero and there couldn't be a better one ever.

God tells His children to spend time with Him so that the very important bonding between Father and child can take place.

In this Father/child relationship, believers are children. They have a lot to learn – a lot of growing to do. Not knowing enough, children generally make a lot of mistakes, but the parents are very happy with them as long as they are learning and growing. Even if they are having a slump in their growth, the parents are still happy with them because they love them and they understand these things. Don't you think God is like that too?

So God is asking His children to repent, receive His Spirit, to be determined to be like Him, and renew their mind with the Word – which is the mind and Spirit of Christ. Seek the kingdom of God and His righteousness. Spend quality time with Father. Father God is happy with His children who will do these things. If you are not doing this, meditate upon your wonderful relationship with Father God and realize that your whole future depends upon your developing this relationship.

Another thing I want you to see in this Father/child relationship is that God's love is not hard to understand – it is the love of the best Father for his children. So we don't have to deserve it. He loves us because of who He is and who we are.

Jesus is the one who taught about the Father – in Matt: 5:16 He says we should behave as Father God does so that the world can see Him. Also Matt: 5:48 teaches that a person's actions show who their Father is. Inevitably a person will act like their Father. Jn: 8:38-44

The saying, "Like Father, like son," is for the most part true. That is why God provided a way to get His Spirit back in His children, so He can be their Father and train them up right.

Jesus teaches believers to trust God as their provider of all good things. Matt: 6:8-7:21 I count twenty-two times that Jesus teaches about our Father in heaven. Eighteen times in Matthew alone, He talks of God as His personal Father. Jesus definitely showed us the Father.

How to Receive a New Heart

Summary– As a hart panteth for the brook, so my soul panteth after you.

Deut: 30:2-6: And shalt return unto the Lord thy God, and shalt obey his voice according to all that I command thee this day, thou and thy children, with all thine heart, and with all thy soul; that then the Lord thy God will turn thy captivity, and have compassion upon thee, and will return and gather thee from all the nations, whither the Lord thy God hath scattered thee. If any of thine be driven out unto the outmost parts of heaven, from thence will the Lord thy God gather thee, and from thence will He fetch thee: And the Lord thy God will bring thee into the land which thy fathers possessed, and thou shalt possess it; and He will do thee good, and multiply thee above thy fathers. And the Lord thy God will circumcise thine heart, and the heart of thy seed, to love the Lord thy God with all thine heart, and with all thy soul, that thou mayest live.

2Chron: 15:12-13 And they entered into a covenant to seek the Lord God of their fathers with all their heart and with all their soul; that whosoever would not seek the Lord God of Israel should be put to death, whether small or great, whether man or woman. (This suggests that if one does not seek the Lord with all their heart, they cannot receive him and have eternal life.)

Ps: 78:8: And might not be as their fathers, a stubborn and rebellious generation; a generation that set not their heart aright, and whose spirit was not stedfast with God. (I'm building a picture of the heart, God wants to give us.)

Isa: 6:10: Make the heart of this people fat, and make their ears heavy, and shut their eyes; lest they see with their eyes, and hear with their ears, and understand with their heart, and convert, and be healed. (This is the heart we don't want to have.)

Isa: 51:7: Hearken unto me, ye that know righteousness, the people in whose heart is my law; fear ye not the reproach of men, neither be ye afraid of their revilings.

Isa: 59:21: As for me, this is my covenant with them, saith the Lord; my Spirit that is upon thee, and my words which I have put in thy mouth, shall not depart out of thy mouth, nor out of the mouth of thy seed, nor out of the mouth of thy seed's seed, saith the Lord, from henceforth and for ever. (That's the covenant He makes with those who have the right heart.)

Jer: 24:7: And I will give them an heart to know me, that I am the Lord: and they shall be my people, and I will be their God: for they shall return unto me with their whole heart. (That's the heart.)

Jer: 29:11-14: For I know the thoughts that I think toward you, saith the Lord, thoughts of peace, and not of evil, to give you an expected end. Then shall ye call upon me, and ye shall go and pray unto me, and I will hearken unto you. And ye shall seek me, and find me, when ye shall search for me with all your heart. And I will be found of you, saith the Lord: and I will turn away your captivity, and I will gather you from all the nations, and from all the places whither I have driven you, saith the Lord; and I will bring you again into the place whence I caused you to be carried away captive.

Jer: 32:39: And I will give them one heart, and one way that they may fear me for ever, for the good of them, and of their children after them: (This is what God intended the new birth to do.)

Ezek: 11:19: And I will give them one heart, and I will put a new spirit within you; and I will take the stony heart out of their flesh, and will give them a heart of flesh: (This is what Jesus' sacrifice was really about.)

Ezek: 18:31-32: A new heart also will I give you, and a new spirit will I put within you: and I will take away the stony heart out of your flesh, and I will give you a heart of flesh. And I will put My spirit within you, and cause you to walk in My statutes, and ye shall keep my judgments, and do them. (This is the covenant – Heb: 8:10)

Joel 2:12-13: Therefore also now, saith the Lord, turn ye even to me with all your heart, and with fasting, and with weeping, and with mourning: And rend your heart, and not your garments, and turn unto the Lord your God: for He is gracious and merciful, slow to anger, and of great kindness, and repenteth Him of the evil. (This is how you receive it.)

Matt: 15:8-9: This people draweth nigh unto me with their mouth, and honoureth me with their lips; but their heart is far from me. But in vain they do worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men. (This is why people don't receive it.)

Jn: 3:3: Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, except a man be born again, he cannot

see the kingdom of God.

Jn: 12:40: He hath blinded their eyes, and hardened their heart; (Amplified Version says callous, degenerated heart. God told us in the books of the prophets that He had to fix our heart.) That they should not see with their eyes, nor understand with their heart, and be converted, and I should heal them.

Acts: 15:9: And put no difference between us and them, purifying their hearts by faith.

Gal: 4:6: And because ye are sons, God hath sent forth the Spirit of His Son into your hearts, crying, Abba, Father.

Heb: 8:10: For this is the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel after those days, saith the Lord; I will put my laws into their mind, and write them in their hearts: and I will be to them a God, and they shall be to me a people:

God's Peculiar People

God says in Ex: 19:5-6: Now therefore, if ye will obey my voice indeed, and keep my covenant, then ye shall be a peculiar treasure unto me above all people: for all the earth is mine: And ye shall be unto me a kingdom of priests, and an holy nation. These are the words which thou shalt speak unto the children of Israel. After saying that, God gave Moses the Ten Commandments.

And in 1Pet 2:7-9: Unto you therefore which believe he (Jesus) is precious: but unto them which be disobedient, the stone which the builders disallowed, the same is made the head of the corner, and a stone of stumbling, and a rock of offence, even to them which stumble at the word, being disobedient: whereunto also they were appointed. But ye are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, a peculiar people; that ye should show forth the praises of him who hath called you out of darkness into his marvelous light.

(In studying these two scriptures it becomes evident that Jesus made the way for us to be God's peculiar people, who do his will. Below is how it works.)

Gal: 3:18-27 says: For if the inheritance be of the law, it is no more of promise: but God gave it to Abraham by promise. Wherefore then serveth the law? It was added because of transgressions, till the seed should come to whom the promise was made; and it was ordained by angels in the hand of a mediator. Now a mediator is not a mediator of one, but God is one. Is the law then against the promises of God? God forbid: for if there had been a law given which could have given life, verily righteousness should have been by the law. But the scripture hath concluded all under sin, that the promise by faith of Jesus Christ might be given to them that believe. But before faith came, we were kept under the law, shut up unto the faith which should afterwards be revealed. Wherefore the law was our schoolmaster to bring us unto Christ, that we might be justified by faith. But after that faith is come, we are no longer under a schoolmaster. For ye are all the children of God by faith in Christ Jesus. For as many of you as have been baptized into Christ have put on Christ.

(So this tells us that the law was the trainer or guardian till Christ came and that now that we have faith in Jesus, we no longer need the trainer, for we have put on Christ. Does this mean that the law is irrelevant now or does it mean that we have grown up and the law and understanding has been instilled in us so that we do not need a written code or a taskmaster standing over us to make us obey?)

Jer: 31:31-34 says: Behold, the days come, saith the LORD, that I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel, and with the house of Judah: Not according to the covenant that I made with their fathers in the day that I took them by the hand to bring them out of the land of Egypt; which my covenant they brake, although I was an husband unto them, saith the LORD: But this shall be the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel; After those days, saith the LORD, I will put my law in their inward parts, and write it in their hearts; and will be their God, and they shall be my people. And they shall teach no more every man his neighbor, and every man his brother, saying, Know the LORD: for they shall all know me, from the least of them unto the greatest of them, saith the LORD; for I will forgive their iniquity, and I will remember their sin no more.

Rom: 8:3-8 says: For what the law could not do, in that it was weak through the flesh, God sending his own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, and for sin, condemned sin in the flesh: That the righteousness of the law might be fulfilled in us, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit. For they that are after the flesh do mind the things of the flesh; but they that are after the Spirit the things of the Spirit. For to be carnally minded is death; but to be spiritually minded is life and peace. Because the carnal mind is enmity against God: for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be. So then they that are in the flesh cannot please God.

(So here's how it comes together – these scriptures are talking about the new heart God promised in the books of the prophets – the last portion of Vs: 5 in the Amp. V. reads: But those who are according to the Spirit and (controlled by the desires) of the Spirit, set their minds on and seek those things which gratify the (Holy) Spirit.

This is the new heart God promised us.

Once we receive this new heart, we are reconciled to God and begin our Father/child love relationship with Him. We obey Him because our heart has been changed from one of selfishness and sinfulness to one of trustfulness and obedience. It becomes our desire upon receiving God's salvation to live the reconciled to God life. We have been restored to the place we had before the fall and given everything needed to walk by the Spirit and not by the flesh. The key is to seek to gratify the Spirit and not your flesh. The flesh is sense and reason without the Holy Spirit.

This text in Rom: 8 implies that if you do not learn to walk by the spirit after you are born again, you will continue life no better than before, because the carnal mind cannot submit to God's ways. The carnal person has never become convinced that their ways are death. The saying, "Everything that is fun is illegal, immoral, or fattening" is true for the carnal man – think about it! God's laws and good governmental laws are for the good of the people, but carnal man does not like to obey them.

This is how you become one of God's peculiar people – you receive a heart to please God and practice pleasing him – you no longer practice pleasing your carnal nature. You will be peculiar to the world, because they walk in death and you will be walking in life.

What We Have in Jesus

He came as a baby born of a woman so that He would be like us. He was also born of the Spirit of God so that He would be like Adam was before the fall (spiritually alive). He had to study the scriptures and listen to His Father God in His spirit in order to learn and grow in true knowledge and understanding that same way all true believers do. Lk: 2:52, Mk: 4:24

By the time He was thirty years of age, He had been perfected by God to become the Messiah. During those years of growing, He studied intensively and God gave Him revelation of the scriptures. He grew in faith and became strong through discipline. Heb: 5:7-9

He came to complete maturity through the precepts that God laid out in the Old Testament. He practiced loving

the Lord His God with all of His heart, soul, strength, and understanding, the same way all true believers must. Deut: 6:4-6

He cleaved to the Lord His God and hated evil, the same way all true believers must. Jer: 13:11, Acts: 11:23, Rom: 12:9

He hearkened unto His Father God's voice only and He learned to walk by the spirit and not by the flesh, the same way all true believers must. Gen: 3:17, Ex: 19:5-6, Rom: 6-8

When Jesus began His ministry, His faith was to the max – what God said He could do, He did. What God said He could have, He received. What God said He was, He became. (He got it the same way all true believers must.) He was so in tune with God that He was the express image of God. Col: 1:15, Heb: 1:3

He came to show us the Father and He did it.

He came to bring justice to God's covenant people and He did it. In God's promises to His people, He had promised them healing and health – Jesus enforced this aspect of the covenant, showing that it is God's will to heal His people. The Bible teaches that it was the thief and the liar who was keeping them from God.

Ex: 23:25: And ye shall serve the LORD your God, and he shall bless thy bread, and thy water; and I will take sickness away from the midst of thee.

Deut: 28:3-14: Blessed shalt thou be in the city, and blessed shalt thou be in the field. Blessed shall be the fruit of thy body, and the fruit of thy ground, and the fruit of thy cattle, the increase of thy kine, and the flocks of thy sheep. Blessed shall be thy basket and thy store. Blessed shalt thou be when thou comest in, and blessed shalt thou be when thou goest out. The LORD shall cause thine enemies that rise up against thee to be smitten before thy face: they shall come out against thee one way, and flee before thee seven ways. The LORD shall command the blessing upon thee in thy storehouses, and in all that thou settest thine hand unto; and he shall bless thee in the land which the LORD thy God giveth thee. The LORD shall establish thee an holy people unto himself, as he hath sworn unto thee, if thou shalt keep the commandments of the LORD thy God, and walk in his ways. And all people of the earth shall see that thou art called by the name of the LORD; and they shall be afraid of thee. And the LORD shall make thee plenteous in goods, in the fruit of thy body, and in the fruit of thy cattle, and in the fruit of thy ground, in the land which the LORD sware unto thy fathers to give thee. The LORD shall open unto thee his good treasure, the heaven to give the rain unto thy land in his season, and to bless all the work of thine hand: and thou shalt lend unto many nations, and thou shalt not borrow. And the LORD shall make thee the head, and not the tail; and thou shalt be above only, and thou shalt not be beneath; if that thou hearken unto the

commandments of the LORD thy God, which I command thee this day, to observe and to do them: And thou shalt not go aside from any of the words which I command thee this day, to the right hand, or to the left, to go after other gods to serve them.

Ps: 103:3: Who forgiveth all thine iniquities; who healeth all thy diseases; 1 Kings: 8, Lk: 13:16, Jn: 10:10, Acts: 10:38

He came to preach the kingdom of God. Lk: 4:43

He is The Light – all scripture must agree with what He taught and His teachings shed light on all scripture.

He loved the people with the love of God. He manifested God's true nature.

He continually walked by the spirit and not by the flesh (giving the spirit pre-eminence, not the flesh or carnal nature) thereby remaining sinless and putting the carnal nature which Adam and Eve had given pre-eminence under the power of God's Spirit.

Once that was accomplished, He was ready for the next stage of His ministry:

In the Garden of Gethsemane He did battle with the enemy of our souls just as Adam and Eve should have done in the Garden of Eden. He did not listen to the liar as Eve had done. He did not choose to do His own thing as Adam and Eve had done. He did not give His carnal nature pre-eminence as Adam and Eve had done. He was sorely tempted but He chose God's way. He chose righteousness instead of selfishness, as Adam and Eve had done. Lk: 22:41-44

He shed His innocent blood for the world making atonement for Adam and Eve's choice which started all the innocent blood shedding done in the world. All His life here He resisted sin fervently and cleaved to His Father and here in the garden, for us, He obeyed His Father and took on the sins of the whole world and let go of His Father's Spirit that He had cleaved to fervently all His life. 2Cor: 5:21

All of this was done to counter what Adam and Eve had done. In doing this, He re-enacted what took place in the Garden of Eden and took back the kingdom of the earth to be ruled by spirit-filled men. This is how He defeated the enemy.

Now we can choose to continue to follow Adam (We were born of Adam and everything bears after its own kind – like father, like son.) and die or we can choose Jesus and follow Him and live. When we receive Jesus we are born again of the Spirit of God and are spiritually alive as Adam and Eve were before the fall. We overcome the same way Jesus did by following in His footsteps. We learn to walk by the spirit and not by the flesh. This is why Gal: 6:7-8 tells us: “What we sow we will reap”. In order to grow, we must cultivate our relationship with God and we must cultivate our hearts just as Adam and Eve were to cultivate their garden.

So...what did Jesus do? He made the way for us to overcome. When we choose Him, we not only get total forgiveness of our sins (Justification: just as if we never had sinned.), we also get born again and are then spiritually alive with the same mandate Adam and Eve had, which was to do righteousness. We are given the free gift of grace (unmerited love and favor). This grace lives in our hearts to be applied to ourselves when we miss it, so we can get up and try to walk in love again and to be applied to others when they are missing it. Thereby we are enabled to walk as Jesus has instructed us to do. When we are baptized we are acting out the fact that we have died to our carnal way of living and when we come up out of the water we are signifying that we are raised from the dead into new life. Rom: 6:1-14, Gal: 2:19-21

- Jesus is our example. He is our fore-runner – he did it first. Heb: 6:20
- He is our shepherd. Jn: 10:11
- He is our bread. Jn: 6:56-63
- He is the true vine and we must abide united to Him and draw from His life in order to continue to live. Jn: 15
- He established the covenant that God had laid out in the Old Testament.
- He perfectly carried out the stipulations of the covenant thus the covenant is between Him and the Father, but if we are in Him it is for us too. This is why all promises are “yes” to believers. 2Cor: 1:20
- He has done it all. He left nothing undone so that we can overcome.
- He is our high priest and advocate. (Study the High Priest ministry.)
- He is our big brother. (Study the Jewish roll of oldest brother.)
- We have been restored. We have been reconciled to God as His very own children. Rom: 5:8-11 We have the written Word of God. We have the Spirit of truth to combat the liar at every turn. We have the ministry of The Father, The Son, and The Holy Spirit.
- We can go boldly to the throne in time of need and obtain the grace and the help we need. Heb: 4:16
- We have no more sin consciousness because our sins are forgiven past, present and future. Heb: 9:14-10:2
- We have a righteousness consciousness and can concentrate on following the Spirit.

I don't know what all I missed, but as you can see, we have it all. What's stopping us? LET'S "JUST DO IT!"

Holy Spirit in the Earth

There are those today who say that Christianity is the problem and not the answer. They blame it for wars because many wars are over religion and Christianity is a major contender in world religion. However, true Christianity is not a religion at all, but a relationship with our creator. In true Christianity there is a change in the believer's spirit. If they were not already, they become very charitable, understanding, and caring.

That means that the true Christian spirit does not kill people for not believing as they do. A Christian does war against worldly spirits, the flesh, and the devil. They may go to war to deliver the oppressed, but never will they be the instigator of the war.

I have gotten a little off track – this article shares a good example of the true Holy Spirit influence.

In Judg: 19-21 there is a terrible atrocity recorded. It seems that an upright man, a Levite had married his concubine and she was untrue to him and went back to her father's house in Bethlehem in Judah.

Four months later, the Levite decides to go get his wife. The father-in-law keeps persuading him to eat, drink, and be merry and put off the trip home. The fifth day was turning out the same way, but toward evening, the Levite decided to end the delays and get going.

By the time he and his concubine had traveled to Jebus, it was getting dark. The Levite decided not to stay in a place of strangers, (the Jebusites lived there) and he traveled a little further to Gibeah, a Benjamite city.

No one invited him into their house so he sat on the street. Finally a man came and begged him to go home with him because it wasn't safe in the street.

As he and his host ate and drank, a group of Benjamite men beat on his door and demanded that he send the guest out so they could have sex with him. The good man of the house offers his virgin daughter and the concubine instead. The men outside refused the offer and demanded the guest.

The guest, a godly man, I would assume since he was headed for the house of the Lord, shoved his concubine out to them and they have abusive sex with her all night and finally leave her on the doorstep almost dead.

When the Levite got up in the morning, he made preparations to leave and went outside and said to his wife, "Up, and let us be going." He received no answer, for she was dead. He put her body on the beast of burden, and when he got home, he cut her up in twelve pieces and sent a part of her with a message to each of the tribes of Israel.

Israel was outraged at the Benjamite's because they would not stand against their brothers who had offended, so they went to war with them. But after they killed off most of the Benjamites, they had compassion on the rest and devised a plan to get wives for them, lest the tribe become extinct. They had vowed not to give their daughters to them, so they decided to have a dance and arranged for the Benjamite men to snatch young girls of Shiloh to be their wives.

Think about this: The one good man offered his poor virgin to these animals. Today a good man would fight to the finish before he would allow his daughter to be treated like that.

The godly Levite shoved his wife out to them. A godly man, today, would fight to the finish before he allowed his wife to be treated like that.

Did this godly man at least wait up until the wickedness ended so he could rescue the woman? No. He went to bed and slept and woke and took care of his needs and then went out to leave. He didn't even go out to see if she was okay in the morning. When he went out, he saw her lying there, and he does nothing for her. When he was ready to go, he said, "Let's go." That's as cold-hearted as you can get.

Then Israel did the right thing in dealing harshly with those who performed or condoned such behavior. Also, it was good to have compassion for the few remaining of the tribe. But, to arrange for young girls to be snatched and forced to be brides to a different tribe and to a people who had been slain for depravity? No! Civilized people do not treat females as if they were mere property.

This story got me to thinking about how much civilization in general has improved since then. Today, most

people would fight to the death to stop what happened and to protect their loved ones. They wouldn't even have to be godly to do that. The only people who wouldn't fight to stop it would be the basest, cowardly, or wicked kind of people.

We're civilized. We hear of barbaric acts and think that society is at its worst, but we (society) have come a long way. Who is responsible for this?

This vast improvement is because Jesus came and not only preached love and caring, but he showed it to the max. I believe this great improvement in mankind is due to the presence of the Holy Spirit in the earth. And I believe that it's also because many people think that what Jesus did does cover their sin and they are grateful, and since they have received mercy, they show more mercy. The Good News of God's love and grace motivate people to try to behave better. Also, grace, available to all, was introduced in the New Testament, and men are enjoying grace and learning to be graceful.

Think of how barbaric it would be here if God hadn't done what he did over 2000 years ago.

Think about what was happening in America back in the days of slavery. It was barbaric. But God got a few people's attention and worked with them to persuade the many. And today, most people find that kind of treatment, of any person or people, to be atrocious.

So, mankind has come a long way, just having the influence of the Holy Spirit here, even though most people don't allow him to have full sway in their lives.

The Fear of the Lord

Prov: 1:7: The fear of the LORD is the beginning of knowledge: but fools despise wisdom and instruction.

Prov: 1:29: For that they hated knowledge, and did not choose the fear of the LORD:

Prov: 2:5: Then shalt thou understand the fear of the LORD, and find the knowledge of God.

Prov: 8:13: The fear of the LORD is to hate evil: pride, and arrogancy, and the evil way, and the froward mouth, do I hate.

Jer: 32:30-34: For the children of Israel and the children of Judah have only done evil before me from their youth: for the children of Israel have only provoked me to anger with the work of their hands, (idols) saith the LORD. For this city hath been to me as a provocation of mine anger and of my fury from the day that they built it even unto this day; that I should remove it from before my face, Because of all the evil of the children of Israel and of the children of Judah, which they have done to provoke me to anger, they, their kings, their princes, their priests, and their prophets, and the men of Judah, and the inhabitants of Jerusalem. And they have turned unto me the back, and not the face: though I taught them, rising up early and teaching them, yet they have not hearkened to receive instruction. But they set their abominations in the house, which is called by my name, to defile it.

Jer: 32:36-42: And now therefore thus saith the LORD, the God of Israel, concerning this city, whereof ye say, It shall be delivered into the hand of the king of Babylon by the sword, and by the famine, and by the pestilence; Behold, I will gather them out of all countries, whither I have driven them in mine anger, and in my fury, and in great wrath; and I will bring them again unto this place, and I will cause them to dwell safely: And they shall be my people, and I will be their God: And I will give them one heart, and one way, that they may fear me for ever, for the good of them, and of their children after them: And I will make an everlasting covenant with them, that I will not turn away from them, to do them good; but I will put my fear in their hearts, that they shall not depart from me. Yea, I will rejoice over them to do them good, and I will plant them in this land assuredly with my whole heart and with my whole soul. For thus saith the LORD; Like as I have brought all this great evil upon this people, so will I bring upon them all the good that I have promised them.

This next set of scriptures reveal how God is going to give us this gift of reverential fear for Him that we may have what He has promised to bestow upon those who fear Him.

2Cor: 1:22: Who hath also sealed us, and given the earnest of the Spirit in our hearts.

Eph: 1:13: In whom ye also trusted, after that ye heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation: in whom also after that ye believed, ye were sealed with that holy Spirit of promise,

Eph: 4:30: And grieve not the Holy Spirit of God, whereby ye are sealed unto the day of redemption.

Heb: 8:10-11: For this is the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel after those days, saith the Lord; I will put my laws into their mind, and write them in their hearts: and I will be to them a God, and they shall be to me a people: And they shall not teach every man his neighbour, and every man his brother, saying, Know the Lord: for all shall know me, from the least to the greatest.

It's the seal, the Holy Spirit that produces this reverential fear in the heart of the receiver. See what a gift this is – it's the reverential fear and awe of God that enables the believer to rule over their carnal nature and apply themselves to learning to walk in God's ways. Therefore in order to become a doer of the Word and not a hearer only all the believer must do is deliberately receive the seal by faith. From then on they must consider themselves sealed by God – having His stamp on their hearts – they belong to Him. If they grasp this concept, they will be able to habitually reject the world and choose God.

Keeping Scriptures in Context

This saying is going around – in fact it is a prayer by Helen Steiner Rice:

Make us aware that the Savior died;
And was nailed to the cross and crucified
Not to redeem just a chosen few
But to save all who ask for forgiveness from you.

I don't know why she said that, but here is what Jesus says about salvation:

Matt: 7:13-14: Enter ye in at the strait gate: for wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many there be which go in thereat: 14: Because strait is the gate, and narrow is the way, which leadeth unto life, and few there be that find it.

Matt: 13:47-50: Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto a net, that was cast into the sea, and gathered of every

kind: 48: Which, when it was full, they drew to shore, and sat down, and gathered the good into vessels, but cast the bad away. 49: So shall it be at the end of the world: the angels shall come forth, and sever the wicked from among the just, 50: And shall cast them into the furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth.

Matt: 22:9-14: Go ye therefore into the highways, and as many as ye shall find, bid to the marriage. 10: So those servants went out into the highways, and gathered together all as many as they found, both bad and good: and the wedding was furnished with guests. 11: And when the king came in to see the guests, he saw there a man which had not on a wedding garment: 12: And he saith unto him, Friend, how camest thou in hither not having a wedding garment? And he was speechless. 13: Then said the king to the servants, Bind him hand and foot, and take him away, and cast him into outer darkness; there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth. 14: For many are called, but few are chosen.

Matt: 18:7-9: Woe unto the world because of offences! for it must needs be that offences come; but woe to that man by whom the offence cometh! 8: Wherefore if thy hand or thy foot offend thee, cut them off, and cast them from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life halt or maimed, rather than having two hands or two feet to be cast into everlasting fire. 9: And if thine eye offend thee, pluck it out, and cast it from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life with one eye, rather than having two eyes to be cast into hell fire.

Jn: 12:46-48: I am come a light into the world, that whosoever believeth on me should not abide in darkness. 47: And if any man hear my words, and believe not, I judge him not: for I came not to judge the world, but to save the world. 48: He that rejecteth me, and receiveth not my words, hath one that judgeth him: the word that I have spoken, the same shall judge him in the last day.

Why is this important?

I am not trying to keep anyone out of the kingdom of God nor am I trying to destroy anyone's faith.

I am exalting and magnifying the Word of God because I believe that God is going to do things according to what it says and not according to what we think.

He has already said that we are responsible to know and believe His Word.

Eph: 6:11-19: Put on the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil. 12: For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places. 13: Wherefore take unto you the whole

armour of God, that ye may be able to withstand in the evil day, and having done all, to stand. 14: Stand therefore, having your loins girt about with truth, and having on the breastplate of righteousness; 15: And your feet shod with the preparation of the gospel of peace; 16: Above all, taking the shield of faith, wherewith ye shall be able to quench all the fiery darts of the wicked. 17: And take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God: 18: Praying always with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit, and watching thereunto with all perseverance and supplication for all saints; 19: And for me, that utterance may be given unto me, that I may open my mouth boldly, to make known the mystery of the gospel,

Jn: 17:14-17: I have given them thy word; and the world hath hated them, because they are not of the world, even as I am not of the world. I pray not that thou shouldest take them out of the world, but that thou shouldest keep them from the evil. They are not of the world, even as I am not of the world. Sanctify them through thy truth: thy word is truth.

This message is entitled “Keeping Scripture in Context,” because what we’re dealing with here is one example of taking one’s theology from the scriptures, yet it is not scriptural.

What Helen wrote sounds good and right until one realizes that the Word of God does not teach what she said, therefore what she said is not the truth and should not be received.

Another way many people take scripture out of context is to apply an admonition wrongly, such as the subject of judging.

The Bible does teach us not to judge people. This means in context, not to think ill of them for you do not know why they are behaving wrongly. You may be tempted to think the person who behaves badly is a terrible person, when in fact, though the person’s behavior is terrible, the person may not be terrible, but rather wrongly influenced or taught, or have a good reason to be ignorant in that area, whereas you have no excuse for being ignorant in that area. So you must be careful that your thoughts do not unintentionally judge a person.

God also taught that though a person is behaving in a damning way, you must not speak as though they were damned because God may be going to save them.

But the teaching is misunderstood when it is used to make biblical issues unclear or when it is used to cover up or make invisible wrong-doing.

Here are some Bible verses that will help you understand where I’m coming from:

Prov: 20:11: Even a child is known by his doings, whether his work be pure, and whether it be right.

Mal: 3:13-18: Your words have been stout against me, saith the LORD. Yet ye say, What have we spoken so much against thee? 14: Ye have said, It is vain to serve God: and what profit is it that we have kept his ordinance, and that we have walked mournfully before the LORD of hosts? 15: And now we call the proud happy; yea, they that work wickedness are set up; yea, they that tempt God are even delivered. 16: Then they that feared the LORD spake often one to another: and the LORD hearkened, and heard it, and a book of remembrance was written before him for them that feared the LORD, and that thought upon his name. 17: And they shall be mine, saith the LORD of hosts, in that day when I make up my jewels; and I will spare them, as a man spareth his own son that serveth him. 18: Then shall ye return, and discern between the righteous and the wicked, between him that serveth God and him that serveth him not.

Matt: 7:16: Ye shall know them by their fruits. Do men gather grapes of thorns, or figs of thistles?

1Cor: 5:11: But now I have written unto you not to keep company, if any man that is called a brother be a fornicator, or covetous, or an idolater, or a railer, or a drunkard, or an extortioner; with such an one no not to eat.

2Thess: 3:10: For even when we were with you, this we commanded you, that if any would not work, neither should he eat.

2Thess: 3:14: And if any man obey not our word by this epistle, note that man, and have no company with him, that he may be ashamed.

These scriptures show that there is a time and a place to judge situations and behavior, but many today ignore these scriptures because they think they are not allowed to judge, which to them means they are not allowed to notice other peoples trespasses.

This kind of thinking soon causes the Bible to be hard to understand and causes people to be alienated from truth through ignorance.

Then there is the taking out of context by using a scripture to teach what it does not teach, such as, taking these two scriptures below and teaching that money is evil.

Matt: 6:24: No man can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon.

1Tim: 6:10: For the love of money is the root of all evil: which while some coveted after, they have erred from the faith, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows.

The truth is not that money is evil, but it is evil (harmful) to love money over and above God or treat money as if it were God. God is He who meets our needs and is our Father. When one puts their trust in what money can do rather than putting their trust in God, they are in harms way.

There are other ways to take scripture out of context and all of them are harmful and dangerous because the Bible is the truth and you need your loins girt with the truth, because the enemy captures you with lies. And it is the truth that will set you free. And it is the truth that will keep you from error such as what Oprah is teaching – a new-age Christ.

2Thess: 2:8-12: And then shall that Wicked be revealed, whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy with the brightness of his coming: 9: Even him, whose coming is after the working of Satan with all power and signs and lying wonders, 10: And with all deceivableness of unrighteousness in them that perish; because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved. 11: And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie: 12: That they all might be damned who believed not the truth, but had pleasure in unrighteousness.

Saved by Grace

Martin Luther learned that by grace are you saved not by works. This has made a tremendous impact on today's church.

But there is more to it than that – there are conditions that go with grace and for good reason. (Jude: 1:4: For there are certain men crept in unawares, who were before of old ordained to this condemnation, ungodly men, turning the grace of our God into lasciviousness, and denying the only Lord God, and our Lord Jesus Christ.)

In order to be reconciled to God a person must repent of their ways and turn to God's ways, because Adam and Eve chose to do their own thing. Their choice was the initial big mistake that started all the suffering in the earth. Their choice separated mankind from the Father God. (Ps: 81:13, 95:10, Prov: 8:32, 23:26, Isa: 58:2, Mal: 2:9, Matt: 7:14, 21:32, 22:16, Acts: 14:15-17, 18:25)

Jesus came to fix what Adam and Eve ruined. Therefore He chose to obey God the Father. Jesus' choices made a way for us to be reconciled to the Father God. Our choices either reconcile us to Father God or alienate us from Him.

If you receive Jesus into your heart, His blood will wash away your sins, past, present, and future. Grace is for those who want to be reconciled to Father God not to those who merely wish to escape hell after they have lived here by their own rules.

It is written:

1Jn: 5:11: that God gave us eternal life and this life is in His Son and Col: 1:27 says that it is Jesus in us our hope of glory.

Rom: 8:1-14: There is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit. 2: For the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus hath made me free from the law of sin and death. 3: For what the law could not do, in that it was weak through the flesh, God sending his own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, and for sin, condemned sin in the flesh: 4: That the righteousness of the law might be fulfilled in us, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit. 5: For they that are after the flesh do mind the things of the flesh; but they that are after the Spirit the things of the Spirit. 6: For to be carnally minded is death; but to be spiritually minded is life and peace. 7: Because the carnal mind is enmity against God: for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be. 8: So then they that are in the flesh cannot please God. 9: But ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his. 10: And if Christ be in you, the body is dead because of sin; but the Spirit is life because of righteousness. 11: But if the Spirit of him that raised up Jesus from the dead dwell in you, he that raised up Christ from the dead shall also quicken your mortal bodies by his Spirit that dwelleth in you. 12: Therefore, brethren, we are debtors, not to the flesh, to live after the flesh. 13: For if ye live after the flesh, ye shall die: but if ye through the Spirit do mortify the deeds of the body, ye shall live. 14: For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God.

It goes like this:

GRACE: unmerited love and favor with God was bought for the believer by Jesus Christ.

Eph: 2:8: For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God.

His shed BLOOD washes away the believer's sin.

Heb: 9:14: How much more shall the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit offered himself without spot to God, purge your conscience from dead works to serve the living God?

Heb: 9:22: And almost all things are by the law purged with blood; and without shedding of blood is no remission.

FAITH in the finished work will give us the victory. Read all of Heb. 11.

Gal: 2:16: Knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the law, but by the faith of Jesus Christ, even we have believed in Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by the faith of Christ, and not by the works of the law: for by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified.

Eph: 2:8: For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God.

Col: 1:21-23: And you, that were sometime alienated and enemies in your mind by wicked works, yet now hath he reconciled 22: In the body of his flesh through death, to present you holy and unblameable and unproveable in his sight: 23: If ye continue in the faith grounded and settled, and be not moved away from the hope of the gospel, which ye have heard, and which was preached to every creature which is under heaven; whereof I Paul am made a minister;

It is the WORD put to work in our lives that will save our soul.

Jas: 1:21-22: Wherefore lay apart all filthiness and superfluity of naughtiness, and receive with meekness the engrafted word, which is able to save your souls. 22: But be ye doers of the word, and not hearers only, deceiving your own selves. 23: For if any be a hearer of the word, and not a doer, he is like unto a man beholding his natural face in a glass: 24: For he beholdeth himself, and goeth his way, and straightway forgetteth what manner of man he was.

To be ADOPTED back as a child of God a person must repent, that is turn from doing things their way and turn to doing things God's way and they must choose Jesus as their Lord. You can choose the Adam way or the Jesus way. The Adam way leads to death. The Jesus way is eternal life.

2Cor: 5:19: To wit, that God was in Christ, reconciling the world unto himself, not imputing their trespasses unto them; and hath committed unto us the word of reconciliation.

Eph: 1:5: Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will,

How it works:

Hear

Believe

Repent

Receive

Learn

Apply

Overcome

The objective of this article is to declare that you must have Jesus in your heart to be saved from hell and go to heaven. Your works or deeds will show whether you have Him in your heart or not.

Rom: 2:6-8: Who will render to every man according to his deeds: 7: To them who by patient continuance in well doing seek for glory and honour and immortality, eternal life: 8: But unto them that are contentious, and do not obey the truth, but obey unrighteousness, indignation and wrath,

The Reconciliation

2Cor: 5:18-21 And all things are of God, who hath reconciled us to himself by Jesus Christ, and hath given to us the ministry of reconciliation; To wit, that God was in Christ, reconciling the world unto himself, not imputing their trespasses unto them; and hath committed unto us the word of reconciliation. Now then we are ambassadors for Christ, as though God did beseech you by us: we pray you in Christ's stead, be ye reconciled to God. For he hath made him to be sin for us, who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of God in him.

The reconciliation is necessary because in the beginning Spirit-filled man chose to trust the liar and listen to him rather than God the Father. Thus mankind was separated from God. Sin drove a wedge between them. Distrust and therefore disobedience broke the fellowship of the Father with his son Adam and consequently the fellowship with mankind. Then Spirit-filled Jesus chose to listen to and trust God and he stood in the gap for all of mankind. Now through receiving him – choosing to listen to and trust God – one can be born again of the Spirit and be restored to a Father/child relationship with God.

Sin separated us from God, the atonement and God's plan of salvation is for man's benefit, not God's. The word has spread about that God could not look on sin so he sent his Son to pay the price for sin so that he could accept us again. That is true in a sense but it is not the truth.

The truth is that it was all done for mankind, not for God. Mankind is the one who needed a powerful cleaning agent to deliver them from sin and guilt.

Mankind needed to be reinstated to his former glory – to be called a child of God.

Mankind needed to be delivered from the power of their carnal nature, because the carnal nature is at enmity with God and is a powerful influence causing wrong choices.

Mankind needed to be delivered from the power of the devil's lies. God gives believers the Holy Spirit so that they do not have to heed the lie, but can combat it.

The alienation came when Adam and Eve made wrong choices. Deliverance, reconciliation, and salvation come by making a right choice – choosing Jesus. When one does that, God gives that person a new heart – a heart to please Him.

A person who has been reconciled to God becomes a child of God. This means a covenant relationship whereby the child trusts and obeys God and the Father takes good care of the child – providing, protecting, teaching, and loving it.

God Heareth Not Sinners

The Bible has a different strategy than modern Christianity for converting the wicked. Today's witnesses urge everyone to pray to God for help, yet the Bible clearly says: The LORD is far from the wicked: but he heareth the prayer of the righteous. Prov: 15:29, Jn: 9:31, Ps: 66:18-20

Modern thinking is that if someone is in trouble and asks God for help, God will or might eventually be able to gain a foothold in the person's life and maybe even someday convert them to His way of thinking and doing things – win them over – save their soul – make them a part of the answer instead of them being a part of the problem.

God's way of thinking on this subject, according to the Bible, is to proclaim Himself as the one who cares about people's troubles and as one who can get a person out of trouble, but He makes it clear that the person must repent of their ways and behavior and turn to His ways and behavior in order to get His ear. Why?

It is because He wants to do away with a lot of heartache. It is because it is the best way. It is because He wants them to learn better and faster than the other way. It is because He wants them to stop being a part of the problem and to start being a part of the answer. He cannot be of much help to them or their victims if He is not their God.

He doesn't fool around. Either you are in or you are out. His way or plan is to adopt the needy person, become their number one authority and then teach them and meet their needs.

Modern Christianity has a sneak up on them strategy – get them to go to God in their trouble and hope that they will learn to love Him. This is the same method that they use on their children and this is why most people's children take terrible advantage of them and a lot of times they never come around to the parent or the benefactor's way of thinking. This way is full of heartache for everyone. God's way cuts to the heart of the

matter and deals with it immediately just as any sane person would do with cancer because that is what sin is – a cancer that must be done away with.

If you still have doubts about God’s methods of dealing with sin and the sinner, study Jesus’ teachings and methods.

You may say, “Well He healed them all.” No, No, He was sent to the “lost” sheep of Israel. In other words, He was ministering to those already in covenant with God. True, they were off track, but they had already made that commitment that God is after.

Jesus came to bring God’s justice or judgment. Isa: 42:1-22 tells you what Jesus was doing. His people were robbed and He was intent on showing them that God meant what He said and He said what He meant, that’s why He spent so much of the time teaching on trust and obedience. For disobedience due to unbelief are the reason God’s people go astray. Heb: 3:8-19

Those who beseeched Jesus for ministry were willing even eager to get right with God. They already knew that God heareth not sinners. John the Baptist has already prepared the way.

What God Says About Israel — Ezek: 36

Ezek: 36:1-3: Also, thou son of man, prophesy unto the mountains of Israel, and say, Ye mountains of Israel, hear the word of the LORD: 2: Thus saith the Lord GOD; Because the enemy hath said against you, Aha, even the ancient high places are ours in possession: 3: Therefore prophesy and say, Thus saith the Lord GOD; Because they have made you desolate, and swallowed you up on every side, that ye might be a possession unto the residue of the heathen, and ye are taken up in the lips of talkers, and are an infamy of the people:

Ezek: 36:7-12: Therefore thus saith the Lord GOD; I have lifted up mine hand, Surely the heathen that are about you, they shall bear their shame. 8: But ye, O mountains of Israel, ye shall shoot forth your branches, and yield

your fruit to my people of Israel; for they are at hand to come. 9: For, behold, I am for you, and I will turn unto you, and ye shall be tilled and sown: 10: And I will multiply men upon you, all the house of Israel, even all of it: and the cities shall be inhabited, and the wastes shall be builded: 11: And I will multiply upon you man and beast; and they shall increase and bring fruit: and I will settle you after your old estates, and will do better unto you than at your beginnings: and ye shall know that I am the LORD. 12: Yea, I will cause men to walk upon you, even my people Israel; and they shall possess thee, and thou shalt be their inheritance, and thou shalt no more henceforth bereave them of men.

13-15: Thus saith the Lord GOD; because they say unto you, Thou land devourest up men, and hast bereaved thy nations; 14: Therefore thou shalt devour men no more, neither bereave thy nations any more, saith the Lord GOD. 15: Neither will I cause men to hear in thee the shame of the heathen any more, neither shalt thou bear the reproach of the people any more, neither shalt thou cause thy nations to fall any more, saith the Lord GOD.

16-20: Moreover the word of the LORD came unto me, saying, 17: Son of man, when the house of Israel dwelt in their own land, they defiled it by their own way and by their doings: their way was before me as the uncleanness of a removed woman. 18: Wherefore I poured my fury upon them for the blood that they had shed upon the land, and for their idols wherewith they had polluted it: 19: And I scattered them among the heathen, and they were dispersed through the countries: according to their way and according to their doings I judged them. 20: And when they entered unto the heathen, whither they went, they profaned my holy name, when they said to them, these are the people of the LORD, and are gone forth out of his land.

21-23: But I had pity for mine holy name, which the house of Israel had profaned among the heathen, whither they went. 22: Therefore say unto the house of Israel, Thus saith the Lord GOD; I do not this for your sakes, O house of Israel, but for mine holy name's sake, which ye have profaned among the heathen, whither ye went. 23: And I will sanctify my great name, which was profaned among the heathen, which ye have profaned in the midst of them; and the heathen shall know that I am the LORD, saith the Lord GOD, when I shall be sanctified in you before their eyes.

24-30: For I will take you from among the heathen, and gather you out of all countries, and will bring you into your own land. 25: Then will I sprinkle clean water upon you, and ye shall be clean: from all your filthiness, and from all your idols, will I cleanse you. 26: A new heart also will I give you, and a new spirit will I put within you: and I will take away the stony heart out of your flesh, and I will give you an heart of flesh. 27: And I will put my spirit within you, and cause you to walk in my statutes, and ye shall keep my judgments, and do them. 28: And ye shall dwell in the land that I gave to your fathers; and ye shall be my people, and I will be your God. 29: I will also save you from all your uncleannesses: and I will call for the corn, and will increase it, and lay no famine upon you. 30: And I will multiply the fruit of the tree, and the increase of the field, that ye shall receive no more reproach of famine among the heathen.

31-36: Then shall ye remember your own evil ways, and your doings that were not good, and shall lothe yourselves in your own sight for your iniquities and for your abominations. 32: Not for your sakes do I this, saith the Lord GOD, be it known unto you: be ashamed and confounded for your own ways, O house of Israel. 33: Thus saith the Lord GOD; In the day that I shall have cleansed you from all your iniquities I will also cause you to dwell in the cities, and the wastes shall be builded. 34: And the desolate land shall be tilled, whereas it lay desolate in the sight of all that passed by. 35: And they shall say, This land that was desolate is become like the garden of Eden; and the waste and desolate and ruined cities are become fenced, and are inhabited. 36: Then the heathen that are left round about you shall know that I the LORD build the ruined places, and plant that that was desolate: I the LORD have spoken it, and I will do it.

37: Thus saith the Lord GOD; I will yet for this be enquired of by the house of Israel, to do it for them; I will increase them with men like a flock. 38: As the holy flock, as the flock of Jerusalem in her solemn feasts; so shall the waste cities be filled with flocks of men: and they shall know that I am the LORD.

Apologetics

The Love of God

2Pet: 2:1-6: But there were false prophets also among the people, even as there shall be false teachers among you, who privily shall bring in damnable heresies, even denying the Lord that bought them, and bring upon themselves swift destruction. 2: And many shall follow their pernicious ways; by reason of whom the way of truth shall be evil spoken of. 3: And through covetousness shall they with feigned words make merchandise of you: whose judgment now of a long time lingereth not, and their damnation slumbereth not. 4: For if God spared not the angels that sinned, but cast them down to hell, and delivered them into chains of darkness, to be reserved unto judgment; 5: And spared not the old world, but saved Noah the eighth person, a preacher of righteousness, bringing in the flood upon the world of the ungodly; 6: And turning the cities of Sodom and Gomorrha into ashes condemned them with an overthrow, making them an ensample unto those that after should live ungodly;

(This too, is the love of God. He loves people and desires their happiness, but He knows that abiding happiness is the result of living righteous. So the love of God compels Him to deal with unrighteousness. Reading the next verse, we see another reason why the love of God would judge the wicked. He is moved to deliver the just.)

7-10: And delivered just Lot, vexed with the filthy conversation of the wicked: 8: (For that righteous man dwelling among them, in seeing and hearing, vexed his righteous soul from day to day with their unlawful deeds;) 9: The Lord knoweth how to deliver the godly out of temptations, and to reserve the unjust unto the day of judgment to be punished: 10: But chiefly them that walk after the flesh in the lust of uncleanness, and despise government. Presumptuous are they, selfwilled, they are not afraid to speak evil of dignities.

(That's good news for the godly! He knows how to deliver them out of temptation and He knows how to reserve the unjust unto the Day of Judgment to be punished. The love of God knows that the presumptuous and the self-willed are not only destroying themselves, but they are taking others down with them. God loves far too much to allow it to continue indefinitely.)

Scriptures about the love of God:

Rom: 5:5: And hope maketh not ashamed; because the love of God is shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy

Ghost which is given unto us.

1Jn: 2:5: But whoso keepeth his word, in him verily is the love of God perfected: hereby know we that we are in him.

1Jn: 3:16: Hereby perceive we the love of God, because he laid down his life for us: and we ought to lay down our lives for the brethren.

1Jn: 5:3-5: For this is the love of God, that we keep his commandments: and his commandments are not grievous. 4: For whatsoever is born of God overcometh the world: and this is the victory that overcometh the world, even our faith. 5: Who is he that overcometh the world, but he that believeth that Jesus is the Son of God?

9-12: If we receive the witness of men, the witness of God is greater: for this is the witness of God which he hath testified of his Son. 10: He that believeth on the Son of God hath the witness in himself: he that believeth not God hath made him a liar; because he believeth not the record that God gave of his Son. 11: And this is the record, that God hath given to us eternal life, and this life is in his Son. 12: He that hath the Son hath life; and he that hath not the Son of God hath not life.

17-21: All unrighteousness is sin: and there is a sin not unto death. 18: We know that whosoever is born of God sinneth not; but he that is begotten of God keepeth himself, and that wicked one toucheth him not. 19: And we know that we are of God, and the whole world lieth in wickedness. 20: And we know that the Son of God is come, and hath given us an understanding, that we may know him that is true, and we are in him that is true, even in his Son Jesus Christ. This is the true God, and eternal life. 21: Little children, keep yourselves from idols. Amen.

Jude: 3-4: Beloved, when I gave all diligence to write unto you of the common salvation, it was needful for me to write unto you, and exhort you that ye should earnestly contend for the faith which was once delivered unto the saints. 4: For there are certain men crept in unawares, who were before of old ordained to this condemnation, ungodly men, turning the grace of our God into lasciviousness, and denying the only Lord God, and our Lord Jesus Christ.

5-8: I will therefore put you in remembrance, though ye once knew this, how that the Lord, having saved the people out of the land of Egypt, afterward destroyed them that believed not. 6: And the angels which kept not their first estate, but left their own habitation, he hath reserved in everlasting chains under darkness unto the judgment of the great day. 7: Even as Sodom and Gomorrha, and the cities about them in like manner, giving themselves over to fornication, and going after strange flesh, are set forth for an example, suffering the

vengeance of eternal fire.

8: Likewise also these filthy dreamers defile the flesh, despise dominion, and speak evil of dignities.

9-13: Yet Michael the archangel, when contending with the devil he disputed about the body of Moses, durst not bring against him a railing accusation, but said, The Lord rebuke thee.

10: But these speak evil of those things which they know not: but what they know naturally, as brute beasts, in those things they corrupt themselves. 11: Woe unto them! for they have gone in the way of Cain, and ran greedily after the error of Balaam for reward, and perished in the gainsaying of Core. 12: These are spots in your feasts of charity, when they feast with you, feeding themselves without fear: clouds they are without water, carried about of winds; trees whose fruit withereth, without fruit, twice dead, plucked up by the roots; 13: Raging waves of the sea, foaming out their own shame; wandering stars, to whom is reserved the blackness of darkness for ever.

14-15: And Enoch also, the seventh from Adam, prophesied of these, saying, Behold, the Lord cometh with ten thousands of his saints, 15: To execute judgment upon all, and to convince all that are ungodly among them of all their ungodly deeds which they have ungodly committed, and of all their hard speeches which ungodly sinners have spoken against him.

The Great Commission

As this generation has done with many of Jesus' teachings as well as other Bible teachings, they've changed some of the wording and some of the meaning. In every case the result has been disastrous.

Let's look at what The Great Commission in Matt: 28:18-20 really says: And Jesus came and spake unto them, saying, All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth. 19: Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost: 20: Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and, lo, I am with you alway, even unto the end of the world. Amen.

So Jesus tells His disciples to teach all nations. That does not say, “Go and give them the good news that I have died on the cross and rose again from the dead so that they don’t have to go to hell.” It says to teach the nations.

Teach them what? Teach them about God and about the Truth and invite them to believe, receive, and be saved from sin and death.

He goes on to say, “Teach them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you.” As far as I can see, this does away with any of that talk that says, “Jesus was only talking to the Jews in His teaching.” He says here to teach the world to observe His teachings.

So, so far, we see that The Great Commission is not just about getting sinners into heaven, it’s about teaching them how to live and not die.

What else did Jesus say in The Great Commission? He said “All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth, therefore you go...” Then at the end of the commission, He says, “Lo, I am with you alway, even unto the end of the world. Amen.”

Jesus, the Son of God who has all power told us to go in His Name. Does He need hard rock bands, ice cream cones, or any other enticement in order to draw a crowd? No! The way we are doing things is an insult to Him. He has endued us with power from on high. We are supposed to be carrying out His ministry the same way He did.

What’s the big deal? You may ask. When Jesus spoke, men listened. Why? Because they knew He had the power to do something about their troubles. You may say, “Well, He didn’t convince all that many either. No, He was planting seed.

My point is those who did choose to believe were truly converted and those who came to believe later were truly converted. This means that if you win them by the power of the Truth and by the power of God, they will have a much greater chance of getting serious with God because they will revere Him.

Those who are drawn to hear you preach through carnal enticements may like what you say and may respond to your message, but in most cases they have not been won over to God’s side, they have just been lured into the first step. Often they go no further or have to stumble along for years before they learn that He is God.

Some will say, we don’t have power easily accessible as Jesus did. Sadly, this is true. But that is because we are

off. Doesn't it make more sense to get lined up with God before we do The Great Commission?

How do we do that? By calling the solemn assembly – by dropping all our busyness and getting to church and as one body begin to cry out to God that He would pour out His Spirit on us, anew – because The Great Commission can only be done with Jesus' presence and power. Joel 2

This is how God feels about us doing The Great Commission our way instead of His way.

Isa: 30:1-4: Woe to the rebellious children, saith the LORD, that take counsel, but not of me; and that cover with a covering, but not of my spirit, that they may add sin to sin: 2: That walk to go down into Egypt, and have not asked at my mouth; to strengthen themselves in the strength of Pharaoh, and to trust in the shadow of Egypt! 3: Therefore shall the strength of Pharaoh be your shame, and the trust in the shadow of Egypt your confusion. 4: For his princes were at Zoan, and his ambassadors came to Hanes.

5-8: They were all ashamed of a people that could not profit them, nor be an help nor profit, but a shame, and also a reproach. 6: The burden of the beasts of the south: into the land of trouble and anguish, from whence come the young and old lion, the viper and fiery flying serpent, they will carry their riches upon the shoulders of young asses, and their treasures upon the bunches of camels, to a people that shall not profit them. 7: For the Egyptians shall help in vain, and to no purpose: therefore have I cried concerning this, their strength is to sit still. 8: Now go, write it before them in a table, and note it in a book that it may be for the time to come for ever and ever:

9-12: That this is a rebellious people, lying children, children that will not hear the law of the LORD: 10: Which say to the seers, See not; and to the prophets, Prophecy not unto us right things, speak unto us smooth things, prophesy deceits: 11: Get you out of the way, turn aside out of the path, cause the Holy One of Israel to cease from before us. 12: Wherefore thus saith the Holy One of Israel, because ye despise this word, and trust in oppression and perverseness, and stay thereon:

13-14: Therefore this iniquity shall be to you as a breach ready to fall, swelling out in a high wall, whose breaking cometh suddenly at an instant. 14: And he shall break it as the breaking of the potters' vessel that is broken in pieces; he shall not spare: so that there shall not be found in the bursting of it a sherd to take fire from the hearth, or to take water withal out of the pit.

(What shall we do?)

15-17: For thus saith the Lord GOD, the Holy One of Israel; in returning and rest shall ye be saved; in quietness and in confidence shall be your strength: and ye would not. 16: But ye said, No; for we will flee upon horses; therefore shall ye flee: and, we will ride upon the swift; therefore shall they that pursue you be swift. 17: One thousand shall flee at the rebuke of one; at the rebuke of five shall ye flee: till ye be left as a beacon upon the top of a mountain, and as an ensign on an hill.

18-21: And therefore will the LORD wait, that he may be gracious unto you, and therefore will he be exalted, that he may have mercy upon you: for the LORD is a God of judgment: blessed are all they that wait for him. 19: For the people shall dwell in Zion at Jerusalem: thou shalt weep no more: he will be very gracious unto thee at the voice of thy cry; when he shall hear it, he will answer thee. 20: And though the Lord give you the bread of adversity, and the water of affliction, yet shall not thy teachers be removed into a corner any more, but thine eyes shall see thy teachers: 21: And thine ears shall hear a word behind thee, saying, This is the way, walk ye in it, when ye turn to the right hand, and when ye turn to the left.

22-23: Ye shall defile also the covering of thy graven images of silver, and the ornament of thy molten images of gold: thou shalt cast them away as a menstruous cloth; thou shalt say unto it, get thee hence. 23: Then shall he give the rain of thy seed, that thou shalt sow the ground withal; and bread of the increase of the earth, and it shall be fat and plenteous: in that day shall thy cattle feed in large pastures.

The “True” Love of God

Obama and those of his persuasion do not know the true love of God. They have a different interpretation of His mandate to love and care about the world.

The goal in godliness is to give life at every turn. God is about Life. God is Love – the kind of love that produces and enhances life.

The wages of sin is death. All sin heads in death’s direction. That is why God opposes it.

The sin of greed leads to death because it is selfish. Greed is about gathering wealth. Life is about sharing, giving, helping, and loving. Love is about using wealth to spread life-giving truth and help.

Obama comprehends the sharing wealth part, but he does not have the freedom of choice part right. He wants to give people freedom to choose in places that infringe on another's rights such as the unborn baby's right to life or in the case of calling sin, sin – giving freedom to sin and forbidding those who know that it leads to death from having freedom of speech.

He wants to take people's wealth and spread it around the way he sees fit. The God kind of love wants to give people Jesus so that they will want to be generous with their wealth, but will also know how to use it wisely.

Yes, Love has a counterpart – her name is Wisdom. Jesus is the complete package. When He is living in your heart, you will want to give and share, but you will want to do it wisely, knowing that foolishness is another sin that lead to death.

So when love and wisdom are working together, they will truly be productive. It is robbery, another sin, to take people's money and do what you want with it.

It is foolish to feed people's bodies without feeding their minds with truths that will help them avoid bad choices and help them make good choices that will change their way of living for the better.

And those who are God-fearing know that it is foolish to feed just the body and the soul without feeding the spirit, because they know that a God-centered life is a life producing life. And they know that feeding the spirit is far greater than feeding the body and soul for eternal life is spiritual life. True Christians care about the hungry and have a deep desire to feed them, but they care even more about helping them receive eternal life. They will not do the one and leave the other undone.

Adultery and fornication of any kind is deadly. God, the giver of life, forbids all fornication because it leads to death. Sex was ordained by the life-giver to give life. Again Wisdom must have a say in the sexual relationship in order for it to produce life and not death.

Man's kind of love often influences them to want to have sexual relations unwisely.

Wisdom says one life-time partner of the opposite sex in order to produce offspring.

Wisdom says the life-time partner must not be a close relative in order to avoid bad production.

Wisdom says no sex with anyone other than your life-time partner in order to avoid the problems that come with misusing what God has designed, to avoid hurting yourself and others, and to avoid contracting diseases from those who have misused God's gift.

I hope this article makes the issue clearer. There is a right way and a wrong way to love, to give, and to help. This is why God went to such extreme measure to get His message in writing and get it to the people. Now the very ones who were privileged to have access to it have turned their back on it and said, we will decide what is good and what is bad and what is right and wrong.

BUT "GOD" IS LIFE AND NOT MAN.

What is Biblical Christianity

A biblical Christian has repented of their sin and of doing things their way. They have asked God to forgive them and have asked Jesus to come into their heart and be their Lord and Savior.

They learn from the Bible that God's plan of salvation includes entering into Christ's crucifixion and resurrection. They are glad to hear that all they have to do is live by faith – faith that their old man or carnal nature is crucified and faith that they have been resurrected from the dead and given new life – the life of Christ.

They understand that Jesus is the blueprint and He will recreate them in His image as they yield to Him.

They have a game plan and that is to spend each day listening to and learning from the Lord.

They renew their mind with the Holy Bible and have a servant's heart toward God. They take pleasure in loving, witnessing, and ministering to people of all walks of life because Jesus lives in them and they are a member of His body and therefore happily do His thing.

They have been relieved of the cares of this world, the deceitfulness of riches, and the lust for other things. Their life is hid with Christ in God. This world is not their home. Their burden is light and their yoke is easy. They have a glorious and eternal future. For now, they are willing to suffer rather than to fail to please God, if it is necessary to their particular ministry.

They practice looking in the mirror of the Word and when they walk away, they remember what they look like because they are doers of the Word.

They put on the full armor of God and stand against the enemy.

They long to congregate with like-minded people so that, as a body, they can help one another live, move, and have their being, in Christ.

They abhor the thought of a worldly church and understand that the church is built upon the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ being the chief cornerstone. And they understand that God ordained the church to be a place where Christians urge one another on to love and good works.

That church is a tight-knit group of like-minded people who walk by the spirit and not by the flesh. They operate the same as the human body – all having their unique function, yet always working as a unit, being single-minded on serving the Lord.

What Do I Get?

What could be said in answer to the question: “If I do what you are asking, if I give up Judaism and become a Christian, what do I get in return?”

You get salvation:

Acts 4:12: Neither is there salvation in any other: for there is none other name under heaven given among men,

whereby we must be saved.

You get reconciled to Father God:

2Cor: 5:18-19: And all things are of God, who hath reconciled us to himself by Jesus Christ, and hath given to us the ministry of reconciliation; to wit, that God was in Christ, reconciling the world unto himself, not imputing their trespasses unto them; and hath committed unto us the word of reconciliation.

You get grace – a tangible grace whereby you can show unmerited favor to others:

Eph: 3:7-19: Whereof I was made a minister, according to the gift of the grace of God given unto me by the effectual working of his power. Unto me, who am less than the least of all saints, is this grace given, that I should preach among the Gentiles the unsearchable riches of Christ; And to make all men see what is the fellowship of the mystery, which from the beginning of the world hath been hid in God, who created all things by Jesus Christ: To the intent that now unto the principalities and powers in heavenly places might be known by the church the manifold wisdom of God, According to the eternal purpose which he purposed in Christ Jesus our Lord: In whom we have boldness and access with confidence by the faith of him. Wherefore I desire that ye faint not at my tribulations for you, which is your glory. For this cause I bow my knees unto the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, Of whom the whole family in heaven and earth is named, That he would grant you, according to the riches of his glory, to be strengthened with might by his Spirit in the inner man; That Christ may dwell in your hearts by faith; that ye, being rooted and grounded in love may be able to comprehend with all saints what is the breadth, and length, and depth, and height. And to know the love of Christ, which passeth knowledge, that ye might be filled with all the fulness of God.

You get adopted back into God's family:

Gal: 4:5: To redeem them that were under the law, that we might receive the adoption of sons.

Eph: 1:5: Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will,

You get a new heart:

Ezek: 18:31-32: A new heart also will I give you, and a new spirit will I put within you: and I will take away the stony heart out of your flesh, and I will give you an heart of flesh. And I will put My spirit within you, and cause

you to walk in My statutes, and ye shall keep My judgments, and do them. [This is the covenant – Heb. 8:10]

You get the love of God shed abroad in your heart:

Rom: 5:5: And hope maketh not ashamed; because the love of God is shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Ghost which is given unto us. (You may have heard that God loves you, but until He moves in, you can't experience the intimacy of it.)

You get Jesus Christ as your very own big brother:

Heb: 2:11: For both he that sanctifieth and they who are sanctified are all of one: for which cause he is not ashamed to call them brethren,

You get Jesus, the Good Shepherd:

John:10:11: I am the good shepherd: the good shepherd giveth his life for the sheep. John:10:14: I am the good shepherd, and know my sheep, and am known of mine.

You get the light of the world:

John: 8:12: Then spake Jesus again unto them, saying, I am the light of the world: he that followeth me shall not walk in darkness, but shall have the light of life.

You get the bread of life:

John: 6:35: And Jesus said unto them, I am the bread of life: he that cometh to me shall never hunger; and he that believeth on me shall never thirst.

You get the mighty conqueror:

Rev: 1:18: I am he that liveth, and was dead; and, behold, I am alive for evermore, Amen; and have the keys of hell and of death.

Rev: 3:21: To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with me in my throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with my Father in his throne. (The one who conquered Satan; the one who ruled over the carnal nature; the one who proved himself totally faithful to God, to himself and to others; the one who has all power in heaven and in earth; the one who loved us enough to suffer to the max for us – he lives inside us and helps us live as conquerors.)

You get the answer to Solomon's dilemma in Ecclesiastes. Solomon's cry:

Eccl: 1:8-10: All things are full of labour; man cannot utter it: the eye is not satisfied with seeing, nor the ear filled with hearing. The thing that hath been, it is that which shall be; and that which is done is that which shall be done: and there is no new thing under the sun. Is there any thing whereof it may be said, See, this is new? it hath been already of old time, which was before us. (He cried out for meaning to life. (Jesus gives us meaning – we can be givers of life. Something is new – Through Jesus you can be a new creation, a brand new man.)

You get access to super-natural power:

Eph: 1:19-20: And what is the exceeding greatness of his power to us-ward who believe, according to the working of his mighty power. Which he wrought in Christ, when he raised him from the dead, and set him at his own right hand in the heavenly places,

Eph: 3:16-19: That he would grant you, according to the riches of his glory, to be strengthened with might by his Spirit in the inner man. That Christ may dwell in your hearts by faith; that ye, being rooted and grounded in love. May be able to comprehend with all saints what is the breadth, and length, and depth, and height; And to know the love of Christ, which passeth knowledge, that ye might be filled with all the fulness of God.

You get spiritual blessings:

Eph: 1:3: Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who hath blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places in Christ:

(I'm sure once a person is thinking along these lines he can come up with many more gifts and treasure from God that are in Christ Jesus.)

What about Evolution?

Evolution is a real process. Does that surprise some of you – that an adamant believer of the Gospel would say that? Let me explain.

I'll start with Dan: 4:33: The same hour was the thing fulfilled upon Nebuchadnezzar: and he was driven from men, and did eat grass as oxen, and his body was wet with the dew of heaven, till his hairs were grown like eagles' feathers, and his nails like birds' claws.

Evolution is not only by intelligent design; it is also by a loving God. Let's look at how it works.

The account above tells of evolution's benefits that this loving God designed. Because Nebuchadnezzar had to live in the field and eat grass his body adjusted and he developed what was needed to survive. Feathers and bird claws evolved. This is not a case for the atheistic theory of evolution – it is a case for a loving God who has provided adaptation.

What happens to an unattended field? It grows over with weeds, thorns, and nettles. But if an intelligent loving being cares for it, it evolves into a place bountiful in blessings.

What happens to a house that is left uncared for? It gradually deteriorates and eventually falls apart. This goes for cars and everything that has been created by man. It takes man caring about it to keep it in good repair. If neglected, things waste away to nothing. It could be said that they evolve into junk. The evidence is substantial.

What happens to a house that is lovingly and intelligently designed and built? It gradually evolves into a beautiful, functional home.

Children, when raised by caring parents, evolve into useful contributing adults. What would happen to a child if there were no intelligent being and no nurturing in its life? It would evolve into a mess. It would take loving people many years to help it evolve into someone who can function well.

The human body grows and by the time it reaches adulthood all the equipment required for it to function correctly has evolved. It could not be an accident that the things needed for adulthood are there at the right time.

What is wrong with the theory of evolution is not evolution, but the mentally defective idea that something could evolve into something better without the design and help of a caring being.

I think the reason Darwin thought evolution was something that just happens is because he did not understand that God created everything good and placed it where He purposed that it should be and function. When sin came into the world, everything changed. Sin caused perversion in God's creation. It caused death to God's creation. After the flood weather extremes came in and caused hardship. A loving God helped the plants and animals and people adapt to their surroundings the same way as it described what happened to Nebuchadnezzar.

The Rapture: to Be or Not to Be?

The verses I use below are not to prove that there will be a rapture of the true church because I know of no verse that proves that. I am using these verses to build a case for why I believe there will be a rapture of the true church.

Some of the scriptures will seem more valid than others because some of them are for a certain way of thinking and others are easily discernable.

2Kings 22:19-20: Because thine heart was tender, and thou hast humbled thyself before the LORD, when thou heardest what I spake against this place, and against the inhabitants thereof, that they should become a desolation and a curse, and hast rent thy clothes, and wept before me; I also have heard thee, saith the LORD. 20: Behold therefore, I will gather thee unto thy fathers, and thou shalt be gathered into thy grave in peace; and thine eyes shall not see all the evil which I will bring upon this place.

(God was talking to Josiah the king. I show in these verses that God does this kind of thing. He does provide a haven for those who are not guilty of whatever He is dealing with the people about.)

Ps: 94:12-14: Blessed is the man whom thou chastenest, O LORD, and teachest him out of thy law; 13: That thou mayest give him rest from the days of adversity, until the pit be digged for the wicked. 14: For the LORD will not cast off his people, neither will he forsake his inheritance.

Isa: 26:17-21: Like as a woman with child, that draweth near the time of her delivery, is in pain, and crieth out in her pangs; so have we been in thy sight, O LORD. 18: We have been with child, we have been in pain, we have as it were brought forth wind; we have not wrought any deliverance in the earth; neither have the inhabitants of the world fallen. 19: Thy dead men shall live, together with my dead body shall they arise. Awake and sing, ye that dwell in dust: for thy dew is as the dew of herbs, and the earth shall cast out the dead. 20: Come, my people, enter thou into thy chambers, and shut thy doors about thee: hide thyself as it were for a little moment, until the indignation be overpast. 21: For, behold, the LORD cometh out of his place to punish the inhabitants of the earth for their iniquity: the earth also shall disclose her blood, and shall no more cover her slain.

(That may have been for then, but it fits now just as well and I think we can take these words to heart.)

Zeph: 2:3: Seek ye the LORD, all ye meek of the earth, which have wrought his judgment; seek righteousness, seek meekness: it may be ye shall be hid in the day of the LORD's anger. (This scripture certainly give hope of a rapture.)

Four good points:

Lk: 12:40-46: Be ye therefore ready also: for the Son of man cometh at an hour when ye think not. 41: Then Peter said unto him, Lord, speakest thou this parable unto us, or even to all? 42: And the Lord said, Who then is that faithful and wise steward, whom his lord shall make ruler over his household, to give them their portion of meat in due season?

43: Blessed is that servant, whom his lord when he cometh shall find so doing. 44: Of a truth I say unto you, that he will make him ruler over all that he hath. 45: But and if that servant say in his heart, My lord delayeth his coming; and shall begin to beat the menservants and maidens, and to eat and drink, and to be drunken; 46: The lord of that servant will come in a day when he looketh not for him, and at an hour when he is not aware, and will cut him in sunder, and will appoint him his portion with the unbelievers.

(Vs 46 sure doesn't sound as if the earth is experiencing the wrath when He comes. First of all Jesus says that He is coming when people aren't expecting Him and then he talks about His servants being tempted to party. Now if the wrath were going on, who would be partying? I see a difference between tribulation and 'the great

tribulation.’)

Lk: 17:27: And as it was in the days of Noe, so shall it be also in the days of the Son of man. 27: They did eat, they drank, they married wives, they were given in marriage, until the day that Noe entered into the ark, and the flood came, and destroyed them all.

(Notice, Jesus talks about Noe entering into the ark – he was spared from the flood. He was shut away safe. The rapture would take God’s people out of here before the wrath.)

Lk: 17:28-37 Likewise also as it was in the days of Lot; they did eat, they drank, they bought, they sold, they planted, they builded; 29: But the same day that Lot went out of Sodom it rained fire and brimstone from heaven, and destroyed them all. 30: Even thus shall it be in the day when the Son of man is revealed. 31: In that day, he which shall be upon the housetop, and his stuff in the house, let him not come down to take it away: and he that is in the field, let him likewise not return back. 32: Remember Lot’s wife. 33: Whosoever shall seek to save his life shall lose it; and whosoever shall lose his life shall preserve it. 34: I tell you, in that night there shall be two men in one bed; the one shall be taken, and the other shall be left. 35: Two women shall be grinding together; the one shall be taken, and the other left. 36: Two men shall be in the field; the one shall be taken, and the other left. 37: And they answered and said unto him, Where, Lord? And he said unto them, Wheresoever the body is, thither will the eagles be gathered together.

(It will happen unexpectedly. Notice that those who are ready will be taken. Yes, taken out of here and this happens before all hell breaks loose, because if it were after, Christians would not be taken by surprise, they would be constantly watching for their deliverance.)

Lk: 21:23-28: But woe unto them that are with child, and to them that give suck, in those days! for there shall be great distress in the land, and wrath upon this people. 24: And they shall fall by the edge of the sword, and shall be led away captive into all nations: and Jerusalem shall be trodden down of the Gentiles, until the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled. 25: And there shall be signs in the sun, and in the moon, and in the stars; and upon the earth distress of nations, with perplexity; the sea and the waves roaring; 26: Men’s hearts failing them for fear, and for looking after those things which are coming on the earth: for the powers of heaven shall be shaken. 27: And then shall they see the Son of man coming in a cloud with power and great glory. 28: And when these things begin to come to pass, then look up, and lift up your heads; for your redemption draweth nigh.

Notice that the above passage is during a period of havoc as described in:

1Thess: 5:2-9: But of the times and the seasons, brethren, ye have no need that I write unto you. 2: For

yourselves know perfectly that the day of the Lord so cometh as a thief in the night. 3: For when they shall say, Peace and safety; then sudden destruction cometh upon them, as travail upon a woman with child; and they shall not escape. 4: But ye, brethren, are not in darkness, that that day should overtake you as a thief. 5: Ye are all the children of light, and the children of the day: we are not of the night, nor of darkness. 6: Therefore let us not sleep, as do others; but let us watch and be sober. 7: For they that sleep sleep in the night; and they that be drunken are drunken in the night. 8: But let us, who are of the day, be sober, putting on the breastplate of faith and love; and for an helmet, the hope of salvation. 9: For God hath not appointed us to wrath, but to obtain salvation by our Lord Jesus Christ,

(Jesus said, 'they' will see the Son of man coming – He didn't say 'you,' meaning His follower, He said they as in those who were going through the distress. To His disciples, He says, "When you see these things begin to take place, look up, for your redemption draws nigh." Then in Vs 36, He says: Watch ye therefore, and pray always, that ye may be accounted worthy to escape all these things that shall come to pass, and to stand before the Son of man.)

Lk: 21:34-37: And take heed to yourselves, lest at any time your hearts be overcharged with surfeiting, and drunkenness, and cares of this life, and so that day come upon you unawares. 35: For as a snare shall it come on all them that dwell on the face of the whole earth. 36: Watch ye therefore, and pray always, that ye may be accounted worthy to escape all these things that shall come to pass, and to stand before the Son of man.

(See, Jesus does talk about an escape from the horrible things that are coming on the earth.)

1Thess: 4:15-17: For this we say unto you by the word of the Lord, that we which are alive and remain unto the coming of the Lord shall not prevent them which are asleep. 16: For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first: 17: Then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord.

The end of the age harvest sounds different:

Rev: 14:14-20: And I looked, and behold a white cloud, and upon the cloud one sat like unto the Son of man, having on his head a golden crown, and in his hand a sharp sickle. 15: And another angel came out of the temple, crying with a loud voice to him that sat on the cloud, Thrust in thy sickle, and reap: for the time is come for thee to reap; for the harvest of the earth is ripe. 16: And he that sat on the cloud thrust in his sickle on the earth; and the earth was reaped. 17: And another angel came out of the temple which is in heaven, he also having a sharp sickle. 18: And another angel came out from the altar, which had power over fire; and cried with a loud cry to him that had the sharp sickle, saying, Thrust in thy sharp sickle, and gather the clusters of the vine of the earth; for her grapes are fully ripe. 19: And the angel thrust in his sickle into the earth, and gathered the vine of the earth, and cast it into the great winepress of the wrath of God. 20: And the winepress was trodden without the

city, and blood came out of the winepress, even unto the horse bridles, by the space of a thousand and six hundred furlongs. Notice Vs 16 – those are taken first and then the wrath.

(Who will make the rapture? Those who know they have been redeemed and are walking by faith and love because of their hope. Notice that they are not appointed for God's wrath – if no rapture – how are they going to get away from it?)

Rev: 22:12: Behold, he cometh with clouds; and every eye shall see him, and they also which pierced him: and all kindreds of the earth shall wail because of him. Even so, Amen.

(If the wrath were just ending, I would think the people who were still alive would already be wailing.)

This one is as close to a promise of the rapture as I can find:

Rev: 3:8-11: I know thy works: behold, I have set before thee an open door, and no man can shut it: for thou hast a little strength, and hast kept my word, and hast not denied my name. 9: Behold, I will make them of the synagogue of Satan, which say they are Jews, and are not, but do lie; behold, I will make them to come and worship before thy feet, and to know that I have loved thee. 10: Because thou hast kept the word of my patience, I also will keep thee from the hour of temptation, which shall come upon all the world, to try them that dwell upon the earth. 11: Behold, I come quickly: hold that fast which thou hast, that no man take thy crown.

Scriptures that tell who will go through the wrath and who will not:

Rom: 1:18: For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who hold the truth in unrighteousness;

Rom: 2:5: But after thy hardness and impenitent heart treasurest up unto thyself wrath against the day of wrath and revelation of the righteous judgment of God;

Rom: 2:8: But unto them that are contentious, and do not obey the truth, but obey unrighteousness, indignation and wrath,

Rom: 5:9: Much more then, being now justified by his blood, we shall be saved from wrath through him.

Eph: 2:1-3: And you hath he quickened, who were dead in trespasses and sins; 2: Wherein in time past ye walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience: 3: Among whom also we all had our conversation in times past in the lusts of our flesh, fulfilling the desires of the flesh and of the mind; and were by nature the children of wrath, even as others.

Eph: 5:6: Let no man deceive you with vain words: for because of these things cometh the wrath of God upon the children of disobedience.

Col: 3:6: For which things' sake the wrath of God cometh on the children of disobedience:

1Thess: 1:10: And to wait for his Son from heaven, whom he raised from the dead, even Jesus, which delivered us from the wrath to come.

1Thess: 5:9: For God hath not appointed us to wrath, but to obtain salvation by our Lord Jesus Christ,

Rev: 18:1-19: And after these things I saw another angel come down from heaven, having great power; and the earth was lightened with his glory. 2: And he cried mightily with a strong voice, saying, Babylon the great is fallen, is fallen, and is become the habitation of devils, and the hold of every foul spirit, and a cage of every unclean and hateful bird. 3: For all nations have drunk of the wine of the wrath of her fornication, and the kings of the earth have committed fornication with her, and the merchants of the earth are waxed rich through the abundance of her delicacies. 4: And I heard another voice from heaven, saying, Come out of her, my people, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues. 5: For her sins have reached unto heaven, and God hath remembered her iniquities. 6: Reward her even as she rewarded you, and double unto her double according to her works: in the cup which she hath filled fill to her double. 7: How much she hath glorified herself, and lived deliciously, so much torment and sorrow give her: for she saith in her heart, I sit a queen, and am no widow, and shall see no sorrow. 8: Therefore shall her plagues come in one day, death, and mourning, and famine; and she shall be utterly burned with fire: for strong is the Lord God who judgeth her. 9: And the kings of the earth, who have committed fornication and lived deliciously with her, shall bewail her, and lament for her, when they shall see the smoke of her burning, 10: Standing afar off for the fear of her torment, saying, Alas, alas, that great city Babylon, that mighty city! for in one hour is thy judgment come. 11: And the merchants of the earth shall weep and mourn over her; for no man buyeth their merchandise any more: 12: The merchandise of gold, and silver, and precious stones, and of pearls, and fine linen, and purple, and silk, and scarlet, and all thyine wood, and all manner vessels of ivory, and all manner vessels of most precious wood, and of brass, and iron, and marble, 13: And cinnamon, and odours, and ointments, and frankincense, and wine, and oil, and fine flour, and wheat, and beasts, and sheep, and horses, and chariots, and slaves, and souls of men. 14: And the fruits that thy soul lusted after are departed from thee, and all things which were dainty and goodly are departed from

thee, and thou shalt find them no more at all. 15: The merchants of these things, which were made rich by her, shall stand afar off for the fear of her torment, weeping and wailing, 16: And saying, Alas, alas, that great city, that was clothed in fine linen, and purple, and scarlet, and decked with gold, and precious stones, and pearls! 17: For in one hour so great riches is come to nought. And every shipmaster, and all the company in ships, and sailors, and as many as trade by sea, stood afar off, 18: And cried when they saw the smoke of her burning, saying, What city is like unto this great city! 19: And they cast dust on their heads, and cried, weeping and wailing, saying, Alas, alas, that great city, wherein were made rich all that had ships in the sea by reason of her costliness! for in one hour is she made desolate.

(Babylon is the great city of lies being built right at this time. All philosophy that causes rebellion and disobedience to God is Babylon or babbling.)

Rev: 18:20-24: Rejoice over her, thou heaven, and ye holy apostles and prophets; for God hath avenged you on her. 21: And a mighty angel took up a stone like a great millstone, and cast it into the sea, saying, Thus with violence shall that great city Babylon be thrown down, and shall be found no more at all. 22: And the voice of harpers, and musicians, and of pipers, and trumpeters, shall be heard no more at all in thee; and no craftsman, of whatsoever craft he be, shall be found any more in thee; and the sound of a millstone shall be heard no more at all in thee; 23: And the light of a candle shall shine no more at all in thee; and the voice of the bridegroom and of the bride shall be heard no more at all in thee: for thy merchants were the great men of the earth; for by thy sorceries were all nations deceived. 24: And in her was found the blood of prophets, and of saints, and of all that were slain upon the earth.

(I believe Vs 4 is where the rapture takes place and we are all rejoicing in heaven in Vs 20-24.)

The Scriptures Do Claim to Be Inerrant

There are those who say, “The scriptures are not inerrant.” But the scriptures below show how we are to trust in the scriptures accuracy and dependability. So believe all of the Bible – the word of God – the scriptures – or don’t believe any of it.

(According to Thy Word)

Ps: 119:9: Wherewithal shall a young man cleanse his way? by taking heed thereto according to thy word.

Ps: 119:16: I will delight myself in thy statutes: I will not forget thy word.

Ps: 119:17: Deal bountifully with thy servant, that I may live, and keep thy word.

Ps: 119:25: My soul cleaveth unto the dust: quicken thou me according to thy word.

Ps: 119:28: My soul melteth for heaviness: strengthen thou me according unto thy word.

Ps: 119:38: Stablish thy word unto thy servant, who is devoted to thy fear.

Ps: 119:41: Let thy mercies come also unto me, O LORD, even thy salvation, according to thy word.

Ps: 119:42: So shall I have wherewith to answer him that reproacheth me: for I trust in thy word.

Ps: 119:50: This is my comfort in my affliction: for thy word hath quickened me.

Ps: 119:58: I intreated thy favour with my whole heart: be merciful unto me according to thy word.

Ps: 119:65: Thou hast dealt well with thy servant, O LORD, according unto thy word.

Ps: 119:67: Before I was afflicted I went astray: but now have I kept thy word.

Ps: 119:74: They that fear thee will be glad when they see me; because I have hoped in thy word.

Ps: 119:76: Let, I pray thee, thy merciful kindness be for my comfort, according to thy word unto thy servant.

Ps: 119:81: My soul fainteth for thy salvation: but I hope in thy word.

Ps: 119:82: Mine eyes fail for thy word, saying, When wilt thou comfort me?

Ps: 119:89: For ever, O LORD, thy word is settled in heaven.

Ps: 119:101: I have refrained my feet from every evil way, that I might keep thy word.

Ps: 119:107: I am afflicted very much: quicken me, O LORD, according unto thy word.

Ps: 119:114: Thou art my hiding place and my shield: I hope in thy word.

Ps: 119:116: Uphold me according unto thy word, that I may live: and let me not be ashamed of my hope.

Ps: 119:133: Order my steps in thy word: and let not any iniquity have dominion over me.

Ps: 119:147: I prevented the dawning of the morning, and cried: I hoped in thy word.

Ps: 119:148: Mine eyes prevent the night watches, that I might meditate in thy word.

Ps: 119:154: Plead my cause, and deliver me: quicken me according to thy word.

Ps: 119:158: I beheld the transgressors, and was grieved; because they kept not thy word.

Ps: 119:161: Princes have persecuted me without a cause: but my heart standeth in awe of thy word.

Ps: 119:162: I rejoice at thy word, as one that findeth great spoil.

Ps: 119:169: Let my cry come near before thee, O LORD: give me understanding according to thy word.

Ps: 119:170: Let my supplication come before thee: deliver me according to thy word.

Ps: 119:172: My tongue shall speak of thy word: for all thy commandments are righteousness.

Ps: 138:2: I will worship toward thy holy temple, and praise thy name for thy lovingkindness and for thy truth: for thou hast magnified thy word above all thy name.

Prov: 13:13: Whoso despiseth the word shall be destroyed: but he that feareth the commandment shall be rewarded.

Prov: 30:5: Every word of God is pure: he is a shield unto them that put their trust in him.

Isa: 2:3: And many people shall go and say, Come ye, and let us go up to the mountain of the LORD, to the house of the God of Jacob; and he will teach us of his ways, and we will walk in his paths: for out of Zion shall go forth the law, and the word of the LORD from Jerusalem.

Isa: 5:24: Therefore as the fire devoureth the stubble, and the flame consumeth the chaff, so their root shall be as rottenness, and their blossom shall go up as dust: because they have cast away the law of the LORD of hosts, and despised the word of the Holy One of Israel.

Isa: 8:20: To the law and to the testimony: if they speak not according to this word, it is because there is no light in them.

Isa: 40:8: The grass withereth, the flower fadeth: but the word of our God shall stand for ever.

Mt: 21:42: Jesus saith unto them, Did ye never read in the scriptures, The stone which the builders rejected, the same is become the head of the corner: this is the Lord's doing, and it is marvellous in our eyes?

Mt: 22:29: Jesus answered and said unto them, Ye do err, not knowing the scriptures, nor the power of God.

Mt: 26:54: But how then shall the scriptures be fulfilled, that thus it must be?

Mt: 26:56: But all this was done, that the scriptures of the prophets might be fulfilled. Then all the disciples

forsook him, and fled.

Mk: 12:24: And Jesus answering said unto them, Do ye not therefore err, because ye know not the scriptures, neither the power of God?

Mk: 14:49: I was daily with you in the temple teaching, and ye took me not: but the scriptures must be fulfilled.

Mk: 15:28: And the scripture was fulfilled, which saith, And he was numbered with the transgressors.

Lk: 4:21: And he began to say unto them, This day is this scripture fulfilled in your ears.

Lk: 24:27: And beginning at Moses and all the prophets, he expounded unto them in all the scriptures the things concerning himself.

Lk: 24:32: And they said one to another, Did not our heart burn within us, while he talked with us by the way, and while he opened to us the scriptures?

Lk: 24:45: Then opened he their understanding, that they might understand the scriptures,

Jn: 2:22: When therefore he was risen from the dead, his disciples remembered that he had said this unto them; and they believed the scripture, and the word which Jesus had said.

Jn: 5:39: Search the scriptures; for in them ye think ye have eternal life: and they are they which testify of me.

Jn: 7:38: He that believeth on me, as the scripture hath said, out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water.

Jn: 7:42: Hath not the scripture said, That Christ cometh of the seed of David, and out of the town of Bethlehem, where David was?

Jn: 10:35: If he called them gods, unto whom the word of God came, and the scripture cannot be broken;

Jn: 13:18: I speak not of you all: I know whom I have chosen: but that the scripture may be fulfilled, He that eateth bread with me hath lifted up his heel against me.

Jn: 17:12: While I was with them in the world, I kept them in thy name: those that thou gavest me I have kept, and none of them is lost, but the son of perdition; that the scripture might be fulfilled.

Jn: 19:24: They said therefore among themselves, Let us not rend it, but cast lots for it, whose it shall be: that the scripture might be fulfilled, which saith, They parted my raiment among them, and for my vesture they did cast lots. These things therefore the soldiers did.

Jn: 19:28: After this, Jesus knowing that all things were now accomplished, that the scripture might be fulfilled, saith, I thirst.

Jn: 19:36: For these things were done, that the scripture should be fulfilled, A bone of him shall not be broken.

Jn: 19:37: And again another scripture saith, They shall look on him whom they pierced.

Jn: 20:9: For as yet they knew not the scripture, that he must rise again from the dead.

Acts: 1:16: Men and brethren, this scripture must needs have been fulfilled, which the Holy Ghost by the mouth of David spake before concerning Judas, which was guide to them that took Jesus.

Acts: 8:32: The place of the scripture which he read was this, He was led as a sheep to the slaughter; and like a lamb dumb before his shearer, so opened he not his mouth:

Acts: 8:35: Then Philip opened his mouth, and began at the same scripture, and preached unto him Jesus.

Acts: 17:2: And Paul, as his manner was, went in unto them, and three sabbath days reasoned with them out of the scriptures,

Acts: 17:11: These were more noble than those in Thessalonica, in that they received the word with all readiness of mind, and searched the scriptures daily, whether those things were so.

Acts: 18:24: And a certain Jew named Apollos, born at Alexandria, an eloquent man, and mighty in the scriptures, came to Ephesus.

Acts: 18:28: For he mightily convinced the Jews, and that publickly, shewing by the scriptures that Jesus was Christ.

Rom: 1:2: (Which he had promised afore by his prophets in the Holy Scriptures,)

Rom: 4:3: For what saith the scripture? Abraham believed God, and it was counted unto him for righteousness.

Rom: 10:11: For the scripture saith, Whosoever believeth on him shall not be ashamed.

Rom: 15:4: For whatsoever things were written aforetime were written for our learning, that we through patience and comfort of the scriptures might have hope.

Rom: 16:26: But now is made manifest, and by the scriptures of the prophets, according to the commandment of the everlasting God, made known to all nations for the obedience of faith:

1Cor: 15:3: For I delivered unto you first of all that which I also received, how that Christ died for our sins according to the scriptures;

1Cor: 15:4: And that he was buried, and that he rose again the third day according to the scriptures:

Gal: 3:8: And the scripture, foreseeing that God would justify the heathen through faith, preached before the gospel unto Abraham, saying, In thee shall all nations be blessed.

Gal: 3:22: But the scripture hath concluded all under sin that the promise by faith of Jesus Christ might be given to them that believe.

Gal: 4:30: Nevertheless what saith the scripture? Cast out the bondwoman and her son: for the son of the bondwoman shall not be heir with the son of the freewoman.

1Tim: 5:18: For the scripture saith, Thou shalt not muzzle the ox that treadeth out the corn. And, The labourer is worthy of his reward.

2Tim: 3:15: And that from a child thou hast known the holy scriptures, which are able to make thee wise unto salvation through faith which is in Christ Jesus.

2Tim: 3:16: All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness:

Jas: 2:8: If ye fulfil the royal law according to the scripture, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself, ye do well:

Jas: 2:23: And the scripture was fulfilled which saith, Abraham believed God, and it was imputed unto him for righteousness: and he was called the Friend of God.

Jas: 4:5: Do ye think that the scripture saith in vain, The spirit that dwelleth in us lusteth to envy?

1Pt: 2:6: Wherefore also it is contained in the scripture, Behold, I lay in Sion a chief corner stone, elect, precious: and he that believeth on him shall not be confounded.

2Pt: 1:20: Knowing this first, that no prophecy of the scripture is of any private interpretation.

2Pt: 3:16: As also in all his epistles, speaking in them of these things; in which are some things hard to be understood, which they that are unlearned and unstable wrest, as they do also the other scriptures, unto their own destruction.

Everything Happens for a Reason

Everything happens for a reason – have you ever heard someone say that? It appears to me that people usually

use that as an explanation for why some adverse event or condition occurred in their life. And it appears to me that they mean that God calls the shots and so whatever happens to us – He did it for some good reason. If that's what they are saying – that only works for someone who is following Jesus wholeheartedly.

Let's look at what God says are usually the reasons unwelcome things happen to us.

Deut: 30:19-20: I call heaven and earth to record this day against you, that I have set before you life and death, blessing and cursing: therefore choose life, that both thou and thy seed may live: That thou mayest love the LORD thy God, and that thou mayest obey his voice, and that thou mayest cleave unto him: for he is thy life, and the length of thy days: that thou mayest dwell in the land which the LORD sware unto thy fathers, to Abraham, to Isaac, and to Jacob, to give them.

Job: 34:10-11: Therefore hearken unto me, ye men of understanding: far be it from God, that he should do wickedness; and from the Almighty, that he should commit iniquity. For the work of a man shall he render unto him, and cause every man to find according to his ways.

Ps: 107:17-22: Fools because of their transgression, and because of their iniquities, are afflicted. Their soul abhorreth all manner of meat; and they draw near unto the gates of death. Then they cry unto the LORD in their trouble, and he saveth them out of their distresses. He sent his word, and healed them, and delivered them from their destructions. Oh that men would praise the LORD for his goodness, and for his wonderful works to the children of men! And let them sacrifice the sacrifices of thanksgiving, and declare his works with rejoicing.

Prov: 18:21: Death and life are in the power of the tongue: and they that love it shall eat the fruit thereof.

Prov: 27:12: A prudent man foreseeth the evil, and hideth himself; but the simple pass on, and are punished.

Isa: 3:10-11: Say ye to the righteous, that it shall be well with him: for they shall eat the fruit of their doings. Woe unto the wicked! It shall be ill with him: for the reward of his hands shall be given him.

Jer: 2:19: Thine own wickedness shall correct thee, and thy backslidings shall reprove thee: know therefore and see that it is an evil thing and bitter, that thou hast forsaken the LORD thy God, and that my fear is not in thee, saith the Lord GOD of hosts.

Jer: 5:23-35: But this people hath a revolting and a rebellious heart; they are revolted and gone. Neither say they in their heart, Let us now fear the LORD our God, that giveth rain, both the former and the latter, in his season:

he reserveth unto us the appointed weeks of the harvest. Your iniquities have turned away these things, and your sins have withholden good things from you.

Jer: 17:10: I the LORD search the heart, I try the reins, even to give every man according to his ways, and according to the fruit of his doings.

Jer: 21:14: But I will punish you according to the fruit of your doings, saith the LORD: and I will kindle a fire in the forest thereof, and it shall devour all things round about it.

Jer: 32:19: Great in counsel, and mighty in work: for thine eyes are open upon all the ways of the sons of men: to give every one according to his ways, and according to the fruit of his doings:

Ezek: 18:30: Therefore I will judge you, O house of Israel, every one according to his ways, saith the Lord GOD. Repent, and turn yourselves from all your transgressions; so iniquity shall not be your ruin.

Mic: 7:13: Notwithstanding the land shall be desolate because of them that dwell therein, for the fruit of their doings.

Mt: 4:4: It is written, [Deut. 8:3] Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God. (How many are living this way, yet they blame their troubles and lack on God.)

Mt: 9:29: Then touched he their eyes, saying, According to your faith be it unto you.

Mt: 17:20: And Jesus said unto them, Because of your unbelief: for verily I say unto you, If ye have faith as a grain of mustard seed, ye shall say unto this mountain, Remove hence to yonder place; and it shall remove; and nothing shall be impossible unto you. (Many things could be warded off with faith. Many needs could be met with faith.)

Lk: 17:19: And he said unto him, Arise, go thy way: thy faith hath made thee whole. (With the God kind of faith we could receive a lot more of the good things that God has provided.)

Rom: 5:2-5: By whom also we have access by faith into this grace wherein we stand, and rejoice in hope of the glory of God. And not only so, but we glory in tribulations also: knowing that tribulation worketh patience; And patience, experience; and experience, hope: And hope maketh not ashamed; because the love of God is shed

abroad in our hearts by the Holy Ghost which is given unto us. (God can use trouble to our advantage.)

Rom: 8:28-29: And we know that all things work together for good to them that love God, to them who are the called according to his purpose. For whom he did foreknow, he also did predestinate to be conformed to the image of his Son, that he might be the firstborn among many brethren. (Many things happen to us because of our ignorance – we need to learn more about how things work in God’s kingdom. And some things happen to us because death to our lower nature seems to most often be accomplished through suffering. But this suffering is either because we or someone who affects our lives made wrong choices or it is suffering for the gospel’s sake. It is never because of a choice on God’s part – that’s what I’m trying to get across here.)

2Cor: 6:3-10: Giving no offence in any thing, that the ministry be not blamed: But in all things approving ourselves as the ministers of God, in much patience, in afflictions, in necessities, in distresses, In stripes, in imprisonments, in tumults, in labours, in watchings, in fastings; By pureness, by knowledge, by longsuffering, by kindness, by the Holy Ghost, by love unfeigned, By the word of truth, by the power of God, by the armour of righteousness on the right hand and on the left, By honour and dishonour, by evil report and good report: as deceivers, and yet true; As unknown, and yet well known; as dying, and, behold, we live; as chastened, and not killed; As sorrowful, yet alway rejoicing; as poor, yet making many rich; as having nothing, and yet possessing all things. (This passage was included to show some of the bad things that may happen to a Christian for the Gospel’s sake.)

Gal: 6:7-9: Be not deceived; God is not mocked: for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap. For he that soweth to his flesh shall of the flesh reap corruption; but he that soweth to the Spirit shall of the Spirit reap life everlasting. And let us not be weary in well doing: for in due season we shall reap, if we faint not.

These patience scriptures are to assure the one who is on the right course that his/her day of deliverance is on the way.

Eph: 6:11-18: Put on the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil. For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places. Wherefore take unto you the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to withstand in the evil day, and having done all, to stand. Stand therefore, having your loins girt about with truth, and having on the breastplate of righteousness; And your feet shod with the preparation of the gospel of peace; Above all, taking the shield of faith, wherewith ye shall be able to quench all the fiery darts of the wicked. And take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God: Praying always with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit, and watching thereunto with all perseverance and supplication for all saints; (Many troubles can be avoided by putting on the full armor of God and do battle as the Bible instructs.)

2Thess: 1:4: So that we ourselves glory in you in the churches of God for your patience and faith in all your persecutions and tribulations that ye endure: (There is persecutions and tribulations to go through for a myriad of reasons – all of them brought on by somebody's choice other than God's.)

Heb: 6:12: That ye be not slothful, but followers of them who through faith and patience inherit the promises. (God uses our trying times to develop our patience and perfect our faith.)

Heb: 10:36: For ye have need of patience, that, after ye have done the will of God, ye might receive the promise.

Heb: 12:6-7: For whom the Lord loveth he chasteneth, and scourgeth every son whom he receiveth. If ye endure chastening, God dealeth with you as with sons; for what son is he whom the father chasteneth not? (Chastening is one reason and it is for correction.)

Jas: 1:3-8: My brethren, count it all joy when ye fall into divers temptations; Knowing this, that the trying of your faith worketh patience. But let patience have her perfect work, that ye may be perfect and entire, wanting nothing. If any of you lack wisdom, let him ask of God, that giveth to all men liberally, and upbraideth not; and it shall be given him. But let him ask in faith, nothing wavering. For he that wavereth is like a wave of the sea driven with the wind and tossed. For let not that man think that he shall receive any thing of the Lord. A double minded man is unstable in all his ways. (This scripture is to acknowledge that there is some truth to the statement that I'm challenging. There is trouble for Christians, but the person needs to ask God what the reason is, not just shrug and have an attitude of, "Oh well, God has His reasons.")

Punishment or the Breaks?

Scenario – A person chooses someone for their mate and it turns out that it appears to be a bad deal. The person was not a Christian when the choice was made and they did not consult God about the choice. Or they were a Christian, but did not consult God about it. They are a Christian now and they therefore decide to stick it out, hoping and expecting God to deliver them in the near future. He does not.

Year after year goes by and He does not get them out of the situation, in fact things get worse. Some Christians interpret this as “God is punishing them for something” such as maybe they disobeyed their parents when they married.

I believe that the choice the person made included the whole package of what they have gone through and are going through because of the person they chose. For instance the spouse may change over time and become hateful or depressed or sickly. The other party is in it with them. They must bear with them, try to help, and pray for the spouse’s deliverance or healing. If things don’t line up for that to happen, and God does not divinely intervene, it is not because He wants to punish them for something they did years ago. It is because He sees that He can use the situation to conform them into the image of His son. That is what our test and trials are all about.

Christianity Vs Humanism

Those who embrace humanism either don’t believe in a supreme being who created all things good or they believe that if there is a supreme being, he, she, or it is not involved in our daily lives. They believe that evolution is merely a process of the earth.

If these things are true then the only thing we can do is eat, drink, and be merry for tomorrow we die. This way of thinking is non-productive. It is as destructive as evolution without a loving God. Observe any building, machine, living thing, etc. – left to itself it deteriorates till it falls apart.

Whereas if there is a loving God watching over all – evolution is meant to help the living things adapt to their surroundings for the purpose of survival. The nature of our loving God is to work with the challenged party until the outcome is victory.

It is the humanistic viewpoint that has caused life on planet earth to get more and more difficult to cope with. It is this viewpoint that is causing the increase in pain and heartache.

If there is no loving God in charge of things, then inevitably selfishness is god.

The Christian viewpoint is that a loving God created the earth and everything in it. And it was good. Man's wrong choice – their choice to do what they wanted to do rather than what God (God is love – love always does the right thing because the right thing produces good.) told them to do, brought about all that is bad.

But a loving God is still offering love. He sent his Son who made all the right choices and then offered Himself in the stead of all those who made wrong choices so that they can make the right choice which is to receive Him and the new life He offers. This ultimate act of love reveals God's nature as nothing else could do.

This loving God is behind true evolution – evolution is only true in the sense of adaptation – the same God who created everything good is the same God who causes things to adapt to their surroundings and be able to survive until the time when God's Son comes back to oversee the choices made throughout the earth and make all things right. God ordained that everything produces after its own kind, so apes do not turn into people, etc.

The humanistic world view encourages selfishness – the loving God world-view encourages people to follow love, and to heed God's guidance, and it also provides for all of mankind's needs to be met.

Is it Faith or Presumption?

Deut: 1:21-26: Behold, the LORD thy God hath set the land before thee: go up and possess it, as the LORD God of thy fathers hath said unto thee; fear not, neither be discouraged. 22: And ye came near unto me every one of you, and said, We will send men before us, and they shall search us out the land, and bring us word again by what way we must go up, and into what cities we shall come. 23: And the saying pleased me well: and I took twelve men of you, one of a tribe: 24: And they turned and went up into the mountain, and came unto the valley of Eshcol, and searched it out. 25: And they took of the fruit of the land in their hands, and brought it down unto us, and brought us word again, and said, It is a good land which the LORD our God doth give us. 26: Notwithstanding ye would not go up, but rebelled against the commandment of the LORD your God:

27-31: And ye murmured in your tents, and said, Because the LORD hated us, he hath brought us forth out of the land of Egypt, to deliver us into the hand of the Amorites, to destroy us. 28: Whither shall we go up? Our brethren have discouraged our heart, saying, The people is greater and taller than we; the cities are great and walled up to heaven; and moreover we have seen the sons of the Anakims there. 29: Then I said unto you, Dread

not, neither be afraid of them. 30: The LORD your God which goeth before you, he shall fight for you, according to all that he did for you in Egypt before your eyes; 31: And in the wilderness, where thou hast seen how that the LORD thy God bare thee, as a man doth bear his son, in all the way that ye went, until ye came into this place.

32-36: Yet in this thing ye did not believe the LORD your God, 33: Who went in the way before you, to search you out a place to pitch your tents in, in fire by night, to shew you by what way ye should go, and in a cloud by day. 34: And the LORD heard the voice of your words, and was wroth, and sware, saying, 35: Surely there shall not one of these men of this evil generation see that good land, which I sware to give unto your fathers, 36: Save Caleb the son of Jephunneh; he shall see it, and to him will I give the land that he hath trodden upon, and to his children, because he hath wholly followed the LORD.

37-39: Also the LORD was angry with me for your sakes, saying, Thou also shalt not go in thither. 38: But Joshua the son of Nun, which standeth before thee, he shall go in thither: encourage him: for he shall cause Israel to inherit it. 39: Moreover your little ones, which ye said should be a prey, and your children, which in that day had no knowledge between good and evil, they shall go in thither, and unto them will I give it, and they shall possess it.

40-41: But as for you, turn you, and take your journey into the wilderness by the way of the Red sea. 41: Then ye answered and said unto me, We have sinned against the LORD, we will go up and fight, according to all that the LORD our God commanded us. And when ye had girded on every man his weapons of war, ye were ready to go up into the hill.

42-43: And the LORD said unto me, Say unto them, Go not up, neither fight; for I am not among you; lest ye be smitten before your enemies. 43: So I spake unto you; and ye would not hear, but rebelled against the commandment of the LORD, and went presumptuously up into the hill.

44-46: And the Amorites, which dwelt in that mountain, came out against you, and chased you, as bees do, and destroyed you in Seir, even unto Hormah. 45: And ye returned and wept before the LORD; but the LORD would not hearken to your voice, nor give ear unto you. 46: So ye abode in Kadesh many days, according unto the days that ye abode there.

There are many who teach about all the things God wants His people to have and has provided for them. Many pastors and leaders assure people that they only have to believe and receive. This article is not to come against believing and receiving, for Jesus definitely taught that we can have what we have faith to receive from God. This article is to show the difference between faith and presumption.

The children of Israel did not believe and obey God and go up and take the land – they grumbled against Him and refused to go. Having provoked God’s anger, He told them that because of their rebellion or unbelief they were not going to have the promise land.

Then they were sorry. They wanted the promise land, they just didn’t want to fight the giants to get it. They didn’t want to do the hard stuff. They didn’t want to stick their necks out with nothing more substantial to go on but God’s word and promise. Then when He said they couldn’t have it, they changed their minds and went to take it. Again they were not in the will of God. He said not to go, yet because He had originally said they were to go, they expected that if they obeyed now, He would let them have what they wanted.

Christians are doing a lot of this today. Here are some examples:

God said not to serve God and mammon, yet many Christians are consumed with earning and spending money with the same vigor as the world. (Matt: 6:24) Then when trouble comes, the leaders assure them that God will take care of them. Some come out of financial difficulty and some don’t. Some were tithing and some weren’t. Leaders think and teach that God is the people’s champion when they are not following His instructions. To depend upon God to take good care of you when you are a disobedient child is presumption and you will not enter the promise land, you will only succeed in dwelling in the land of whatever happens. The damage is the mixed testimonies and results that have caused God’s kingdom to appear to be unstable and incomprehensible.

God said, “You cannot be my disciple unless you forsake all to follow me.” (Lk: 14:33) Yet the congregation is told to witness to others about the good news. Should not we first make sure we have forsaken all before we go out and testify of God’s salvation? Why? Because the result of not living the life and then telling others that God saved your soul, is to confuse the issue and make salvation whatever people want it to be. To think that we are representatives of Jesus without forsaking all is presumption and we will not take the land. Instead we will pollute the waters of life.

God said, “What you sow, you will reap. If you sow to the flesh you will reap corruption. If you sow to the spirit you will reap eternal life.” (Gal: 6:7-8) Many Christians are sowing to the flesh most of the time and to the spirit a little, yet they are told that they are Christ followers – people of God – the body of Christ. This is presumption. God said you will reap what you sow. Those who choose company that is worldly and who watch things on TV, movies, etc that Jesus died to set us free from, and those who listen to worldly music, etc are told that they are the body of Christ – this is blasphemy. The church that does not care about what they are sowing is presuming to be the church of the lord Jesus Christ. The damage again is very muddied waters – unclear vision, unclear direction, unclear convictions, and an unclear gospel that goes forth to destroy the Truth of the word.

I’ve already cried out about the church not having on the full armor of God, yet they are told that they are in a

safe place. What about what the Bible says about healing? Jesus bore our sicknesses and carried our diseases and by His stripes we were healed. (Isa: 53:5 Amp. V.) Today we are taught to believe for healing and if it doesn't happen then it wasn't God's will. The Bible says He healed His people, but we are taught that He didn't want this person and that one to have it. This again happened because of the muddied waters – the presumption. People presume that they are in God's grace when they are not. They have not made Jesus their Lord, but they think that His promises are for them. Yet God said, "If ye are willing and obedient, ye shall eat the good of the land." (Isa: 1:19)

This teaching works in any area. If you are doing what God said to do, you can expect to receive what He said you can have. If you are floating along on a raft named God's grace, all that will happen to you is that your life will be spared as long as you stay on the raft. Floating along will not get you into the promise land.

The Inevitable Result

Jer: 18:1-3: The word which came to Jeremiah from the LORD, saying, 2: Arise, and go down to the potter's house, and there I will cause thee to hear my words. 3: Then I went down to the potter's house, and, behold, he wrought a work on the wheels.

4: And the vessel that he made of clay was marred in the hand of the potter: so he made it again another vessel, as seemed good to the potter to make it.

5-6: Then the word of the LORD came to me, saying, 6: O house of Israel, cannot I do with you as this potter? saith the LORD. Behold, as the clay is in the potter's hand, so are ye in mine hand, O house of Israel.

7: At what instant I shall speak concerning a nation, and concerning a kingdom, to pluck up, and to pull down, and to destroy it; 8: If that nation, against whom I have pronounced, turn from their evil, I will repent of the evil that I thought to do unto them.

9-10 And at what instant I shall speak concerning a nation, and concerning a kingdom, to build and to plant it;

10: If it do evil in my sight, that it obey not my voice, then I will repent of the good, wherewith I said I would benefit them.

11: Now therefore go to, speak to the men of Judah, and to the inhabitants of Jerusalem, saying, Thus saith the LORD; Behold, I frame evil against you, and devise a device against you: return ye now every one from his evil way, and make your ways and your doings good.

12: And they said, There is no hope: but we will walk after our own devices, and we will every one do the imagination of his evil heart.

13-17: Therefore thus saith the LORD; Ask ye now among the heathen, who hath heard such things: the virgin of Israel hath done a very horrible thing. 14: Will a man leave the snow of Lebanon which cometh from the rock of the field? or shall the cold flowing waters that come from another place be forsaken? 15: Because my people hath forgotten me, they have burned incense to vanity, and they have caused them to stumble in their ways from the ancient paths, to walk in paths, in a way not cast up; 16: To make their land desolate, and a perpetual hissing; every one that passeth thereby shall be astonished, and wag his head. 17: I will scatter them as with an east wind before the enemy; I will shew them the back, and not the face, in the day of their calamity.

(God said in these verses that He was making Israel into the vessel of His choice and the vessel was marred because of the stubbornness of their hearts and so He was going to do something else with them.

He said He wanted to bless them, but because of their doings He was going to pronounce their demise instead. Look at verse 7 through 11. This is how it works. This is God's Way in these matters – He pronounces blessing, but despite what some teach, there are always conditions and if the conditions are not met, the blessing cannot flow.

The inevitable result of obeying God is blessing and victory. The inevitable result of habitually disobeying is powerlessness and defeat.

Many people today are questioning the promises of God because they are not getting the results that are written. They wonder why Christians don't have more power with God. That's what I want to address. Remember, the subject is inevitable results of our habitual choices.)

First we will establish some of the wonderful benefits and power that the church was supposed to inherit from Jesus. And show some of the promises and conditions.

Deut: 11:8-9: Therefore shall ye keep all the commandments which I command you this day, that ye may be strong, and go in and possess the land, whither ye go to possess it; 9: And that ye may prolong your days in the land, which the LORD sware unto your fathers to give unto them and to their seed, a land that floweth with milk and honey.

10-12: For the land, whither thou goest in to possess it, is not as the land of Egypt, from whence ye came out, where thou sowedst thy seed, and wateredst it with thy foot, as a garden of herbs: 11: But the land, whither ye go to possess it, is a land of hills and valleys, and drinketh water of the rain of heaven: 12: A land which the LORD thy God careth for: the eyes of the LORD thy God are always upon it, from the beginning of the year even unto the end of the year.

(Apply this spiritually. The body of Christ was meant to enter into a spiritual land of milk and honey.)

13-16: And it shall come to pass, if ye shall hearken diligently unto my commandments which I command you this day, to love the LORD your God, and to serve him with all your heart and with all your soul, (That's how Jesus did it.) 14: That I will give you the rain of your land in his due season, the first rain and the latter rain, that thou mayest gather in thy corn, and thy wine, and thine oil. 15: And I will send grass in thy fields for thy cattle, that thou mayest eat and be full. 16: Take heed to yourselves, that your heart be not deceived, and ye turn aside, and serve other gods, and worship them;

(Spiritually, the rain is the outpouring of the Holy Spirit and the oil is the sweet Spirit of the Lord. Apply eat and be full spiritually and it means the whole word of God. The inevitable result of a church being entangled in the affairs of the world and of enjoying worldly entertainment is that she will be turned aside from the course God had set for her. That course, I intend to prove, was to carry on Jesus' ministry.)

17-20: And then the LORD's wrath be kindled against you, and he shut up the heaven, that there be no rain, and that the land yield not her fruit; and lest ye perish quickly from off the good land which the LORD giveth you. 18: Therefore shall ye lay up these my words in your heart and in your soul, and bind them for a sign upon your hand, that they may be as frontlets between your eyes. 19: And ye shall teach them your children, speaking of them when thou sittest in thine house, and when thou walkest by the way, when thou liest down, and when thou risest up. 20: And thou shalt write them upon the door posts of thine house, and upon thy gates:

(Because of the cares of this world, the deceitfulness of riches and the lust for other things, the church is in this parched state and barren condition. That's how serious the church was supposed to be in this spiritual training.)

21-25: That your days may be multiplied, and the days of your children, in the land which the LORD swore unto your fathers to give them, as the days of heaven upon the earth. (This is how the church would have entered the promised land and this is what she needed to do to remain in the promise land.) 22: For if ye shall diligently keep all these commandments which I command you, to do them, to love the LORD your God, to walk in all his ways, and to cleave unto him; 23: Then will the LORD drive out all these nations from before you, and ye shall possess greater nations and mightier than yourselves. 24: Every place whereon the soles of your feet shall tread shall be yours: from the wilderness and Lebanon, from the river, the river Euphrates, even unto the uttermost sea shall your coast be. 25: There shall no man be able to stand before you: for the LORD your God shall lay the fear of you and the dread of you upon all the land that ye shall tread upon, as he hath said unto you.

(The Promise Land for Christians is the land where all promises are yea and amen. 2Cor: 1:20 Applying this spiritually, it takes diligence in the things of God in order to drive out the enemy and keep him at bay.)

26-28: Behold, I set before you this day a blessing and a curse; 27: A blessing, if ye obey the commandments of the LORD your God, which I command you this day: 28: And a curse, if ye will not obey the commandments of the LORD your God, but turn aside out of the way which I command you this day, to go after other gods, which ye have not known.

(Well, what didn't we do, some may ask. I will provide a small list.)

Ps: 1:1-3: Blessed is the man that walketh not in the counsel of the ungodly, nor standeth in the way of sinners, nor sitteth in the seat of the scornful. 2: But his delight is in the law of the LORD; and in his law doth he meditate day and night. 3: And he shall be like a tree planted by the rivers of water, that bringeth forth his fruit in his season; his leaf also shall not wither; and whatsoever he doeth shall prosper.

Ps: 34:9-15: O fear the LORD, ye his saints: for there is no want to them that fear him. 10: The young lions do lack, and suffer hunger: but they that seek the LORD shall not want any good thing. 11: Come, ye children, hearken unto me: I will teach you the fear of the LORD. 12: What man is he that desireth life, and loveth many days, that he may see good? 13: Keep thy tongue from evil, and thy lips from speaking guile. 14: Depart from evil, and do good; seek peace, and pursue it. 15: The eyes of the LORD are upon the righteous, and his ears are open unto their cry.

Ps: 50:23: Whoso offereth praise glorifieth me: and to him that ordereth his conversation aright will I shew the salvation of God.

Ps: 81:8-11: Hear, O my people, and I will testify unto thee: O Israel, if thou wilt hearken unto me; 9: There

shall no strange god be in thee; neither shalt thou worship any strange god. 10: I am the LORD thy God, which brought thee out of the land of Egypt: open thy mouth wide, and I will fill it. 11: But my people would not hearken to my voice; and Israel would none of me.

12: So I gave them up unto their own hearts' lust: and they walked in their own counsels.

(This is the inevitable result of getting entangled in the affairs of the world, feeding on worldly entertainment, and keeping company with worldly people. Look at what God said He would have done had His people practiced His precepts instead of the world's precepts.)

13-16: Oh that my people had hearkened unto me, and Israel had walked in my ways! 14: I should soon have subdued their enemies, and turned my hand against their adversaries. 15: The haters of the LORD should have submitted themselves unto him: but their time should have endured for ever. 16: He should have fed them also with the finest of the wheat: and with honey out of the rock should I have satisfied thee.

(This Ps. seems unreal to today's church, but it wasn't unreal to Jesus and won't be unreal to the church that gets real with God.)

Ps: 91:1-8: He that dwelleth in the secret place of the most High shall abide under the shadow of the Almighty. 2: I will say of the LORD, He is my refuge and my fortress: my God; in him will I trust. 3: Surely he shall deliver thee from the snare of the fowler, and from the noisome pestilence. 4: He shall cover thee with his feathers, and under his wings shalt thou trust: his truth shall be thy shield and buckler. 5: Thou shalt not be afraid for the terror by night; nor for the arrow that flieth by day; 6: Nor for the pestilence that walketh in darkness; nor for the destruction that wasteth at noonday. 7: A thousand shall fall at thy side, and ten thousand at thy right hand; but it shall not come nigh thee. 8: Only with thine eyes shalt thou behold and see the reward of the wicked.

9-13: Because thou hast made the LORD, which is my refuge, even the most High, thy habitation; 10: There shall no evil befall thee, neither shall any plague come nigh thy dwelling. 11: For he shall give his angels charge over thee, to keep thee in all thy ways. 12: They shall bear thee up in their hands, lest thou dash thy foot against a stone. 13: Thou shalt tread upon the lion and adder: the young lion and the dragon shalt thou trample under feet.

14-16: Because he hath set his love upon me, therefore will I deliver him: I will set him on high, because he hath known my name. 15: He shall call upon me, and I will answer him: I will be with him in trouble; I will deliver him, and honour him. 16: With long life will I satisfy him, and shew him my salvation.

Prov: 1:20-23: Wisdom crieth without; she uttereth her voice in the streets: 21: She crieth in the chief place of concourse, in the openings of the gates: in the city she uttereth her words, saying, 22: How long, ye simple ones, will ye love simplicity? and the scorers delight in their scorning, and fools hate knowledge? 23: Turn you at my reproof: behold, I will pour out my spirit unto you, I will make known my words unto you.

24-27: Because I have called, and ye refused; I have stretched out my hand, and no man regarded; 25: But ye have set at nought all my counsel, and would none of my reproof: 26: I also will laugh at your calamity; I will mock when your fear cometh; 27: When your fear cometh as desolation, and your destruction cometh as a whirlwind; when distress and anguish cometh upon you.

28-33: Then shall they call upon me, but I will not answer; they shall seek me early, but they shall not find me: 29: For that they hated knowledge, and did not choose the fear of the LORD: 30: They would none of my counsel: they despised all my reproof. 31: Therefore shall they eat of the fruit of their own way, and be filled with their own devices. 32: For the turning away of the simple shall slay them, and the prosperity of fools shall destroy them. 33: But whoso hearkeneth unto me shall dwell safely, and shall be quiet from fear of evil.

Prov: 4:20-27: My son, attend to my words; incline thine ear unto my sayings.

21: Let them not depart from thine eyes; keep them in the midst of thine heart.

22: For they are life unto those that find them, and health to all their flesh.

23: Keep thy heart with all diligence; for out of it are the issues of life.

24: Put away from thee a froward mouth, and perverse lips put far from thee.

25: Let thine eyes look right on, and let thine eyelids look straight before thee.

26: Ponder the path of thy feet, and let all thy ways be established.

27: Turn not to the right hand nor to the left: remove thy foot from evil.

(This Spirit is supposed to be on the church and she is supposed to be doing these things.)

Isa: 61:1-6: The Spirit of the Lord GOD is upon me; because the LORD hath anointed me to preach good tidings unto the meek; he hath sent me to bind up the brokenhearted, to proclaim liberty to the captives, and the opening of the prison to them that are bound; 2: To proclaim the acceptable year of the LORD, and the day of vengeance of our God; to comfort all that mourn; 3: To appoint unto them that mourn in Zion, to give unto them beauty for ashes, the oil of joy for mourning, the garment of praise for the spirit of heaviness; that they might be called trees of righteousness, the planting of the LORD, that he might be glorified. 4: And they shall build the old wastes, they shall raise up the former desolations, and they shall repair the waste cities, the desolations of many generations. 5: And strangers shall stand and feed your flocks, and the sons of the alien shall be your plowmen and your vinedressers. 6: But ye shall be named the Priests of the LORD: men shall call you the Ministers of our God: ye shall eat the riches of the Gentiles, and in their glory shall ye boast yourselves.

(This will happen after the church calls the solemn assembly spoken of in the first part of Joel 2. It's a very serious fast where everyone drops what they are involved with no matter how important it is to them and they all assemble at church to cry out to God for revival. They tarry there until they have God's assurance that it is on the way or until it comes down upon them.)

Joel: 2:28-32: And it shall come to pass afterward, that I will pour out my spirit upon all flesh; and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, your old men shall dream dreams, your young men shall see visions: 29: And also upon the servants and upon the handmaids in those days will I pour out my spirit. 30: And I will shew wonders in the heavens and in the earth, blood, and fire, and pillars of smoke. 31: The sun shall be turned into darkness, and the moon into blood, before the great and the terrible day of the LORD come. 32: And it shall come to pass, that whosoever shall call on the name of the LORD shall be delivered: for in mount Zion and in Jerusalem shall be deliverance, as the LORD hath said, and in the remnant whom the LORD shall call. And that we have walked mournfully before the LORD of hosts?

Matt: 18:19-20: Again I say unto you, That if two of you shall agree on earth as touching any thing that they shall ask, it shall be done for them of my Father which is in heaven. 20: For where two or three are gathered together in my name, there am I in the midst of them.

Matt: 24:49: And, behold, I send the promise of my Father upon you: but tarry ye in the city of Jerusalem, until ye be endued with power from on high.

Matt: 28:18-20: And Jesus came and spake unto them, saying, All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth. 19: Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost: 20: Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and, lo, I am with you alway, even unto the end of the world. Amen.

Mk: 11:22-26: And Jesus answering saith unto them, Have faith in God. 23: For verily I say unto you, That whosoever shall say unto this mountain, Be thou removed, and be thou cast into the sea; and shall not doubt in his heart, but shall believe that those things which he saith shall come to pass; he shall have whatsoever he saith. 24: Therefore I say unto you, What things soever ye desire, when ye pray, believe that ye receive them, and ye shall have them. 25: And when ye stand praying, forgive, if ye have ought against any: that your Father also which is in heaven may forgive you your trespasses. 26: But if ye do not forgive, neither will your Father which is in heaven forgive your trespasses.

Mk: 16:16-20: He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved; but he that believeth not shall be damned. 17: And these signs shall follow them that believe; In my name shall they cast out devils; they shall speak with new tongues; 18: They shall take up serpents; and if they drink any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them; they shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover. 19: So then after the Lord had spoken unto them, he was received up into heaven, and sat on the right hand of God. 20: And they went forth, and preached every where, the Lord working with them, and confirming the word with signs following. Amen.

Lk: 10:17-20: And the seventy returned again with joy, saying, Lord, even the devils are subject unto us through thy name. 18: And he said unto them, I beheld Satan as lightning fall from heaven. 19: Behold, I give unto you power to tread on serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy: and nothing shall by any means hurt you. 20: Notwithstanding in this rejoice not, that the spirits are subject unto you; but rather rejoice, because your names are written in heaven.

Lk: 11:9-13: And I say unto you, Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you. 10: For every one that asketh receiveth; and he that seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened. 11: If a son shall ask bread of any of you that is a father, will he give him a stone? or if he ask a fish, will he for a fish give him a serpent? 12: Or if he shall ask an egg, will he offer him a scorpion? 13: If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children: how much more shall your heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to them that ask him?

Lk: 17:6: And the Lord said, If ye had faith as a grain of mustard seed, ye might say unto this sycamine tree, Be thou plucked up by the root, and be thou planted in the sea; and it should obey you.

Lk: 18:7: And shall not God avenge his own elect, which cry day and night unto him, though he bear long with them? 8: I tell you that he will avenge them speedily. Nevertheless when the Son of man cometh, shall he find faith on the earth?

Jn: 1:12: But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that

believe on his name:

Jn: 14:12-18: Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me, the works that I do shall he do also; and greater works than these shall he do; because I go unto my Father. 13: And whatsoever ye shall ask in my name, that will I do, that the Father may be glorified in the Son. 14: If ye shall ask any thing in my name, I will do it. 15: If ye love me, keep my commandments. 16: And I will pray the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for ever; 17: Even the Spirit of truth; whom the world cannot receive, because it seeth him not, neither knoweth him: but ye know him; for he dwelleth with you, and shall be in you. 18: I will not leave you comfortless: I will come to you.

Jn: 1:15-16: If ye abide in me, and my words abide in you, ye shall ask what ye will, and it shall be done unto you. 16: Ye have not chosen me, but I have chosen you, and ordained you, that ye should go and bring forth fruit, and that your fruit should remain: that whatsoever ye shall ask of the Father in my name, he may give it you.

2Cor: 1:20: For all the promises of God in him are yea, and in him Amen, unto the glory of God by us.

Gal: 3:14: That the blessing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles through Jesus Christ; that we might receive the promise of the Spirit through faith.

Eph: 1:19-23: And what is the exceeding greatness of his power to us-ward who believe, according to the working of his mighty power, 20: Which he wrought in Christ, when he raised him from the dead, and set him at his own right hand in the heavenly places, 21: Far above all principality, and power, and might, and dominion, and every name that is named, not only in this world, but also in that which is to come: 22: And hath put all things under his feet, and gave him to be the head over all things to the church, 23: Which is his body, the fulness of him that filleth all in all.

Eph: 3:16-21: That he would grant you, according to the riches of his glory, to be strengthened with might by his Spirit in the inner man; 17: That Christ may dwell in your hearts by faith; that ye, being rooted and grounded in love, 18: May be able to comprehend with all saints what is the breadth, and length, and depth, and height; 19: And to know the love of Christ, which passeth knowledge, that ye might be filled with all the fulness of God. 20: Now unto him that is able to do exceeding abundantly above all that we ask or think, according to the power that worketh in us, 21: Unto him be glory in the church by Christ Jesus throughout all ages, world without end. Amen.

1Pet: 2: 9: But ye are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, a peculiar people; that ye should

shew forth the praises of him who hath called you out of darkness into his marvellous light:

2Pet: 1: 3: According as his divine power hath given unto us all things that pertain unto life and godliness, through the knowledge of him that hath called us to glory and virtue: 4: Whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious promises: that by these ye might be partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust.

1Jn: 5:11-15: And this is the record, that God hath given to us eternal life, and this life is in his Son. 12: He that hath the Son hath life; and he that hath not the Son of God hath not life. 13: These things have I written unto you that believe on the name of the Son of God; that ye may know that ye have eternal life, and that ye may believe on the name of the Son of God. 14: And this is the confidence that we have in him, that, if we ask any thing according to his will, he heareth us: 15: And if we know that he hear us, whatsoever we ask, we know that we have the petitions that we desired of him.

Rom: 8:32: He that spared not his own Son, but delivered him up for us all, how shall he not with him also freely give us all things?

2Cor: 6:17: Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you, 18: And will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be my sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty.

Gal: 2:20-21: I am crucified with Christ: nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me: and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himself for me. 21: I do not frustrate the grace of God: for if righteousness come by the law, then Christ is dead in vain.

Gal: 3:27: For as many of you as have been baptized into Christ have put on Christ.

Gal: 5:24-25: And they that are Christ's have crucified the flesh with the affections and lusts. 25: If we live in the Spirit, let us also walk in the Spirit.

Eph: 1:3: Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who hath blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places in Christ:

Eph: 1:19-23: And what is the exceeding greatness of his power to us-ward who believe, according to the working of his mighty power, 20: Which he wrought in Christ, when he raised him from the dead, and set him at

his own right hand in the heavenly places, 21: Far above all principality, and power, and might, and dominion, and every name that is named, not only in this world, but also in that which is to come: 22: And hath put all things under his feet, and gave him to be the head over all things to the church, 23: Which is his body, the fulness of him that filleth all in all.

Eph: 2: 5: Even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved;) 6: And hath raised us up together, and made us sit together in heavenly places in Christ Jesus:

Eph: 3:16-21: That he would grant you, according to the riches of his glory, to be strengthened with might by his Spirit in the inner man; 17: That Christ may dwell in your hearts by faith; that ye, being rooted and grounded in love, 18: May be able to comprehend with all saints what is the breadth, and length, and depth, and height; 19: And to know the love of Christ, which passeth knowledge, that ye might be filled with all the fulness of God. 20: Now unto him that is able to do exceeding abundantly above all that we ask or think, according to the power that worketh in us, 21: Unto him be glory in the church by Christ Jesus throughout all ages, world without end. Amen.

Eph: 4:11-13: And he gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers; 12: For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ: 13: Till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ:

14-16: That we henceforth be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men, and cunning craftiness, whereby they lie in wait to deceive; 15: But speaking the truth in love, may grow up into him in all things, which is the head, even Christ:16: From whom the whole body fitly joined together and compacted by that which every joint supplieth, according to the effectual working in the measure of every part, maketh increase of the body unto the edifying of itself in love.

Col: 2:8-10: Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the rudiments of the world, and not after Christ. 9: For in him dwelleth all the fulness of the Godhead bodily. 10: And ye are complete in him, which is the head of all principality and power:

11-13: In whom also ye are circumcised with the circumcision made without hands, in putting off the body of the sins of the flesh by the circumcision of Christ: 12: Buried with him in baptism, wherein also ye are risen with him through the faith of the operation of God, who hath raised him from the dead. 13: And you, being dead in your sins and the uncircumcision of your flesh, hath he quickened together with him, having forgiven you all trespasses;

Rev: 1:6: And hath made us kings and priests unto God and his Father; to him be glory and dominion for ever and ever. Amen.

Christianity – The Way It Really Is

Pay attention to these teaching from the Bible. This is how it really is.

Rom: 6:3-10: Know ye not, that so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized into his death? 4: Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death: that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life. 5: For if we have been planted together in the likeness of his death, we shall be also in the likeness of his resurrection: 6: Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with him, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin. 7: For he that is dead is freed from sin. 8: Now if we be dead with Christ, we believe that we shall also live with him: 9: Knowing that Christ being raised from the dead dieth no more; death hath no more dominion over him. 10: For in that he died, he died unto sin once: but in that he liveth, he liveth unto God.

11-14: Likewise reckon ye also yourselves to be dead indeed unto sin, but alive unto God through Jesus Christ our Lord. 12: Let not sin therefore reign in your mortal body, that ye should obey it in the lusts thereof. 13: Neither yield ye your members as instruments of unrighteousness unto sin: but yield yourselves unto God, as those that are alive from the dead, and your members as instruments of righteousness unto God. 14: For sin shall not have dominion over you: for ye are not under the law, but under grace.

Rom: 8:1-18: There is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit. 2: For the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus hath made me free from the law of sin and death. 3: For what the law could not do, in that it was weak through the flesh, God sending his own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, and for sin, condemned sin in the flesh: 4: That the righteousness of the law might be fulfilled in us, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit. 5: For they that are after the flesh do mind the things of the flesh; but they that are after the Spirit the things of the Spirit. 6: For to be carnally minded is death; but to be spiritually minded is life and peace. 7: Because the carnal mind is enmity against God: for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be. 8: So then they that are in the flesh cannot please God. 9: But ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the

Spirit of Christ, he is none of his. 10: And if Christ be in you, the body is dead because of sin; but the Spirit is life because of righteousness. 11: But if the Spirit of him that raised up Jesus from the dead dwell in you, he that raised up Christ from the dead shall also quicken your mortal bodies by his Spirit that dwelleth in you. 12: Therefore, brethren, we are debtors, not to the flesh, to live after the flesh. 13: For if ye live after the flesh, ye shall die: but if ye through the Spirit do mortify the deeds of the body, ye shall live. 14: For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God. 15: For ye have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear; but ye have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba, Father. 16: The Spirit itself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God: 17: And if children, then heirs; heirs of God, and joint-heirs with Christ; if so be that we suffer with him, that we may be also glorified together. 18: For I reckon that the sufferings of this present time are not worthy to be compared with the glory which shall be revealed in us.

Gal: 5:18-26: But if ye be led of the Spirit, ye are not under the law. 19: Now the works of the flesh are manifest, which are these; Adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness, 20: Idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies, 21: Envyings, murders, drunkenness, revellings, and such like: of the which I tell you before, as I have also told you in time past, that they which do such things shall not inherit the kingdom of God. 22: But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, 23: Meekness, temperance: against such there is no law. 24: And they that are Christ's have crucified the flesh with the affections and lusts. 25: If we live in the Spirit, let us also walk in the Spirit. 26: Let us not be desirous of vain glory, provoking one another, envying one another.

Gal: 6:7-9: Be not deceived; God is not mocked: for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap. 8: For he that soweth to his flesh shall of the flesh reap corruption; but he that soweth to the Spirit shall of the Spirit reap life everlasting. 9: And let us not be weary in well doing: for in due season we shall reap, if we faint not.

Eph: 5:1-11: Be ye therefore followers of God, as dear children; 2: And walk in love, as Christ also hath loved us, and hath given himself for us an offering and a sacrifice to God for a sweetsmelling savour. 3: But fornication, and all uncleanness, or covetousness, let it not be once named among you, as becometh saints; 4: Neither filthiness, nor foolish talking, nor jesting, which are not convenient: but rather giving of thanks. 5: For this ye know, that no whoremonger, nor unclean person, nor covetous man, who is an idolater, hath any inheritance in the kingdom of Christ and of God. 6: Let no man deceive you with vain words: for because of these things cometh the wrath of God upon the children of disobedience. 7: Be not ye therefore partakers with them. 8: For ye were sometimes darkness, but now are ye light in the Lord: walk as children of light: 9: (For the fruit of the Spirit is in all goodness and righteousness and truth;) 10: Proving what is acceptable unto the Lord. 11: And have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness, but rather reprove them.

2Tim: 2:11-12: It is a faithful saying: For if we be dead with him, we shall also live with him: 12: If we suffer, we shall also reign with him: if we deny him, he also will deny us:

2Tim: 2:19: Nevertheless the foundation of God standeth sure, having this seal, The Lord knoweth them that are his. And, Let every one that nameth the name of Christ depart from iniquity.

2Tim: 3:1-5: This know also, that in the last days perilous times shall come. 2: For men shall be lovers of their own selves, covetous, boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy, 3: Without natural affection, trucebreakers, false accusers, incontinent, fierce, despisers of those that are good, 4: Traitors, heady, highminded, lovers of pleasures more than lovers of God; 5: Having a form of godliness, but denying the power thereof: from such turn away.

Titus: 15-16: Unto the pure all things are pure: but unto them that are defiled and unbelieving is nothing pure; but even their mind and conscience is defiled. 16: They profess that they know God; but in works they deny him, being abominable, and disobedient, and unto every good work reprobate.

Heb: 10:21-31: And having an high priest over the house of God; 22: Let us draw near with a true heart in full assurance of faith, having our hearts sprinkled from an evil conscience, and our bodies washed with pure water. 23: Let us hold fast the profession of our faith without wavering; (for he is faithful that promised;) 24: And let us consider one another to provoke unto love and to good works: 25: Not forsaking the assembling of ourselves together, as the manner of some is; but exhorting one another: and so much the more, as ye see the day approaching. 26: For if we sin wilfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remaineth no more sacrifice for sins, 27: But a certain fearful looking for of judgment and fiery indignation, which shall devour the adversaries. 28: He that despised Moses' law died without mercy under two or three witnesses: 29: Of how much sorer punishment, suppose ye, shall he be thought worthy, who hath trodden under foot the Son of God, and hath counted the blood of the covenant, wherewith he was sanctified, an unholy thing, and hath done despite unto the Spirit of grace? 30: For we know him that hath said, Vengeance belongeth unto me, I will recompense, saith the Lord. And again, The Lord shall judge his people. 31: It is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the living God.

Heb: 10:38-39: Now the just shall live by faith: but if any man draw back, my soul shall have no pleasure in him. 39: But we are not of them who draw back unto perdition; but of them that believe to the saving of the soul.

Heb: 12:5-17: And ye have forgotten the exhortation which speaketh unto you as unto children, My son, despise not thou the chastening of the Lord, nor faint when thou art rebuked of him: 6: For whom the Lord loveth he chasteneth, and scourgeth every son whom he receiveth. 7: If ye endure chastening, God dealeth with you as with sons; for what son is he whom the father chasteneth not? 8: But if ye be without chastisement, whereof all are partakers, then are ye bastards, and not sons. 9: Furthermore we have had fathers of our flesh which corrected us, and we gave them reverence: shall we not much rather be in subjection unto the Father of spirits, and live? 10: For they verily for a few days chastened us after their own pleasure; but he for our profit, that we might be partakers of his holiness. 11: Now no chastening for the present seemeth to be joyous, but grievous: nevertheless

afterward it yieldeth the peaceable fruit of righteousness unto them which are exercised thereby. 12: Wherefore lift up the hands which hang down, and the feeble knees; 13: And make straight paths for your feet, lest that which is lame be turned out of the way; but let it rather be healed. 14: Follow peace with all men, and holiness, without which no man shall see the Lord: 15: Looking diligently lest any man fail of the grace of God; lest any root of bitterness springing up trouble you, and thereby many be defiled; 16: Lest there be any fornicator, or profane person, as Esau, who for one morsel of meat sold his birthright. 17: For ye know how that afterward, when he would have inherited the blessing, he was rejected: for he found no place of repentance, though he sought it carefully with tears.

Jas: 1:12-17: Blessed is the man that endureth temptation: for when he is tried, he shall receive the crown of life, which the Lord hath promised to them that love him. 13: Let no man say when he is tempted, I am tempted of God: for God cannot be tempted with evil, neither tempteth he any man: 14: But every man is tempted, when he is drawn away of his own lust, and enticed. 15: Then when lust hath conceived, it bringeth forth sin: and sin, when it is finished, bringeth forth death. 16: Do not err, my beloved brethren. 17: Every good gift and every perfect gift is from above, and cometh down from the Father of lights, with whom is no variableness, neither shadow of turning.

Jas: 1:21-27: Wherefore lay apart all filthiness and superfluity of naughtiness, and receive with meekness the engrafted word, which is able to save your souls. 22: But be ye doers of the word, and not hearers only, deceiving your own selves. 23: For if any be a hearer of the word, and not a doer, he is like unto a man beholding his natural face in a glass: 24: For he beholdeth himself, and goeth his way, and straightway forgetteth what manner of man he was. 25: But whoso looketh into the perfect law of liberty, and continueth therein, he being not a forgetful hearer, but a doer of the work, this man shall be blessed in his deed. 26: If any man among you seem to be religious, and bridleth not his tongue, but deceiveth his own heart, this man's religion is vain. 27: Pure religion and undefiled before God and the Father is this, To visit the fatherless and widows in their affliction, and to keep himself unspotted from the world.

1Pet: 3:12: For the eyes of the Lord are over the righteous, and his ears are open unto their prayers: but the face of the Lord is against them that do evil.

1Jn: 5:4: For whatsoever is born of God overcometh the world: and this is the victory that overcometh the world, even our faith.

Rev: 3:15-22: I know thy works, that thou art neither cold nor hot: I would thou wert cold or hot. 16: So then because thou art lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will spue thee out of my mouth. 17: Because thou sayest, I am rich, and increased with goods, and have need of nothing; and knowest not that thou art wretched, and miserable, and poor, and blind, and naked: 18: I counsel thee to buy of me gold tried in the fire, that thou mayest be rich; and white raiment, that thou mayest be clothed, and that the shame of thy nakedness do not appear; and

anoint thine eyes with eyesalve, that thou mayest see. 19: As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten: be zealous therefore, and repent. 20: Behold, I stand at the door, and knock: if any man hear my voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with me. 21: To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with me in my throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with my Father in his throne. 22: He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches.

Have we omitted grace? No.

Have we omitted righteousness? No

Have we omitted the role that Jesus Christ plays in our salvation or life? No

Have we omitted the works that God desires? No

Christians Believe Different

There are very diverse opinions about Christianity and what a Christian must or must not do these days. Because of this some, maybe many, Christians think all that matters is that they all agree that Jesus came and died for our sins.

I don't think that's true because it is written:

Eph: 4:1-24: I therefore, the prisoner of the Lord, beseech you that ye walk worthy of the vocation wherewith ye are called, 2: With all lowliness and meekness, with longsuffering, forbearing one another in love; 3: Endeavouring to keep the unity of the Spirit in the bond of peace. 4: There is one body, and one Spirit, even as ye are called in one hope of your calling; 5: One Lord, one faith, one baptism, 6: One God and Father of all, who is above all, and through all, and in you all. 7: But unto every one of us is given grace according to the measure of the gift of Christ. 8: Wherefore he saith, When he ascended up on high, he led captivity captive, and gave gifts unto men. 9: (Now that he ascended, what is it but that he also descended first into the lower parts of the earth? 10: He that descended is the same also that ascended up far above all heavens, that he might fill all things.) 11:

And he gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers; 12: For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ: 13: Till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ: 14: That we henceforth be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men, and cunning craftiness, whereby they lie in wait to deceive; 15: But speaking the truth in love, may grow up into him in all things, which is the head, even Christ: 16: From whom the whole body fitly joined together and compacted by that which every joint supplieth, according to the effectual working in the measure of every part, maketh increase of the body unto the edifying of itself in love. 17: This I say therefore, and testify in the Lord, that ye henceforth walk not as other Gentiles walk, in the vanity of their mind, 18: Having the understanding darkened, being alienated from the life of God through the ignorance that is in them, because of the blindness of their heart: 19: Who being past feeling have given themselves over unto lasciviousness, to work all uncleanness with greediness. 20: But ye have not so learned Christ; 21: If so be that ye have heard him, and have been taught by him, as the truth is in Jesus: 22: That ye put off concerning the former conversation the old man, which is corrupt according to the deceitful lusts; 23: And be renewed in the spirit of your mind; 24: And that ye put on the new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness.

The Bible says we are to be in agreement on all issues:

Rom: 15:6: That ye may with one mind and one mouth glorify God, even the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ.

2Cor: 6:16: And what agreement hath the temple of God with idols? For ye are the temple of the living God; as God hath said, I will dwell in them, and walk in them; and I will be their God, and they shall be my people.

2Cor: 13:11: Finally, brethren, farewell. Be perfect, be of good comfort, be of one mind, live in peace; and the God of love and peace shall be with you.

Eph: 4:3: Endeavouring to keep the unity of the Spirit in the bond of peace.

Eph: 4:13: Till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ:

Phil: 1:27: Only let your conversation be as it becometh the gospel of Christ: that whether I come and see you, or else be absent, I may hear of your affairs, that ye stand fast in one spirit, with one mind striving together for the faith of the gospel;

Phil: 2:2: Fulfil ye my joy, that ye be likeminded, having the same love, being of one accord, of one mind.

1Jn: 4:6: We are of God: he that knoweth God heareth us; he that is not of God heareth not us. Hereby know we the spirit of truth, and the spirit of error.

1Pt: 3:8: Finally, be ye all of one mind, having compassion one of another, love as brethren, be pitiful, be courteous:

God established the church not as an evangelistic center, but as the place where Christians gather together to build one another up. This is an important point in urging the church to be in unity because compromised doctrines came in with the idea of making the church the evangelistic center. It was the idea that we must not emphasize certain portions of scripture lest we run off the people we want to draw near.

The proper procedure for inviting the world to come to church is:

Ex: 12:48-49: And when a stranger shall sojourn with thee, and will keep the passover to the LORD, let all his males be circumcised, and then let him come near and keep it; and he shall be as one that is born in the land: for no uncircumcised person shall eat thereof. 49: One law shall be to him that is homeborn, and unto the stranger that sojourneth among you.

Why? Because Christians are to come out of the world. The church was mainly to be a training camp for Christians – the above scriptures show that:

2Cor: 6:17-18: Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you, 18: And will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be my sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty.

Jas: 4:4: Ye adulterers and adulteresses, know ye not that the friendship of the world is enmity with God? Whosoever therefore will be a friend of the world is the enemy of God.

1Jn: 2:15-17: Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world. If any man love the world, the love of the Father is not in him. 16: For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, and the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world. 17: And the world passeth away, and the lust thereof: but he that doeth the will of God abideth for ever.

Ps: 1:5: Therefore the ungodly shall not stand in the judgment, nor sinners in the congregation of the righteous.

The inevitable result of mixing the multitude is:

Josh: 23:13: Know for a certainty that the LORD your God will no more drive out any of these nations from before you; but they shall be snares and traps unto you, and scourges in your sides, and thorns in your eyes, until ye perish from off this good land which the LORD your God hath given you.

What the function of the church was:

Mt: 16:18: And I say also unto thee, That thou art Peter, and upon this rock I will build my church; and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it.

Mt: 18:17: And if he shall neglect to hear them, tell it unto the church: but if he neglect to hear the church, let him be unto thee as an heathen man and a publican.

Rom: 14:19: Let us therefore follow after the things which make for peace, and things wherewith one may edify another.

1Cor: 10:23: All things are lawful for me, but all things are not expedient: all things are lawful for me, but all things edify not.

1Thes: 5:11: Wherefore comfort yourselves together, and edify one another, even as also ye do.

1Cor: 3:9-11: For we are labourers together with God: ye are God's husbandry, ye are God's building. 10: According to the grace of God which is given unto me, as a wise masterbuilder, I have laid the foundation, and another buildeth thereon. But let every man take heed how he buildeth thereupon. 11: For other foundation can no man lay than that is laid, which is Jesus Christ.

Eph: 1:4: According as he hath chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love:

Eph: 2:20: And are built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ himself being the chief corner stone;

1Tm: 6:19: Laying up in store for themselves a good foundation against the time to come, that they may lay hold on eternal life.

2Tm: 2:19: Nevertheless the foundation of God standeth sure, having this seal, The Lord knoweth them that are his. And, Let every one that nameth the name of Christ depart from iniquity.

Heb: 6:1: Therefore leaving the principles of the doctrine of Christ, let us go on unto perfection; not laying again the foundation of repentance from dead works, and of faith toward God,

1Pt: 2:5: Ye also, as lively stones, are built up a spiritual house, an holy priesthood, to offer up spiritual sacrifices, acceptable to God by Jesus Christ.

Eph: 5:1-18: Be ye therefore followers of God, as dear children; 2: And walk in love, as Christ also hath loved us, and hath given himself for us an offering and a sacrifice to God for a sweetsmelling savour. 3: But fornication, and all uncleanness, or covetousness, let it not be once named among you, as becometh saints; 4: Neither filthiness, nor foolish talking, nor jesting, which are not convenient: but rather giving of thanks. 5: For this ye know, that no whoremonger, nor unclean person, nor covetous man, who is an idolater, hath any inheritance in the kingdom of Christ and of God. 6: Let no man deceive you with vain words: for because of these things cometh the wrath of God upon the children of disobedience. 7: Be not ye therefore partakers with them. 8: For ye were sometimes darkness, but now are ye light in the Lord: walk as children of light: 9: (For the fruit of the Spirit is in all goodness and righteousness and truth;) 10: Proving what is acceptable unto the Lord. 11: And have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness, but rather reprove them. 12: For it is a shame even to speak of those things which are done of them in secret. 13: But all things that are reprovèd are made manifest by the light: for whatsoever doth make manifest is light. 14: Wherefore he saith, Awake thou that sleepest, and arise from the dead, and Christ shall give thee light. 15: See then that ye walk circumspectly, not as fools, but as wise, 16: Redeeming the time, because the days are evil. 17: Wherefore be ye not unwise, but understanding what the will of the Lord is. 18: And be not drunk with wine, wherein is excess; but be filled with the Spirit; Speaking to yourselves in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, singing and making melody in your heart to the Lord;

Col: 3:16: Let the word of Christ dwell in you richly in all wisdom; teaching and admonishing one another in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, singing with grace in your hearts to the Lord.

Heb: 10:23-25: Let us hold fast the profession of our faith without wavering; (for he is faithful that promised;) 24: And let us consider one another to provoke unto love and to good works: 25: Not forsaking the assembling of ourselves together, as the manner of some is; but exhorting one another: and so much the more, as ye see the day approaching.

As to how believers could be more like-minded – that comes with a clear call to salvation, a studying of the word together with Spirit-filled, Spirit led teachers. The local congregation should to be deliberately assembling for this very purpose of growing together into the church that Jesus is coming for.

The call to salvation should include:

- A call to repentance. Repentance in the Amplified Bible is described this way: Matt: 3:2: Repent (think differently; change your mind, regretting your sins and changing your conduct), for the kingdom of heaven is at hand. Vs 11: I indeed baptize you in (with) water because of repentance [that is, because of your changing your minds for the better, heartily amending your ways, with abhorrence of your past sins].
- Matt: 28:18-20: And Jesus came and spake unto them, saying, All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth. 19: Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost: 20: Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and, lo, I am with you always, even unto the end of the world.

● **It must be made clear that: the receiver is entering into Jesus' crucifixion and resurrection.** Rom: 6:3-11: Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with him, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin. 7: For he that is dead is freed from sin. 8: Now if we be dead with Christ, we believe that we shall also live with him: 9: Knowing that Christ being raised from the dead dieth no more; death hath no more dominion over him. 10: For in that he died, he died unto sin once: but in that he liveth, he liveth unto God. 11: Likewise reckon ye also yourselves to be dead indeed unto sin, but alive unto God through Jesus Christ our Lord.

- Rom: 8:1-17: There is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit. 2: For the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus hath made me free from the law of sin and death. 3: For what the law could not do, in that it was weak through the flesh, God sending his own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, and for sin, condemned sin in the flesh: 4: That the righteousness of the law might be fulfilled in us, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit. 5: For they that are after the flesh do mind the things of the flesh; but they that are after the Spirit the things of the Spirit. 6: For to be carnally minded is death; but to be spiritually minded is life and peace. 7:

Because the carnal mind is enmity against God: for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be. 8: So then they that are in the flesh cannot please God. 9: But ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his. 10: And if Christ be in you, the body is dead because of sin; but the Spirit is life because of righteousness. 11: But if the Spirit of him that raised up Jesus from the dead dwell in you, he that raised up Christ from the dead shall also quicken your mortal bodies by his Spirit that dwelleth in you. 12: Therefore, brethren, we are debtors, not to the flesh, to live after the flesh. 13: For if ye live after the flesh, ye shall die: but if ye through the Spirit do mortify the deeds of the body, ye shall live. 14: For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God. 15: For ye have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear; but ye have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba, Father. 16: The Spirit itself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God: 17: And if children, then heirs; heirs of God, and joint-heirs with Christ; if so be that we suffer with him, that we may be also glorified together.

In order to be in one accord, believers should all agree that they must put God first:

Ps. 119:63: I am a companion of all them that fear thee, and of them that keep thy precepts.

Mt: 6:24: No man can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon.

1Jn: 5:18-21: We know that whosoever is born of God sinneth not; but he that is begotten of God keepeth himself, and that wicked one toucheth him not. 19: And we know that we are of God, and the whole world lieth in wickedness. 20: And we know that the Son of God is come, and hath given us an understanding, that we may know him that is true, and we are in him that is true, even in his Son Jesus Christ. This is the true God, and eternal life. 21: Little children, keep yourselves from idols. Amen.

To be able to fellowship together, believers should all agree that they are to do the will of God:

Mt: 7:21: Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven. [Jesus makes a distinction as to who is thinking Christian.]

Mt: 18:19: Again I say unto you, That if two of you shall agree on earth as touching any thing that they shall ask, it shall be done for them of my Father which is in heaven. [Its obviously important to be in agreement when we pray together.]

Eph: 5:1-18: Be ye therefore followers of God, as dear children; 2: And walk in love, as Christ also hath loved us, and hath given himself for us an offering and a sacrifice to God for a sweetsmelling savour. 3: But fornication, and all uncleanness, or covetousness, let it not be once named among you, as becometh saints; 4: Neither filthiness, nor foolish talking, nor jesting, which are not convenient: but rather giving of thanks. 5: For this ye know, that no whoremonger, nor unclean person, nor covetous man, who is an idolater, hath any inheritance in the kingdom of Christ and of God. 6: Let no man deceive you with vain words: for because of these things cometh the wrath of God upon the children of disobedience. 7: Be not ye therefore partakers with them. 8: For ye were sometimes darkness, but now are ye light in the Lord: walk as children of light: 9: (For the fruit of the Spirit is in all goodness and righteousness and truth;) 10: Proving what is acceptable unto the Lord. 11: And have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness, but rather reprove them. 12: For it is a shame even to speak of those things which are done of them in secret. 13: But all things that are reprov'd are made manifest by the light: for whatsoever doth make manifest is light. 14: Wherefore he saith, Awake thou that sleepest, and arise from the dead, and Christ shall give thee light. 15: See then that ye walk circumspectly, not as fools, but as wise, 16: Redeeming the time, because the days are evil. 17: Wherefore be ye not unwise, but understanding what the will of the Lord is. 18: And be not drunk with wine, wherein is excess; but be filled with the Spirit;

Acts: 2:42: And they continued stedfastly in the apostles' doctrine and fellowship, and in breaking of bread, and in prayers.

2Tim: 2:22 Amp. V. Shun youthful lusts and flee from them, and aim at and pursue righteousness (all that is virtuous and good, right living, conformity to the will of God in thought, word, and deed); [and aim at and pursue] faith, love, [and] peace (harmony and concord with others) in fellowship with all [Christians], **who call upon the Lord out of a pure heart.** [Again there is a distinction as who to fellowship with.]

1Jn: 1:3: That which we have seen and heard declare we unto you, that ye also may have fellowship with us: and truly our fellowship is with the Father, and with his Son Jesus Christ.

1Jn: 1:6-7: If we say that we have fellowship with him, and walk in darkness, we lie, and do not the truth: 7: But if we walk in the light, as he is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and the blood of Jesus Christ his Son cleanseth us from all sin.

1Jn: 5:18: We know that whosoever is born of God sinneth not; but he that is begotten of God keepeth himself, and that wicked one toucheth him not.

1Tm: 1:4: Neither give heed to fables and endless genealogies, which minister questions, rather than godly edifying which is in faith: so do.

1Tm: 4:7: But refuse profane and old wives' fables, and exercise thyself rather unto godliness.

Heb: 8:10-11: For this is the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel after those days, saith the Lord; I will put my laws into their mind, and write them in their hearts: and I will be to them a God, and they shall be to me a people: 11: And they shall not teach every man his neighbour, and every man his brother, saying, Know the Lord: for all shall know me, from the least to the greatest.

Lighten up?

A popular phrase right now is; "Oh, lighten up." In fact many people including Christians think that a person should lighten up. If lighten up means – don't be so serious or don't take life so serious or joke and fool around a little – I don't identify with it. I get my instruction from the Word of God and I am putting many of them in this article to make sure Christians don't lighten up in any way that would put them in a vulnerable place or that would cause them to be a bad example to others. Make sure your 'lighten up' does not lead you to behave as the world does.

Ex: 15:26: And said, If thou wilt diligently (1 persevering and careful in work; 2 industrious done with careful, steady effort; painstaking) hearken to the voice of the LORD thy God, and wilt do that which is right in his sight, and wilt give ear to his commandments, and keep all his statutes, I will put none of these diseases upon thee, which I have brought upon the Egyptians: for I am the LORD that healeth thee.

Deut: 4:9: Only take heed to thyself, and keep thy soul diligently, lest thou forget the things which thine eyes have seen, and lest they depart from thy heart all the days of thy life: but teach them thy sons, and thy sons' sons;

Deut: 6:7: And thou shalt teach them diligently unto thy children, and shalt talk of them when thou sittest in thine house, and when thou walkest by the way, and when thou liest down, and when thou risest up.

Deut: 10:12: And it shall come to pass, if ye shall hearken diligently unto my commandments which I command you this day, to love the LORD your God, and to serve him with all your heart and with all your soul,

Deut: 11:22: For if ye shall diligently keep all these commandments which I command you, to do them, to love the LORD your God, to walk in all his ways, and to cleave unto him;

Deut: 28:1: And it shall come to pass, if thou shalt hearken diligently unto the voice of the LORD thy God, to observe and to do all his commandments which I command thee this day, that the LORD thy God will set thee on high above all nations of the earth:

Prov: 3:21: My son, let not them depart from thine eyes: keep sound wisdom and discretion:

Prov: 4:13: Take fast hold of instruction; let her not go: keep her; for she is thy life.

Prov: 11:27: He that diligently seeketh good procureth favour: but he that seeketh mischief, it shall come unto him.

Isa: 55:2: Wherefore do ye spend money for that which is not bread? and your labour for that which satisfieth not? hearken diligently unto me, and eat ye that which is good, and let your soul delight itself in fatness.

Lk: 21:34-36: And take heed to yourselves, lest at any time your hearts be overcharged with surfeiting, and drunkenness, and cares of this life, and so that day come upon you unawares. 35: For as a snare shall it come on all them that dwell on the face of the whole earth. 36: Watch ye therefore, and pray always, that ye may be accounted worthy to escape all these things that shall come to pass, and to stand before the Son of man.

1Cor: 10:12: Wherefore let him that thinketh he standeth take heed (heed, beware, mind; see take care at care, watch out) lest he fall.

1Cor: 15:33: Be not deceived: evil communications corrupt good manners.

Gal: 6:7: Be not deceived; God is not mocked: for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap.

1Thess: 5:6: Therefore let us not sleep, as do others; but let us watch and be sober ([Solemn] – Syn. restrained, earnest, grave; see solemn 1, serious 2.).

1Thess: 5:8: But let us, who are of the day, be sober, putting on the breastplate of faith and love; and for a helmet, the hope of salvation.

1Tim: 5:10: Well reported of for good works; if she have brought up children, if she have lodged strangers, if she have washed the saints' feet, if she have relieved the afflicted, if she have diligently followed every good work.

Titus: 1:7-8: For a bishop must be blameless, as the steward of God; not selfwilled, not soon angry, not given to wine, no striker, not given to filthy lucre; 8: But a lover of hospitality, a lover of good men, sober, just, holy, temperate;

Titus: 2:2: That the aged men be sober, grave, temperate, sound in faith, in charity, in patience.

Titus: 2:4: That they may teach the young women to be sober, to love their husbands, to love their children,

Titus: 2:6: Young men likewise exhort to be sober minded.

Titus: 2:7-8: In all things shewing thyself a pattern of good works: in doctrine shewing uncorruptness, gravity, sincerity, 8: Sound speech, that cannot be condemned; that he that is of the contrary part may be ashamed, having no evil thing to say of you.

Heb: 11:6: But without faith it is impossible to please him: for he that cometh to God must believe that he is, and that he is a rewarder of them that diligently seek him.

Heb: 12:15: Looking diligently lest any man fail of the grace of God; lest any root of bitterness springing up trouble you, and thereby many be defiled;

1Pt: 1:13: Wherefore gird up the loins of your mind, be sober, and hope to the end for the grace that is to be brought unto you at the revelation of Jesus Christ;

1Pt: 4:7: But the end of all things is at hand: be ye therefore sober, and watch unto prayer.

1Pt: 5:8: Be sober, be vigilant; because your adversary the devil, as a roaring lion, walketh about, seeking whom

he may devour:

2Pt: 3:14: Wherefore, beloved, seeing that ye look for such things, be diligent that ye may be found of him in peace, without spot, and blameless.

What about the Law?

Isa: 8:20: To the law and to the testimony: if they speak not according to this word, it is because there is no light in them.

Dan: 7:17-28: These great beasts, which are four, are four kings, which shall arise out of the earth. But the saints of the most High shall take the kingdom, and possess the kingdom for ever, even for ever and ever. Then I would know the truth of the fourth beast, which was diverse from all the others, exceeding dreadful, whose teeth were of iron, and his nails of brass; which devoured, brake in pieces, and stamped the residue with his feet; And of the ten horns that were in his head, and of the other which came up, and before whom three fell; even of that horn that had eyes, and a mouth that spake very great things, whose look was more stout than his fellows. I beheld, and the same horn made war with the saints, and prevailed against them; Until the Ancient of days came, and judgment was given to the saints of the most High; and the time came that the saints possessed the kingdom. Thus he said, The fourth beast shall be the fourth kingdom upon earth, which shall be diverse from all kingdoms, and shall devour the whole earth, and shall tread it down, and break it in pieces. And the ten horns out of this kingdom are ten kings that shall arise: and another shall rise after them; and he shall be diverse from the first, and he shall subdue three kings. **And he shall speak great words against the most High, and shall wear out the saints of the most High, and think to change times and laws: and they shall be given into his hand until a time and times and the dividing of time.** But the judgment shall sit, and they shall take away his dominion, to consume and to destroy it unto the end. And the kingdom and dominion, and the greatness of the kingdom under the whole heaven, shall be given to the people of the saints of the most High, whose kingdom is an everlasting kingdom, and all dominions shall serve and obey him. Hitherto is the end of the matter. As for me Daniel, my cogitations much troubled me, and my countenance changed in me: but I kept the matter in my heart.

First I will share scriptures that sound as if the law is done away with and then I will share the scriptures that show that the law stands forever.

Rom: 7:4: Wherefore, my brethren, ye also are become dead to the law by the body of Christ; that ye should be married to another, even to him who is raised from the dead, that we should bring forth fruit unto God.

Rom: 3:20-21: Therefore by the deeds of the law there shall no flesh be justified in his sight: for by the law is the knowledge of sin. But now the righteousness of God without the law is manifested, being witnessed by the law and the prophets;

Rom: 3:28: Therefore we conclude that a man is justified by faith without the deeds of the law.

Rom: 3:31: Do we then make void the law through faith? God forbid: yea, we establish the law.

Rom: 4:13-16: For the promise, that he should be the heir of the world, was not to Abraham, or to his seed, through the law, but through the righteousness of faith. For if they which are of the law be heirs, faith is made void, and the promise made of none effect: Because the law worketh wrath: for where no law is, there is no transgression. Therefore it is of faith that it might be by grace; to the end the promise might be sure to all the seed; not to that only which is of the law, but to that also which is of the faith of Abraham; who is the father of us all,

Rom: 6:14: For sin shall not have dominion over you: for ye are not under the law, but under grace.

Rom: 7:2-4: For the woman which hath an husband is bound by the law to her husband so long as he liveth; but if the husband be dead, she is loosed from the law of her husband. So then if, while her husband liveth, she be married to another man, she shall be called an adulteress: but if her husband be dead, she is free from that law; so that she is no adulteress, though she be married to another man. Wherefore, my brethren, ye also are become dead to the law by the body of Christ; that ye should be married to another, even to him who is raised from the dead, that we should bring forth fruit unto God.

Rom: 7:6: But now we are delivered from the law, that being dead wherein we were held; that we should serve in newness of spirit, and not in the oldness of the letter.

Rom: 9:4: Who are Israelites; to whom pertaineth the adoption, and the glory, and the covenants, and the giving of the law, and the service of God, and the promises;

Rom: 9:31-32: But Israel, which followed after the law of righteousness, hath not attained to the law of righteousness. Wherefore? Because they sought it not by faith, but as it were by the works of the law. For they

stumbled at that stumblingstone;

Rom: 10:4: For Christ is the end of the law for righteousness to every one that believeth.

Rom: 10:5: For Moses describeth the righteousness which is of the law, that the man which doeth those things shall live by them.

Gal: 2:16: Knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the law, but by the faith of Jesus Christ, even we have believed in Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by the faith of Christ, and not by the works of the law: for by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified.

Gal: 2:19: For I through the law am dead to the law, that I might live unto God.

The law will be God's standard of right conduct forever.

Matt: 5:11-22: Blessed are ye, when men shall revile you, and persecute you, and shall say all manner of evil against you falsely, for my sake. Rejoice, and be exceeding glad: for great is your reward in heaven: for so persecuted they the prophets which were before you. Ye are the salt of the earth: but if the salt have lost his savour, wherewith shall it be salted? it is thenceforth good for nothing, but to be cast out, and to be trodden under foot of men. Ye are the light of the world. A city that is set on an hill cannot be hid. Neither do men light a candle, and put it under a bushel, but on a candlestick; and it giveth light unto all that are in the house. Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father which is in heaven. Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil. For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled. Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven: but whosoever shall do and teach them, the same shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven. For I say unto you, That except your righteousness shall exceed the righteousness of the scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no case enter into the kingdom of heaven. Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not kill; and whosoever shall kill shall be in danger of the judgment: But I say unto you, That whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of the judgment: and whosoever shall say to his brother, Raca, shall be in danger of the council: but whosoever shall say, Thou fool, shall be in danger of hell fire.

Rom: 2:12: For as many as have sinned without law shall also perish without law: and as many as have sinned in the law shall be judged by the law;

Rom: 2:13: (For not the hearers of the law are just before God, but the doers of the law shall be justified.

Rom: 2:14-15: For when the Gentiles, which have not the law, do by nature the things contained in the law, these, having not the law, are a law unto themselves: Which shew the work of the law written in their hearts, their conscience also bearing witness, and their thoughts the mean while accusing or else excusing one another ;)

Rom: 2:25-26: For circumcision verily profiteth, if thou keep the law: but if thou be a breaker of the law, thy circumcision is made uncircumcision. Therefore if the uncircumcision keep the righteousness of the law, shall not his uncircumcision be counted for circumcision?

Rom: 6:15: What then? shall we sin, because we are not under the law, but under grace? God forbid.

Explanation:

Rom: 7:6-9: But now we are delivered from the law, that being dead wherein we were held; that we should serve in newness of spirit, and not in the oldness of the letter. What shall we say then? Is the law sin? God forbid. Nay, I had not known sin, but by the law: for I had not known lust, except the law had said, Thou shalt not covet. But sin, taking occasion by the commandment, wrought in me all manner of concupiscence. For without the law sin was dead. For I was alive without the law once: but when the commandment came, sin revived, and I died.

Rom: 7:12: Wherefore the law is holy, and the commandment holy, and just, and good.

Rom: 7:14: For we know that the law is spiritual: but I am carnal, sold under sin.

Rom: 7:16: If then I do that which I would not, I consent unto the law that it is good.

Rom: 7:21-23: I find then a law, that, when I would do good, evil is present with me. For I delight in the law of God after the inward man: But I see another law in my members, warring against the law of my mind, and bringing me into captivity to the law of sin which is in my members.

Rom: 8:1-4: There is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit. For the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus hath made me free from the law of sin and death. For what the law could not do, in that it was weak through the flesh, God sending his own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, and for sin, condemned sin in the flesh: That the righteousness of the law might be

fulfilled in us, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit.

Rom: 13:8: Owe no man any thing, but to love one another: for he that loveth another hath fulfilled the law.

Rom: 13:10: Love worketh no ill to his neighbour: therefore love is the fulfilling of the law.

Rom: 7:4 said we were dead to the law, but Rom. 8:3-4 says: For what the law could not do, in that it was weak through the flesh, God sending his own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, and for sin, condemned sin in the flesh: That the righteousness of the law might be fulfilled in us, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit.

1Cor: 15:56: The sting of death is sin; and the strength of sin is the law.

(So you see that the law is a strict guideline for walking in love, but it is a legal written code and therefore is rendered ineffective at offering affectionate love, whereas walking in the Spirit of Christ enables us to walk in righteousness with affectionate love. And to walk in the Spirit of Christ is to be free from condemnation even if we miss the mark because we are under a new covenant whereby the blood of Christ covers out imperfections. We should have no more sin consciousness. We should keep our eyes on Jesus – follow Him and trust in Him and not worry about missing it because we have a new heart that is focused on pleasing God and that pleases God. Heb: 9:14)

Heb: 8:10: For this is the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel after those days, saith the Lord; I will put my laws into their mind, and write them in their hearts: and I will be to them a God, and they shall be to me a people.

Heb: 9:9-15: Which was a figure for the time then present, in which were offered both gifts and sacrifices, that could not make him that did the service perfect, as pertaining to the conscience; Which stood only in meats and drinks, and divers washings, and carnal ordinances, imposed on them until the time of reformation. But Christ being come an high priest of good things to come, by a greater and more perfect tabernacle, not made with hands, that is to say, not of this building; Neither by the blood of goats and calves, but by his own blood he entered in once into the holy place, having obtained eternal redemption for us. For if the blood of bulls and of goats, and the ashes of an heifer sprinkling the unclean, sanctifieth to the purifying of the flesh: How much more shall the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit offered himself without spot to God, purge your conscience from dead works to serve the living God? And for this cause he is the mediator of the New Testament that by means of death, for the redemption of the transgressions that were under the first testament, they which are called might receive the promise of eternal inheritance.

Heb: 10:1: For the law having a shadow of good things to come, and not the very image of the things, can never with those sacrifices which they offered year by year continually make the comers thereunto perfect.

(This means that the law only laid out how to act in love toward your neighbor and your God. But Jesus brought a better way – we can have God’s Spirit of grace and mercy living within us so that we will supernaturally be inclined to do the loving caring thing. The law just gets us started on how to love. The Holy Spirit will lead the believer, when He is depended upon to do so, as to how to love in the situation he finds himself in. This ties in with Heb: 8:10 – the new heart has God’s laws in it.)

Gal: 3:2: This only would I learn of you, Received ye the Spirit by the works of the law, or by the hearing of faith?

Gal: 3:5: He therefore that ministereth to you the Spirit, and worketh miracles among you, doeth he it by the works of the law, or by the hearing of faith?

Gal: 3:10: For as many as are of the works of the law are under the curse: for it is written, Cursed is every one that continueth not in all things which are written in the book of the law to do them.

Gal: 3:11: But that no man is justified by the law in the sight of God, it is evident: for, The just shall live by faith.

Gal: 3:13: Christ hath redeemed us from the curse of the law, being made a curse for us: for it is written, Cursed is every one that hangeth on a tree:

Gal: 3:19: Wherefore then serveth the law? It was added because of transgressions, till the seed should come to whom the promise was made; and it was ordained by angels in the hand of a mediator.

Gal: 3:21: Is the law then against the promises of God? God forbid: for if there had been a law given which could have given life, verily righteousness should have been by the law.

Gal: 3:23-24: But before faith came, we were kept under the law, shut up unto the faith which should afterwards be revealed. Wherefore the law was our schoolmaster to bring us unto Christ, that we might be justified by faith.

Eph: 2:15: Having abolished in his flesh the enmity, even the law of commandments contained in ordinances; for

to make in himself of twain one new man, so making peace;

(This says the law was an absolute demand with threats of punishment if not obeyed – thus fear of punishment made the righteous – those who desired to be righteous – feel as if they were under a hard taskmaster. But the New Covenant operates in faith that God has fixed everything and all the righteous need to do is love God and their fellow man. God even gives them the equipment to do it.)

Gal: 5:4: Christ is become of no effect unto you, whosoever of you are justified by the law; ye are fallen from grace.

Gal: 5:14: For all the law is fulfilled in one word, even in this; Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself.

Gal: 5:18: But if ye be led of the Spirit, ye are not under the law.

Why Christians Should Be Involved in Government

Because Christians should be pleading the cause of the oppressed:

Isa: 1:17: Learn to do well; seek judgment, relieve the oppressed, judge the fatherless, plead for the widow.

Isa: 58:6: Is not this the fast that I have chosen? to loose the bands of wickedness, to undo the heavy burdens, and to let the oppressed go free, and that ye break every yoke?

Jer: 22:3: Thus saith the LORD; Execute ye judgment and righteousness, and deliver the spoiled out of the hand of the oppressor: and do no wrong, do no violence to the stranger, the fatherless, nor the widow, neither shed innocent blood in this place.

Because The Bible says ungodly men are trouble to the people and the nation:

Prov: 12:7: The wicked are overthrown, and are not: but the house of the righteous shall stand.

Prov: 28:5: Evil men understand not judgment: but they that seek the LORD understand all things.

Prov: 29:4: The king by judgment establisheth the land: but he that receiveth gifts (rules for selfish purposes) overthroweth it.

Prov: 29:12: If a ruler hearken to lies, all his servants are wicked.

Prov: 29:16: When the wicked are multiplied, transgression increaseth: but the righteous shall see their fall.

Christian must object to corrosion and corruption of our government because disobedient and rebellious nations are oppressive and are vulnerable to the enemy:

1Kings: 8:33-34: When thy people Israel be smitten down before the enemy, because they have sinned against thee, and shall turn again to thee, and confess thy name, and pray, and make supplication unto thee in this house: 34: Then hear thou in heaven, and forgive the sin of thy people Israel, and bring them again unto the land which thou gavest unto their fathers.

1Kings: 8:35-36: When heaven is shut up, and there is no rain, because they have sinned against thee; if they pray toward this place, and confess thy name, and turn from their sin, when thou afflictest them: 36: Then hear thou in heaven, and forgive the sin of thy servants, and of thy people Israel, that thou teach them the good way wherein they should walk, and give rain upon thy land, which thou hast given to thy people for an inheritance.

Because God wants to heal the land:

2Chron: 7:14: If my people, which are called by my name, shall humble themselves, and pray, and seek my face, and turn from their wicked ways; then will I hear from heaven, and will forgive their sin, and will heal their land.

Because Christians are to light and salt:

Matt: 5:15: Neither do men light a candle, and put it under a bushel, but on a candlestick; and it giveth light unto

all that are in the house.

Matt: 5:16: Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father which is in heaven.

Matt: 5:13: Ye are the salt of the earth: but if the salt have lost his savour, wherewith shall it be salted? it is thenceforth good for nothing, but to be cast out, and to be trodden under foot of men.

Because Jesus wants us to occupy till He comes:

Lk: 19:12: He said therefore, A certain nobleman went into a far country to receive for himself a kingdom, and to return. 13: And he called his ten servants, and delivered them ten pounds, and said unto them, Occupy (1 to take possession of by settlement or seizure 2 to hold possession of by tenure; specif., a) to dwell in b) to hold (a position or office) 3 to take up or fill up (space, time, etc.) 4 to employ, busy, or engage (oneself, one's attention, mind, etc.) till I come.

Works

Rom: 2:6: Who will render to every man according to his deeds: (works – behavior)

Rom: 8:13: For if ye live after the flesh, ye shall die: but if ye through the Spirit do mortify the deeds of the body, ye shall live.

2Cor: 11:15: Therefore it is no great thing if his ministers also be transformed as the ministers of righteousness; whose end shall be according to their works.

Rev: 20:13: And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; and death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them: and they were judged every man according to their works.

2Cor: 11:15: Therefore it is no great thing if his ministers also be transformed as the ministers of righteousness; whose end shall be according to their works.

Rev: 2:23: And I will kill her children with death; and all the churches shall know that I am he which searcheth the reins and hearts: and I will give unto every one of you according to your works.

Rev: 3:15-16: I know thy works, that thou art neither cold nor hot: I would thou wert cold or hot. So then because thou art lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will spue thee out of my mouth.

Rev: 18:1-6: And after these things I saw another angel come down from heaven, having great power; and the earth was lightened with his glory. And he cried mightily with a strong voice, saying, Babylon the great is fallen, is fallen, and is become the habitation of devils, and the hold of every foul spirit, and a cage of every unclean and hateful bird. For all nations have drunk of the wine of the wrath of her fornication, and the kings of the earth have committed fornication with her, and the merchants of the earth are waxed rich through the abundance of her delicacies. And I heard another voice from heaven, saying, Come out of her, my people, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues. For her sins have reached unto heaven, and God hath remembered her iniquities. Reward her even as she rewarded you, and double unto her double according to her works: in the cup which she hath filled fill to her double.

Rev: 20:12: And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God; and the books were opened: and another book was opened, which is the book of life: and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works.

Rev: 20:13: And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; and death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them: and they were judged every man according to their works.

What works?

Jn: 8:39: They answered and said unto him, Abraham is our father. Jesus saith unto them, If ye were Abraham's children, ye would do the works of Abraham.

The works of the flesh:

Jn: 7:7: The world cannot hate you; but me it hateth, because I testify of it, that the works thereof are evil.

Gal: 5:19-21: Now the works of the flesh are manifest, which are these; Adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness, Idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies, Envyings, murders, drunkenness, revellings, and such like: of the which I tell you before, as I have also told you in time past, that they which do such things shall not inherit the kingdom of God.

1Jn: 3:8: He that committeth sin is of the devil; for the devil sinneth from the beginning. For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil.

1Jn: 3:12: Not as Cain, who was of that wicked one, and slew his brother. And wherefore slew he him? Because his own works were evil, and his brother's righteous.

Rev: 9:20: And the rest of the men which were not killed by these plagues yet repented not of the works of their hands, that they should not worship devils, and idols of gold, and silver, and brass, and stone, and of wood: which neither can see, nor hear, nor walk:

Rom: 13:12: The night is far spent, the day is at hand: let us therefore cast off the works of darkness, and let us put on the armour of light.

The works of the Spirit:

Gal: 5:22-25: But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, Meekness, temperance: against such there is no law. And they that are Christ's have crucified the flesh with the affections and lusts. If we live in the Spirit, let us also walk in the Spirit.

Mt: 5:16: Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father which is in heaven.

Mt: 16:27: For the Son of man shall come in the glory of his Father with his angels; and then he shall reward every man according to his works.

Jn: 5:36: But I have greater witness than that of John: for the works which the Father hath given me to finish, the same works that I do, bear witness of me, that the Father hath sent me.

Jn: 10:37-38: If I do not the works of my Father, believe me not. But if I do, though ye believe not me, believe the works: that ye may know, and believe, that the Father is in me, and I in him.

Jn: 14:11: Believe me that I am in the Father, and the Father in me: or else believe me for the very works' sake.

Jn: 14:12: Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me, the works that I do shall he do also; and greater works than these shall he do; because I go unto my Father.

Rom: 8:13: For if ye live after the flesh, ye shall die: but if ye through the Spirit do mortify the deeds of the body, ye shall live.

Eph: 5:10-11: For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them. And have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness, but rather reprove them.

1Tim: 5:10: Well reported of for good works; if she have brought up children, if she have lodged strangers, if she have washed the saints' feet, if she have relieved the afflicted, if she have diligently followed every good work.

2Tim: 3:17: That the man of God may be perfect, throughly furnished unto all good works.

Titus: 1:16: They profess that they know God; but in works they deny him, being abominable, and disobedient, and unto every good work reprobate.

Titus: 2:7: In all things shewing thyself a pattern of good works: in doctrine shewing uncorruptness, gravity, sincerity,

Titus: 2:14: Who gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from all iniquity, and purify unto himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works.

Titus: 3:8: This is a faithful saying, and these things I will that thou affirm constantly, that they which have believed in God might be careful to maintain good works. These things are good and profitable unto men.

Titus: 3:14: And let ours also learn to maintain good works for necessary uses, that they be not unfruitful.

Heb: 4:10: For he that is entered into his rest, he also hath ceased from his own works, as God did from his.

Heb: 6:1: Therefore leaving the principles of the doctrine of Christ, let us go on unto perfection; not laying again the foundation of repentance from dead works, and of faith toward God,

Heb: 9:14: How much more shall the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit offered himself without spot to God, purge your conscience from dead works to serve the living God?

Heb: 10:24: And let us consider one another to provoke unto love and to good works:

Jas: 2:14: What doth it profit, my brethren, though a man say he hath faith, and have not works? can faith save him?

Jas: 2:17: Even so faith, if it hath not works, is dead, being alone.

Jas: 2:18: Yea, a man may say, Thou hast faith, and I have works: shew me thy faith without thy works, and I will shew thee my faith by my works.

Jas: 2:20: But wilt thou know, O vain man, that faith without works is dead?

Jas: 2:21: Was not Abraham our father justified by works, when he had offered Isaac his son upon the altar?

Jas: 2:22: Seest thou how faith wrought with his works, and by works was faith made perfect?

Jas: 2:24: Ye see then how that by works a man is justified, and not by faith only.

Jas: 2:26: For as the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without works is dead also.

Jas: 3:13: Who is a wise man and endued with knowledge among you? let him shew out of a good conversation his works with meekness of wisdom.

1Pet: 2:12: Having your conversation honest among the Gentiles: that, whereas they speak against you as evildoers, they may by your good works, which they shall behold, glorify God in the day of visitation.

Rev: 2:2: I know thy works, and thy labour, and thy patience, and how thou canst not bear them which are evil: and thou hast tried them which say they are apostles, and are not, and hast found them liars:

Rev: 2:5: Remember therefore from whence thou art fallen, and repent, and do the first works; or else I will come unto thee quickly, and will remove thy candlestick out of his place, except thou repent.

Rev: 2:9: I know thy works, and tribulation, and poverty, (but thou art rich) and I know the blasphemy of them which say they are Jews, and are not, but are the synagogue of Satan.

Rev: 2:13: I know thy works, and where thou dwellest, even where Satan's seat is: and thou holdest fast my name, and hast not denied my faith, even in those days wherein Antipas was my faithful martyr, who was slain among you, where Satan dwelleth.

Rev: 2:19: I know thy works, and charity, and service, and faith, and thy patience, and thy works; and the last to be more than the first.

Rev: 2:26: And he that overcometh, and keepeth my works unto the end, to him will I give power over the nations:

Rev: 3:1: And unto the angel of the church in Sardis write; These things saith he that hath the seven Spirits of God, and the seven stars; I know thy works, that thou hast a name that thou livest, and art dead.

Rev: 3:2: Be watchful, and strengthen the things which remain, that are ready to die: for I have not found thy works perfect before God.

Rev: 3:8: I know thy works: behold, I have set before thee an open door, and no man can shut it: for thou hast a little strength, and hast kept my word, and hast not denied my name.

Rev: 14:13: And I heard a voice from heaven saying unto me, Write, Blessed are the dead which die in the Lord from henceforth: Yea, saith the Spirit, that they may rest from their labours; and their works do follow them.

We are saved by faith in Jesus, but our works show whether we have received God's salvation or not.

Our works show who our father is. Good works are acts of obedience toward God and love toward your fellow man. Any works that are apposed to God's teachings and precepts are evil (harmful) works. They are selfish.

Rom: 3:20: Therefore by the deeds of the law there shall no flesh be justified in his sight: for by the law is the knowledge of sin.

Rom: 3:27: Where is boasting then? It is excluded. By what law? of works? Nay: but by the law of faith.

Rom: 3:28: Therefore we conclude that a man is justified by faith without the deeds of the law.

Rom: 4:2: For if Abraham were justified by works, he hath whereof to glory; but not before God.

Rom: 4:6: Even as David also describeth the blessedness of the man, unto whom God imputeth righteousness without works,

Rom: 9:31-32: But Israel, which followed after the law of righteousness, hath not attained to the law of righteousness. Wherefore? Because they sought it not by faith, but as it were by the works of the law. For they stumbled at that stumblingstone;

Rom: 11:6: And if by grace, then is it no more of works: otherwise grace is no more grace. But if it be of works, then is it no more grace: otherwise work is no more work.

Gal: 2:16: Knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the law, but by the faith of Jesus Christ, even we have believed in Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by the faith of Christ, and not by the works of the law: for by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified.

Gal: 3:2: This only would I learn of you, Received ye the Spirit by the works of the law, or by the hearing of

faith?

Gal: 3:10: For as many as are of the works of the law are under the curse: for it is written, Cursed is every one that continueth not in all things which are written in the book of the law to do them.

Eph: 2:8-10: For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: Not of works, lest any man should boast.

Titus: 3:5: Not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to his mercy he saved us, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost;

Biblical Balance

Biblical Balance

In order to walk, little children must learn balance. We call it learning to walk, but it is more a case of learning balance. For the church, balance is of the utmost importance as she learns to walk in love. If she just applies wisdom without love she will have safety, but she will be cold and indifferent – she will end up legalistic which is deadly. On the other hand, love applied to situations without wisdom is sloppy agape and it is just as deadly, because godly wisdom is the preservative. Love without instruction is without form. Wisdom without love is void. To walk in love we must have a balance of both.

The enemy of our souls is always trying to get us (the church) to go to the left or to the right off of God's Word, because God's Word is balanced. To have good balance, all of the Bible must be taught and in the balance in which it is written. In other words, one subject should not be emphasized over and above another subject unless that's how it is handled in the Bible. For example; Grace should not be more emphasized than obedience. Love should not be over emphasized and wisdom understated. The promises should not be over emphasized while abiding in Jesus is understated – for the promises are for those who abide in Jesus. Faith should not be emphasized above walking by the spirit, since there will never be good results without the two going hand in hand.

We also need to balance the written word with the leading of the Spirit in order to walk in the God kind of love – for it is the Spirit that gives life to the written word, enabling one to walk in wisdom and love, which is what the Bible teaches.

In order for the church to take the Promise Land she must emphasize the presence of the Lord, faith, and obedience to the word of God with equal importance. The Israelites could not enter the Promise Land without the presence of the Lord. (Ex: 33:14-15) They could not enter the Sabbath rest because of unbelief. (Heb: 3:11-12) They couldn't triumph over their enemies when there was sin in the camp. (Josh: 7:10-13)

When salvation is preached, one should emphasize the awesome grace of God, but in balance with man's part which is to enter into Jesus' death, burial, and resurrection so that they can be new creatures in Jesus.

When Jesus said to the Jewish leaders, “Let him who is without sin among you cast the first stone,” speaking of the woman caught in the very act of adultery, he was not making light of the law or the sin – he was walking in love and wisdom. Wisdom knows that the law is righteous and was established to give life not death. But love wanted to give the woman another chance. Jesus knew that when the law was established, strict penalties were decreed to help people be strong and resist temptation. But the woman brought to Him was no more of a sinner than those who wanted Him to sentence her to death. His answer was full of love and wisdom.

In Matt: 12:3-4, Jesus is not teaching us to make light of the law, He is operating in love and wisdom. He knew that God established the law to help man, not to destroy man. Just so, the showbread was to be kept holy to help man gain a concept of the holy, but when David and his men were in great need of sustenance, mercy took precedence over the teaching. The wisdom of God (which is full of love) would say, “If I deny David and his men this food in the name of keeping it sacred, will I be serving the law or breaking the law of love?” Therefore the Spirit behind the law rules over the law.

The balance of the Word is already in the Word. The church’s balance is not a balance of some of God’s Word and some of the world. Christians should not be ashamed of any of the Word. As soon as the church tries to hide or ignore any part of God’s written word, she becomes unbalanced. The Word is our balance.

Parent/child relationships do not work very well if one party neglects their role obligations. Marriages are not very successful if only one party fulfills their role obligations. Government never works well without everyone doing their part to honor it. The word of God will work well for the church when she honors all of it. The New Testament is the Holy Spirit revelation of the law. We are new creatures in Jesus and we have God’s laws written in our heart by the Holy Spirit. When we void any part of God’s Word, we are thrown off balance. This is a call to receive the Word in the Spirit in which it was written.

Balanced Christianity

An article in a magazine identified one problem in Christianity today as selfishness. Of course this is an anomaly because Jesus died on the cross to save us from that very malady – selfishness.

The article cries out against the imbalance that immature Christians fall into when they spend too much time in one aspect of God's word and too little elsewhere. In this case – too much time with the “Promise Box” and too little time in the instruction book (the Bible).

The article points out that Christianity is about faith, standing in the face of adversity, and putting God and others ahead of ourselves. I couldn't agree more. But it's also about the rewards for having done so. This is very important because it is what God is trying to get through to us. He is teaching us that He is life – if you want it come and get it.

He is teaching that He is Father – the inevitable result of receiving Him as your God and Father is that you will have Him as your God and Father. The benefit is that you will have the best, most perfect, most wonderful, and most capable God and Father.

He is teaching us that the inevitable result of making Jesus your Lord, Savior, and Shepherd is that you will have the one who qualifies better than anyone to be your instructor, guide, example, and overseer and the only one who qualifies as your Savior.

He is teaching us that the inevitable result of hooking up with life, light, and love is that you will reap the benefits of them. Our relationship with God is a two way street, He in us and we in Him. The result is that He has children and we have the parental authority, guidance, and provisions so vitally necessary to our well-being.

God's commandments and precepts are never given without the promises that pertain to them. God teaches us to do it His way for that very purpose – so that we can be our best and have His best. I know this because of the way the Bible teachings are constructed. Therefore it is imperative for us to keep the balance of the word. Anytime we change the balance of the word we become unbalanced. True Christianity is to walk in love. A baby must learn balance in order to walk. Christians must learn balance in order to walk in love. The word of God is balanced. Never underemphasize anything that the Bible emphasizes and never overemphasize what the Bible teaches. Keep the balance.

Immature Christians' preoccupation with their own lives and stuff is repulsive in the light of the true gospel. But what is needed is knowledge of the Son of God.

Eph: 4:11-16: And he gives some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers; For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ: Till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ: That we henceforth be no more children, tossed to and fro, and

carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men, and cunning craftiness, whereby they lie in wait to deceive; But speaking the truth in love, may grow up into him in all things, which is the head, even Christ: From whom the whole body fitly joined together and compacted by that which every joint supplieth, according to the effectual working in the measure of every part, maketh increase of the body unto the edifying of itself in love.

We need to preach the gospel of the kingdom along with the gospel of salvation. They go together like love and marriage.

Now that I have emphasized the benefits of enjoying God our Father, let me present the balance. We are to consider ourselves His servants. We are to take up our cross daily – giving up our self-interests, comfort, and security in the interest of serving others. Though that may sound like a hardship, it is not, because God lives in us to will and to do of His good pleasure. His good pleasure is to love us and to love others. There is the balance. Trust and obey God and be happy.

Action and reward – References:

Genesis 1:7, 9:11, 12:1-3, Deut: 28:1-14, 30:19-20, Josh: 1:7-8, Prov: 3:1-19, Isa: 11:1-16, 61:1-8, Jer: 24:6-7, Ezek: 36:24-30, Mal: 3:1-18, Matt: 6: 32-33, 7: 7-12, Mk: 11:22-24, Lk: 6:38, 15:31, 17:10, 18:29-30, Jn: 3:16-17, 4:14, 6:47, 8:12, 31,32, 10:10, John 14,15,16, 1Cor: 3:21-23, 2Cor: 1:20, 1Pet: 2:9-11, 1Jn: 5:14-15

Why Are So Many Christians

Succumbing to Divorce?

In the last 25 years I have watched many marriages fall. Why?

Was it because they didn't care what God said?

Was it because they only wanted to do their own thing?

Was it because the spouse abused them terribly?

Was it because they believe it's all right to divorce if you are not happy?

In most of these cases both parties:

- Wanted to serve God
- Wanted their marriage to work
- Were seeking strength and answers in order to avoid divorce.

So what happened?

I believe that this tragedy is another case of the word not being taught in balance. These Christians heard so much about how God loves them, how he understands their hurts and weakness, how his mercy endures forever, how he is so benevolent, how he sent Jesus so sinners can go to heaven, and how he has given them numerous blessings and promises to put them over in life.

So the troubled couple or just one of the spouses went to God in prayer either through the pastor, or the laying on of hands, or privately. Once that was done, they sat back and waited for God to solve their problem. They endured their situation expecting God's deliverance any day. Time went by and not only didn't things get better, they probably got worse.

If both spouses are standing for their marriage, usually one of them is weaker than the other and will lose patience or faith at some point. He or she then takes matters into his or her own hands and try to find marital bliss elsewhere or they think that a separation or divorce will at least rid them of their problems and they go for it.

If just one is standing for a better marriage or relationship the same thing applies – they get tired of waiting and take matters into their own hands.

Question: How could the church or good biblical teaching – thus biblical thinking help couples resist the

temptation to divorce?

Answer: By always teaching the balance in the scriptures instead of emphasizing the good stuff and once in a while casually mentioning the disciplines required of them.

- Had they been taught that when they came to God they were to repent of doing things their way and were to determine to learn to do things God's way from then on . . .

- Had they been taught what the scripture, 'Not by might, not by power, but by God's Spirit really means – which is that the Christian receives God's Spirit and acts according to it rather than according to their carnal nature . . . (If they would do that they are guaranteed to win big time, but it will be in God's time or in due season, not in man's time.)

- Had the parties involved had just as much teaching about the fact that they were crucified with Christ and have been raised to new life – the life of Christ in them . . .

- Had they had just as much teaching about striving for all purity . . .

- Had they had just as much teaching of the biblical attitude that since one died for all, all ought to live for him . . .

- Had they had just as much teaching about what taking up their cross means . . . (the Amp. V. says it means to give up your comfort, security, and self-interest and be ruled by God's love.)

- Had they had just as much teaching about the biblical attitude of rather to suffer than to fail to please God . . .

- Had they been thoroughly taught about their witness now and their reward in heaven . . .

- Had they been made to understand that there is a time and a season for the benefits mentioned above and sometimes it is time to reap the benefits and sometimes it is time to suffer because things must be done God's way and not the carnal way . . .

Had they been taught that these things are what a Christian does and had they been taught it as often as they were taught the above benevolence of God . . .

- Many of them would have had the correct mindset – the godly one.
- Most of them would have been able to keep the correct focus – God’s ways not their ways.
- Many would have been able to keep their priorities straight – the body of Christ behaves as Christ would, thinks as he does, hates what he hates and loves what he loves.
- They would have been able to bolster their courage with thoughts of pleasing God and eventually reaping an abundant harvest – a true reward in God’s timing. And they would have had the satisfaction of doing righteously.
- They would have set a good example.
- They would have done their part to keep the family together.
- They would not have evolved into a part of society’s problem.
- They would not have been guilty of causing emotional hurt for their and other people’s children – divorce is harmful.
- They would not have hurt theirs and other people’s children by setting a terrible example.
- They would not have chosen to sacrifice their witness and reward in heaven for a temporal better day.
- And there’s a good chance that God would have, over a period of time, solved their differences and rewarded them with a satisfactory relationship with their spouse. If not, at least they would have had the satisfaction of serving God with a true heart.

This is a hard teaching. This is a powerful. Look around you. What do you see?

- Broken families, broken lives.
- Dysfunctional people, dysfunctional families, dysfunctional churches, dysfunctional nations.

Where did they come from?

- Selfish choices.
- Ungodly choices.

Lk: 9:23, Rom: 6-8, 2Cor: 5:14, Gal: 2:20, 1Pet: 4:1, Zech: 3:7, 4:6

Disclaimer: This article is not meant to put a guilt trip on anyone. If you are divorced and this article makes you feel bad, go to God and talk to him about it until you have peace. God bless you.

Love Rules, Not Mercy

I am getting the impression that because mercy had been so much emphasized the last thirty years or so, many now think that God is mercy – that his reaction to any situation is always mercy.

God is not mercy. He has mercy. He shows mercy, but He is Love. Now get this because it is very important.

To say that love rules or to say that God is love means that God always does what is called for in order to love.

We're talking about the Father kind of love. God has a Father heart toward everyone, but He can only benefit those who choose Him as Father and trust and obey Him.

Think about it. Everything that God has instructed mankind to do in the Bible is for man's protection. Some of the precepts are for the good of all and some are for the good of the individual. So to think that God would easily pass over what He has said in favor of not putting a guilt trip on someone is purely a fallacy.

When though God has said, "Do not commit fornication", a person deliberately goes ahead and has intercourse with someone who is not their lifelong mate, they put themselves in jeopardy. That wrong choice exposes them to diseases. They risk exposing themselves to the wrath of someone – a father, an irate ex-lover, etc. Then there is the risk of pregnancy. If that happens then both the father and the mother are involved and now there is a brand new tiny person involved. If the parents continue to make irresponsible choices, the offspring are bound to suffer from those choices.

God is love and disobedience grieves Him because every disobedience hurts someone.

And the wages of sin is death. Am I saying that if a person deliberately disobeys God they can't be saved? No. I'm saying until they repent of their disobedience, they cannot have a relationship with God. He does not hear the prayers of the sinner. (Prov: 15:29) This does not mean He doesn't care about them and it doesn't mean He wants them to be under a load of guilt and shame. It means that if a child of God chooses to disobey Him, they will be alienated from God and will feel guilt and shame until they repent and return.

God's mercy is standing by waiting for the child to come home. He is waiting and longing to be a Father to the disobedient one. But let it be known and understood, He does not overlook disobedience and He does not put mercy ahead of love. To love a child a good parent must teach, train, and discipline him/her.

How does God want us to react to a person who chooses to disobey him? He wants us to speak the truth to one another in love. He wants us to urge one another on to love and good works. (Heb: 10:25) He wants us to fish them out of the murky waters. He wants us to turn a sinner from his sin. (Jas: 5:19) He wants us to warn that one. (1Thess: 5:14)

I know that the recent teachings have not been in this direction, but this is the direction that must be chosen in order to walk in love. The loving Christian does not condemn, but he does not ignore the fact that the sinner is in a dangerous place. That's where Christians are missing it. They no longer think the person who sins is in a dangerous place, they think that God is excusing everything and patching things up for everyone. They think Jesus died so we can all go to heaven, but He died and rose to restore eternal life to us. This life is in God's Son, Jesus. (1Jn: 5:11) It's a life that practices making right choices.

This article is in the balance series because it was an over-emphasis of mercy, forgiveness, and grace that has caused this error. These should be proclaimed, but in balance with God's severity. He is a loving God – a loving Father – He will not let you get away with sinning.

God is the God of Past, Present, and Future

It is considered a wise teaching that God has said: I am not the God of the past or the future, but I am the God of now. That statement has been misconstrued from a quote about God being the "I AM".

Why do I say that was misconstrued? I say that because when I tried to implement that teaching, I kept coming up against a brick wall. I was expecting Him to do what I asked, now. I mean I would trust God for the now and come up empty-handed. What was wrong?

I discovered that the scriptures don't talk that way. It's:

Ps: 25:5: Lead me in thy truth, and teach me: for thou art the God of my salvation; on thee do I wait all the day.

Ps: 27:14: Wait on the LORD: be of good courage, and he shall strengthen thine heart: wait, I say, on the LORD.

Ps: 37:7: Rest in the LORD, and wait patiently for him: fret not thyself because of him who prospereth in his way, because of the man who bringeth wicked devices to pass.

Isa: 40:32: But they that wait upon the LORD shall renew their strength; they shall mount up with wings as

eagles; they shall run, and not be weary; and they shall walk, and not faint.

Heb: 10:6: For ye have need of patience, that, after ye have done the will of God, ye might receive the promise.

Mt: 6:19-20: Lay not up for yourselves treasures upon earth, where moth and rust doth corrupt, and where thieves break through and steal: But lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust doth corrupt, and where thieves do not break through nor steal:

Jesus says in Mk: 11:23: For verily I say unto you, That whosoever shall say unto this mountain, Be thou removed, and be thou cast into the sea; and shall not doubt in his heart, but shall believe that those things which he saith shall come to pass; he shall have whatsoever he saith. Therefore I say unto you, What things soever ye desire, when ye pray, believe that ye receive them, and ye shall have them. (Even that is future tense – shall have.)

So, often the scriptures give hope for now and reward later. This is not to say God has not made provisions for now. Jesus said in Mt: 9:29: Then touched he their eyes, saying, According to your faith be it unto you. And in Mk: 9:23: Jesus said unto him, If thou canst believe, all things are possible to him that believeth.

God does do some things instantly and if you have the faith and need to receive it now, you can receive it. I'm just saying the norm in the Bible is promises that give hope. Even the texts of Jesus' above are usually manifest in future tense.

If this be the case what is God saying when He says I AM – the God of now? Now, He is busy bringing things to pass. Now, He comforts, encourages, teaches, and equips. PTL!

The Bible teaches that there is a place for the past. It can be full of good memories for some. And it can always be used as a learning experience.

The present is good for making the most of life – whether you are in a position to make lemonade or are empowered to do great things and/or manifest the joy of the Lord.

The future offers the child of God bright hope.

It's when any one of these is blown out of proportion that problems arise. Unbalanced teaching of the scriptures

will always cause problems. The Bible is balances and teachers will be wise to heed this caution – make sure you have the balance.

He is Daddy and He is God

I heard a song that went: “Will you please hurry up, Lord cause I don’t think I can take this anymore.” It wasn’t sung with piety, it was belted out. It had a great beat to it and I liked it. But when I got to thinking about it, I knew that although most of us have felt that way at times and even said that to God, it is not the proper attitude.

Is piety toward God important?

Dan: 8:7-14: And I saw him come close unto the ram, and he was moved with choler against him, and smote the ram, and brake his two horns: and there was no power in the ram to stand before him, but he cast him down to the ground, and stamped upon him: and there was none that could deliver the ram out of his hand. 8: Therefore the he goat waxed very great: and when he was strong, the great horn was broken; and for it came up four notable ones toward the four winds of heaven. 9: And out of one of them came forth a little horn, which waxed exceeding great, toward the south, and toward the east, and toward the pleasant land. 10: And it waxed great, even to the host of heaven; and it cast down some of the host and of the stars to the ground, and stamped upon them. 11: Yea, he magnified himself even to the prince of the host, and by him the daily sacrifice was taken away, and the place of his sanctuary was cast down. 12: And an host was given him against the daily sacrifice by reason of transgression, and it cast down the truth to the ground; and it practised, and prospered. **(Vs 12 in Amplified Bible says, And the host [the chosen people] was given [to the wicked horn] together with the continual burnt offering because of the transgression [of God’s people – their abounding irreverence, ungodliness, and lack of piety].** And righteousness and truth were cast down to the ground, and it [the wicked horn] accomplished this [by divine permission] and prospered.) 13: Then I heard one saint speaking, and another saint said unto that certain saint which spake, How long shall be the vision concerning the daily sacrifice, and the transgression of desolation, to give both the sanctuary and the host to be trodden under foot? 14: And he said unto me, Unto two thousand and three hundred days; then shall the sanctuary be cleansed.

Heb: 5:7: Amp. V: In the days of His flesh [Jesus] offered up definite, special petitions [for that which He not

only wanted but needed] and supplications with strong crying and tears to Him Who was [always] able to save Him [out] from death, and He was heard because of His reverence toward God [His godly fear, His piety, in that He shrank from the horrors of separation from the bright presence of the Father].

God has been hard on me and I believe that it is because I want to be free of all baggage and I want to be conformed into the image of His Son. When I say, hard on me, I mean that I have endured years and years of emotional suffering of which I thought He would quickly deliver me, but instead it was as in Isaiah 43:1-2: But now thus saith the LORD that created thee, O Jacob, and he that formed thee, O Israel, Fear not: for I have redeemed thee, I have called thee by thy name; thou art mine. 2: When thou passest through the waters, I will be with thee; and through the rivers, they shall not overflow thee: when thou walkest through the fire, thou shalt not be burned; neither shall the flame kindle upon thee.

The biggest lesson I have learned from it all, beside patient endurance, is that God is God and the sooner a Christian realizes that God must call the shots and that He must be trusted, the better off they are going to be.

I do not believe that a Christian needs to crawl up to God's throne and grovel for what they need and want. But I do believe in practicing great piety toward the heavenly Father. Piety means that we show Him all the respect and reverence that is due Him for who He is.

I am not objecting to the teaching of calling God, Daddy. We are, through Jesus, in a Father/child relationship with Him. We can take that to heart and feel loved and comfortable with Him. In fact, to truly know and enjoy the Father/child relationship with Him will do away with all that "I'm not worthy." stuff and that "What did I do to deserve His love and forgiveness?" and so on. When you know that He loves you as His very own child, you do not question His benevolence toward you. It is called for and expected. Children don't have to do anything to qualify for their parent's love.

Getting back to my present point, though God is Daddy, He must have full control of your life. He will discipline His children. This means if you are in a position for Him to work in your life, He will let you go through some very hard things. If you continue in the faith, He will be with you and sometimes even carry you until due season for reaping. At that time, you will be ecstatic at the results that you will enjoy because you did it His way.

Heb: 12:5-14: And ye have forgotten the exhortation which speaketh unto you as unto children, My son, despise not thou the chastening of the Lord, nor faint when thou art rebuked of him: 6: For whom the Lord loveth he chasteneth, and scourgeth every son whom he receiveth. 7: If ye endure chastening, God dealeth with you as with sons; for what son is he whom the father chasteneth not? 8: But if ye be without chastisement, whereof all are partakers, then are ye bastards, and not sons. 9: Furthermore we have had fathers of our flesh which corrected us, and we gave them reverence: shall we not much rather be in subjection unto the Father of spirits, and live?

10: For they verily for a few days chastened us after their own pleasure; but he for our profit, that we might be partakers of his holiness. 11: Now no chastening for the present seemeth to be joyous, but grievous: nevertheless afterward it yieldeth the peaceable fruit of righteousness unto them which are exercised thereby. 12: Wherefore lift up the hands which hang down, and the feeble knees; 13: And make straight paths for your feet, lest that which is lame be turned out of the way; but let it rather be healed. 14: Follow peace with all men, and holiness, without which no man shall see the Lord:

All Christians need piety and reverence toward God the Father. It makes surrender and submission much easier and it brings the believer to a place where they can trust Him with everything because they know He loves them and they know that He is in charge. As one submits to His will and way, their reverence for Him and confidence in Him will grow. That's where a person enters that spacious place spoken of in Job 36:16. All the assurances and promises in the word come to pass after the believer trusts and obeys Him.

I'm saying that once a Christian learns to revere God and His word, it becomes much easier to let Him be God in their entire life. When godly piety and reverence matures in the believer's life they can truly say, "Your will be done," in extremely difficult times and remain in the Sabbath rest – waiting and expecting God to handle things. The believer's job during that time is to do what Jesus would do in each situation that arises.

Most Christians seem to have the attitude of that song above – "Won't you please hurry up, Lord, cause I just can't take this anymore." Many Christians have succumbed to doing things the world's way because God didn't hurry up and fix their problem. They never understood what I'm trying to get across here – that the Christian must make up their mind to do things God's way no matter what. Never should they take things into their own hands. Why? Because of the great and precious promises.

2Pet: 1:3-13: According as his divine power hath given unto us all things that pertain unto life and godliness, through the knowledge of him that hath called us to glory and virtue: 4: Whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious promises: that by these ye might be partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust. 5: And beside this, giving all diligence, add to your faith virtue; and to virtue knowledge; 6: And to knowledge temperance; and to temperance patience; and to patience godliness; 7: And to godliness brotherly kindness; and to brotherly kindness charity. 8: For if these things be in you, and abound, they make you that ye shall neither be barren nor unfruitful in the knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ. 9: But he that lacketh these things is blind, and cannot see afar off, and hath forgotten that he was purged from his old sins. 10: Wherefore the rather, brethren, give diligence to make your calling and election sure: for if ye do these things, ye shall never fall: 11: For so an entrance shall be ministered unto you abundantly into the everlasting kingdom of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ. 12: Wherefore I will not be negligent to put you always in remembrance of these things, though ye know them, and be established in the present truth. 13: Yea, I think it meet, as long as I am in this tabernacle, to stir you up by putting you in remembrance;

Gal: 6:9: And let us not be weary in well doing: for in due season we shall reap, if we faint not.

Eph: 3:16-20: That he would grant you, according to the riches of his glory, to be strengthened with might by his Spirit in the inner man; 17: That Christ may dwell in your hearts by faith; that ye, being rooted and grounded in love, 18: May be able to comprehend with all saints what is the breadth, and length, and depth, and height; 19: And to know the love of Christ, which passeth knowledge, that ye might be filled with all the fulness of God. 20: Now unto him that is able to do exceeding abundantly above all that we ask or think, according to the power that worketh in us,

To summarize: If you remain in the carnal attitude that tries to tell God what to do and how to do it, you will eventually become disillusioned and faint. But if you will practice piety toward Him and submit to chastisement and allow Him to be God and Father in your life, you will reap an abundant harvest that will be far above what you can ask or think.

Again balance is what's needed here. God is the loving Father and the Christian's daddy, but He is also Almighty God and we should tremble at His word.

Isa: 66:1-2: Thus saith the LORD, The heaven is my throne, and the earth is my footstool: where is the house that ye build unto me? and where is the place of my rest? 2: For all those things hath mine hand made, and those things have been, saith the LORD: but to this man will I look, even to him that is poor and of a contrite spirit, and trembleth at my word.

The Word is balanced. In it you learn all about God's love and benevolence and you learn that He expects to be revered and obeyed.

Do You Have On the Wedding Garment?

The way the Gospel is handled by many today, even in churches, makes the way that leads to life broad. For this

reason I felt impelled to do this article.

You are not going to come to the place of judgment and after living contrary to the Gospel, say, I was standing on Rom: 10:9-10. It won't work. Why? Because Jesus already told us that we are to live by every word of God.

Rom: 10:9-10: That if thou shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and shalt believe in thine heart that God hath raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved. 10: For with the heart man believeth unto righteousness; and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation.

Matt: 4:4: But he answered and said, It is written, Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God.

And Jesus said: Matt: 7:13: Enter ye in at the strait gate: for wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many there be which go in thereat: 14: Because strait is the gate, and narrow is the way, which leadeth unto life, and few there be that find it.

Matt: 20-23: Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them. 21: Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven. 22: Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderful works? 23: And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity.

Matt: 22:1-14: And Jesus answered and spake unto them again by parables, and said, 2: The kingdom of heaven is like unto a certain king, which made a marriage for his son, 3: And sent forth his servants to call them that were bidden to the wedding: and they would not come. 4: Again, he sent forth other servants, saying, Tell them which are bidden, Behold, I have prepared my dinner: my oxen and my fatlings are killed, and all things are ready: come unto the marriage. 5: But they made light of it, and went their ways, one to his farm, another to his merchandise: 6: And the remnant took his servants, and entreated them spitefully, and slew them. 7: But when the king heard thereof, he was wroth: and he sent forth his armies, and destroyed those murderers, and burned up their city. 8: Then saith he to his servants, The wedding is ready, but they which were bidden were not worthy. 9: Go ye therefore into the highways, and as many as ye shall find, bid to the marriage. 10: So those servants went out into the highways, and gathered together all as many as they found, both bad and good: and the wedding was furnished with guests. 11: And when the king came in to see the guests, he saw there a man which had not on a wedding garment: **12: And he saith unto him, Friend, how camest thou in hither not having a wedding garment? And he was speechless. 13: Then said the king to the servants, Bind him hand and foot, and take him away, and cast him into outer darkness; there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth. 14: For many are called, but few are chosen.**

This warning is for all of those who have been living under an illusion due to mishandling of the Gospel. When you slip into the wedding feast in the same slippery manner that you have lived your life, Jesus will discover you and say: Friend, how camest thou in hither not having a wedding garment?

Put on the Lord Jesus Christ.

Rom: 13:14: But put ye on the Lord Jesus Christ, and make not provision for the flesh, to fulfil the lusts thereof.

Eph: 4:17-24: This I say therefore, and testify in the Lord, that ye henceforth walk not as other Gentiles walk, in the vanity of their mind, 18: Having the understanding darkened, being alienated from the life of God through the ignorance that is in them, because of the blindness of their heart: 19: Who being past feeling have given themselves over unto lasciviousness, to work all uncleanness with greediness. 20: But ye have not so learned Christ; 21: If so be that ye have heard him, and have been taught by him, as the truth is in Jesus: 22: That ye put off concerning the former conversation the old man, which is corrupt according to the deceitful lusts; 23: And be renewed in the spirit of your mind; 24: And that ye put on the new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness.

Biblical Prayers for the Saints

For as the rain cometh down, and the now from heaven, and returneth not thither, but watereth the earth, and maketh it bring forth and bud, that it may give seed to the sower, and bread to the eater: So shall My word be that goeth forth out of My mouth: it shall not return unto Me void, but it shall accomplish that which I please, and it shall prosper in the thing whereto I sent it. Isa: 55:10

Pray that the saints would hearken diligently to the Lord so that He can give us the rain, the first rain and the latter rain, that thou mayest gather in thy corn, and thy wine, and thine oil. (Apply spiritually) Deut: 11:13-14

Pray that the saints would rend their hearts and not their garments and that God would restore what the canker worm and other crop destroyers have eaten away. Joel: 2:13

Pray that the saints would fear God and receive instruction so their dwelling should not be cut off. Zeph: 3:7

Pray that the saints would seek the kingdom of God and His righteousness. Matt: 6:33

Pray that the saints would obey the teachings of Jesus so that their house would be built upon the rock. Matt: 7:26-27

Pray that the saints would take heed what they hear and that they would spend much time learning the truth. Mk: 4:24

Pray that the saints would love the Lord their God with all their heart, soul, mind and body. Mk: 12:30

Pray that God would make ready a people prepared for Him. Lk: 1:17

Pray for the saints that they may be accounted worthy to escape all these things that shall come to pass, and to stand before the Son of man. Lk: 21:36

Pray for the saints that their faith would fail not. Lk: 22:32

Pray that God would open Christians' understanding that they might understand all the scripture. Lk: 24:32

Pray that the saints would continue in Jesus' word and would know the truth and the truth would set them free. Jn: 8:31

Pray that the saints will abide in the vine and bear much good fruit. Jn: 15:4

Pray that the saints would be conformed into the image of Jesus. Rom: 8:29

Pray that the saints would put on the Lord Jesus Christ and make no provision for the flesh. (Carnal nature) Rom: 13:14

Pray that the saints would do all for the glory of God. 1Cor: 10:31

Pray that the saints would be delivered from the enemies of the cross. 2Cor: 1:10-11

Pray that the saints would not henceforth live unto themselves, but unto Him which died for them, and rose again. 2Cor: 5:15

Pray that the saints would use the weapons of our warfare and tear down every stronghold that exalts itself against the knowledge of God and bring into captivity every vain imagination. 2Cor: 10:4-5

Pray for the saint's perfection. (all around strengthening and perfecting of souls– Amp.V.) 2Cor: 13:9

Pray that the saints would travail in birth again until Christ be formed in the new Christians. Gal: 4:19

Pray that the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, may give unto the saints the spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of Him: The eyes of their understanding being en-lightened; that they might know what is the hope of His calling, and what the riches of the glory of His inheritance in the saints, and what is the exceeding greatness of His power to us-ward who believe, according to the working of His mighty power, which He wrought in Christ, when He raised Him from the dead, and set Him at His own right hand in the heavenly places, . . . Eph: 1:17-20

Pray that Christ may dwell in the saints' hearts by faith; that they, being rooted and grounded in love, may be able to comprehend with all saints what is the breadth, and length, and depth, and height; and to know the love of Christ, which passeth knowledge, that they might be filled with all the fullness of God. Eph: 3:17-19

Pray that the saints would walk worthy of the vocation to which they were called. Eph: 4:1

Pray for the saints that they would speak the truth in love, and therefore grow up into Him in all things, which is the head, even Christ: Eph: 4:15

Pray that the saints would put on the full armour of God and stand in the evil day. And having done all to stand. Eph: 6:11

Pray that the saints would have boldness to utter God's word and that doors of utterance would be opened for them. Eph: 6:19

Pray for the saints that they would stand perfect in all of the will of God. Col: 4:12

Pray for the saints that they would prosper and be in health, even as their soul prospers 3Jn: 2

Pray that the saints would be hot for the Lord and not lukewarm. Rev: 3:15-16

Getting Your Prayers Answered

What God has to say about it:

Isa: 66:2: . . . but to this man will I look, even to him that is poor and of a contrite spirit, and trembleth at My word.

Ps: 66:18: If I regard iniquity in my heart, the Lord will not hear me:

Matt: 9:29: Then touched He their eyes, saying, according to you faith be it unto you.

Jn: 9:31: Now we know that God heareth not sinners: but if any man be a worshipper of God, and doeth His will, him He heareth.

Jn: 15:10, 16: If ye keep My commandments, ye shall abide in My love; even as I have kept My Father's commandments, and abide in His love. Vs 16: Ye have not chosen Me, but I have chosen you, and ordained you, that ye should go and bring forth fruit, and that your fruit should remain: that whatsoever ye shall ask of the Father in My name, He may give it you.

Acts: 14:9: The same heard Paul speak: who steadfastly beholding him, and perceiving that he had faith to be healed, said with a loud voice . . .

Heb: 10:36: For ye have need of patience, that, after ye have done the will of God, ye might receive the promise.

1Pet: 3:7: Likewise, ye husbands, dwell with them according to knowledge, giving honour unto the wife, as unto the weaker vessel, and as being heirs together of the grace of life; that your prayers be not hindered.

Jas: 1:6-7: But let him ask in faith, nothing wavering. For he that wavereth is like a wave of the sea driven with the wind and tossed. For let not that man think that he shall receive anything of the Lord. A double-minded man is unstable in all his ways.

Jas: 4:2-3: Ye lust, and have not: ye kill, and desire to have, and cannot obtain: ye fight and war, yet ye have not, because ye ask not. Ye ask, and receive not, because ye ask amiss, that ye may consume it upon your own lusts.

Jas: 5:14-15: Is any sick among you? Let him call for the elders of the church; and let them pray over him, anointing him with oil in the name of the Lord: and the prayer of faith shall save the sick, and the Lord shall raise him up; and if he have committed sins, they shall be forgiven him.

1Jn: 3:22: And whatsoever we ask, we receive of Him, because we keep His commandments, and do those things that are pleasing in His sight.

1Jn: 5:14-15: and this is the confidence that we have in him, that, if we ask any thing according to His will, He heareth us: and if we know that He hears us, whatsoever we ask, we know that we have the petitions that we desired of him.

Biblical Prayers for the Church and America

Prayer #1 of intercession for the church:

Ps: 80:1-3: Give ear, O Shepherd of Israel, thou that leadest Joseph like a flock; thou that dwellest between the cherubims, shine forth. 2: Before Ephraim and Benjamin and Manasseh stir up thy strength, and come and save us. 3: Turn us again, O God, and cause thy face to shine; and we shall be saved.

4-11: O LORD God of hosts, how long wilt thou be angry against the prayer of thy people? 5: Thou feedest them with the bread of tears; and givest them tears to drink in great measure. 6: Thou makest us a strife unto our neighbours: and our enemies laugh among themselves. 7: Turn us again, O God of hosts, and cause thy face to shine; and we shall be saved. 8: Thou hast brought a vine out of Egypt: thou hast cast out the heathen, and planted it. 9: Thou preparedst room before it, and didst cause it to take deep root, and it filled the land. 10: The hills were covered with the shadow of it, and the boughs thereof were like the goodly cedars. 11: She sent out her boughs unto the sea, and her branches unto the river.

12-19: Why hast thou then broken down her hedges, so that all they which pass by the way do pluck her? 13: The boar out of the wood doth waste it, and the wild beast of the field doth devour it. 14: Return, we beseech thee, O God of hosts: look down from heaven, and behold, and visit this vine; 15: And the vineyard which thy right hand hath planted, and the branch that thou madest strong for thyself. 16: It is burned with fire, it is cut down: they perish at the rebuke of thy countenance. 17: Let thy hand be upon the man of thy right hand, upon the son of man whom thou madest strong for thyself. 18: So will not we go back from thee: quicken us, and we will call upon thy name. 19: Turn us again, O LORD God of hosts, cause thy face to shine; and we shall be saved.

(What does God answer? Remember that His word is the same, yesterday, today, and forever.)

Ps. 81:6-11: I removed his shoulder from the burden: his hands were delivered from the pots. 7: Thou calledst in trouble, and I delivered thee; I answered thee in the secret place of thunder: I proved thee at the waters of Meribah. Selah. 8: Hear, O my people, and I will testify unto thee: O Israel, if thou wilt hearken unto me; 9: There shall no strange god be in thee; neither shalt thou worship any strange god. 10: I am the LORD thy God, which brought thee out of the land of Egypt: open thy mouth wide, and I will fill it. 11: But my people would not hearken to my voice; and Israel would none of me.

12-16: So I gave them up unto their own hearts' lust: and they walked in their own counsels. 13: Oh that my people had hearkened unto me, and Israel had walked in my ways! 14: I should soon have subdued their enemies, and turned my hand against their adversaries. 15: The haters of the LORD should have submitted themselves unto him: but their time should have endured for ever. 16: He should have fed them also with the finest of the wheat: and with honey out of the rock should I have satisfied thee.

Prayer #2 of intercession for the church:

Isa: 63:15-19: Look down from heaven, and behold from the habitation of thy holiness and of thy glory: where is thy zeal and thy strength, the sounding of thy bowels and of thy mercies toward me? are they restrained? 16: Doubtless thou art our father, though Abraham be ignorant of us, and Israel acknowledge us not: thou, O LORD, art our father, our redeemer; thy name is from everlasting. 17: O LORD, why hast thou made us to err from thy ways, and hardened our heart from thy fear? Return for thy servants' sake, the tribes of thine inheritance. 18: The people of thy holiness have possessed it but a little while: our adversaries have trodden down thy sanctuary. 19: We are thine: thou never barest rule over them; they were not called by thy name.

Isa: 64:1-4: Oh that thou wouldest rend the heavens, that thou wouldest come down, that the mountains might flow down at thy presence, 2: As when the melting fire burneth, the fire causeth the waters to boil, to make thy name known to thine adversaries, that the nations may tremble at thy presence! 3: When thou didst terrible things which we looked not for, thou camest down, the mountains flowed down at thy presence. 4: For since the beginning of the world men have not heard, nor perceived by the ear, neither hath the eye seen, O God, beside thee, what he hath prepared for him that waiteth for him.

(We know that God did rend the heavens and come down when He sent Jesus. So what's wrong? God empowered the church. Do you see the nations trembling? Is God able to fully show His mighty power through the church? Notice how this empowerment comes about. It's from waiting in His presence after having made our petition. Waiting until He pours out His Spirit. It will never come as long as we think we can handle things our way – as long as we think we can evangelize and help people mature by our own method and means, God will not pour out His Spirit upon us.)

5-7: Thou meetest him that rejoiceth and worketh righteousness, those that remember thee in thy ways: behold, thou art wroth; for we have sinned: in those is continuance, and we shall be saved. 6: But we are all as an unclean thing, and all our righteousnesses are as filthy rags; and we all do fade as a leaf; and our iniquities, like the wind, have taken us away. 7: And there is none that calleth upon thy name, that stirreth up himself to take hold of thee: for thou hast hid thy face from us, and hast consumed us, because of our iniquities.

(Isaiah knew when to humble himself before the Lord. He says God meets those who rejoice in Him and strive to do what is right in His sight. For us it is those that remember the God of the New Testament. He then declares their condition and acknowledges their unfruitfulness. He knows what they have to do. It's the same thing that people are called to do in the New Testament – call on the name of the Lord. Stir ourselves up to take hold of God.)

8-12: But now, O LORD, thou art our father; we are the clay, and thou our potter; and we all are the work of thy hand. 9: Be not wroth very sore, O LORD, neither remember iniquity for ever: behold, see, we beseech thee, we are all thy people. 10: Thy holy cities are a wilderness, Zion is a wilderness, Jerusalem a desolation. 11: Our holy and our beautiful house, where our fathers praised thee, is burned up with fire: and all our pleasant things are laid waste. 12: Wilt thou refrain thyself for these things, O LORD? wilt thou hold thy peace, and afflict us very sore?

(He then acknowledges that we are but the clay and He is the potter and when we get way off course only He can bring us back to Him. He cries out that Zion is barren and asks God to intervene – undertake – fix us again. I firmly believe that we are not going to be a glorious church until we as one body confess our condition and cry out for His rescue. Isaiah's prayer is a wonderful pattern for the church to follow for we need renewal.)

Prayer #3 of intercession for the church:

Dan: 9:4-6: And I prayed unto the LORD my God, and made my confession, and said, O Lord, the great and dreadful God, keeping the covenant and mercy to them that love him, and to them that keep his commandments; 5: We have sinned, and have committed iniquity, and have done wickedly, and have rebelled, even by departing from thy precepts and from thy judgments: 6: Neither have we hearkened unto thy servants the prophets, which spake in thy name to our kings, our princes, and our fathers, and to all the people of the land.

(First comes confession and spelling out the sin and trouble. He acknowledges that God has kept His end of the covenant and the trouble is on our end. Then he acknowledges that God's people have sinned, rebelled, and departed from God's ways. And on top of that even when a preacher preached or wrote about our problem, no one was willing to listen.)

7-13: O Lord, righteousness belongeth unto thee, but unto us confusion of faces, as at this day; to the men of Judah, and to the inhabitants of Jerusalem, and unto all Israel, that are near, and that are far off, through all the countries whither thou hast driven them, because of their trespass that they have trespassed against thee. 8: O Lord, to us belongeth confusion of face, to our kings, to our princes, and to our fathers, because we have sinned against thee. 9: To the Lord our God belong mercies and forgivenesses, though we have rebelled against him; 10: Neither have we obeyed the voice of the LORD our God, to walk in his laws, which he set before us by his servants the prophets. 11: Yea, all Israel have transgressed thy law, even by departing, that they might not obey thy voice; therefore the curse is poured upon us, and the oath that is written in the law of Moses the servant of God, because we have sinned against him. 12: And he hath confirmed his words, which he spake against us, and against our judges that judged us, by bringing upon us a great evil: for under the whole heaven hath not been done as hath been done upon Jerusalem. 13: As it is written in the law of Moses, all this evil is come upon us: yet made we not our prayer before the LORD our God, that we might turn from our iniquities, and understand thy truth.

(Let me put this in simpler terms. Daniel confesses that God is righteous and we are in this derision and confusion due to our own sin. He then petitions God to bring the people to true repentance – the kind James talked about in Jas: 4:8-10 – so that they can receive truth and understanding again. People cannot accept truth and understanding until their heart is in a state of repentance – until they are sorry for their sins, their rebellion, and their willfulness.

After the church repents and receive renewal, she can pray the prayers called for so that God will restore America. America was a Christian nation and she will never be well again until she is restored to her former state of dependence upon God.)

If Your Armor is Not of God

If your armor is not of God, it is not good.

Armor:

- 1. Covering worn to protect the body against weapons
- 2. Any defensive or protective covering, as on animals or plants, or the metal plating on warships, warplanes, etc.
- 3. The armored forces and vehicles of an army; tanks, reconnaissance cars, etc.
- 4. A quality or condition serving as a defense difficult to penetrate

The 4th definition best serves in this case because we are referring to spiritual or soul armor.

The correct spiritual armor as described in Ephesians 6:

Eph: 6:10: Finally, my brethren, be strong in the Lord, and in the power of his might. 11: Put on the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil. 12: For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places.

Let's see what God's armor does:

First it protects us from powers and rulers of darkness of this world – spiritual wickedness in high places. We all have evil days – days or times when we are under attack from the enemy of our souls. The soul is the mind, the will, and the emotions. That's the area where Satan was able to defeat Adam and Eve and all their offspring, except Jesus.

Why couldn't the powers of darkness defeat Jesus? Because He walked by the spirit and not by the flesh. One must be spiritually alive to have power and understanding in their spirit. Adam and Eve were spiritually alive before the fall, but they died when they disobeyed God and all their offspring was born spiritually dead until Jesus. He was born of the Spirit of God so that He could be born spiritually alive. When one repents and asks Jesus into their heart, they are 'born again' of the Spirit of God and are made spiritually alive.

This is why James says in Jas: 1:21: Wherefore lay apart all filthiness and superfluity of naughtiness, and receive with meekness the engrafted word, which is able to save your souls.

“The battle is in the mind” is a true statement, but actually it is in the soul, because the will and the emotions respond to the mind and greatly affect its decisions.

Having established those truths, we will go on to see what God's armor does.

Eph: 6:14: Wherefore take unto you the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to withstand in the evil day, and having done all, to stand. 14: Stand therefore, having your loins girt about with truth, and having on the breast-plate of righteousness;

First notice that after you've put on the full armor, you are to stand. That means do not move away from the hope of the gospel. Do not be moved away from what you are trusting and believing God for.

The first piece of armor is body armor. Have your loins girt about with the truth. The loins are the part in the hip area – all those vital organs. The stomach – kidneys, liver, bladder, and intestines are vital organs, they must be

protected and only the whole truth written in God's word can do the job.

Spiritually speaking, these organs, digest the spiritual food that you eat, sort it out, and deliver it to where it is to go – is it waste or energy? Put another way, do the things you feed your soul give you power to do right, power to stand against the wiles of the enemy or are you starving your spirit and feeding the carnal nature which is at enmity with God and vulnerable to the devil? Have your loins girt about with the truth.

The second piece of armor is more body armor, the breastplate which protects the rib cage, lungs, heart, esophagus, etc. Righteousness will protect these vital organs, nothing else.

Eph: 6:15-16: And your feet shod with the preparation of the gospel of peace. So our spiritual boots will enable us to walk, having peace within and seeking peace with others. 16: Above all, taking the shield of faith, where-with ye shall be able to quench all the fiery darts of the wicked.

We need a shield. The enemy is always firing fiery dart at us – saying things like: “Did God really say He would do that?” Or, “If you really are a child of God...” Or anything he can suggest that will cast doubt on what you are believing God about. He is always ready to puff us up or to shoot us down. Faith in the written word of God is the only defense against his onslaught.

Eph: 6:17: And take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God:

The helmet protects you from the fear of death. It protects you from a lot of the enemy's mind games. As for the sword, those who have on God's armor are ready to use the word of God either in self-defense or in aggressively attacking the lies of the devil.

Eph: 6:18: Praying always with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit, and watching thereunto with all perseverance and supplication for all saints;

If a person is not relying on God's armor and weapons, they will use their own. If they are fighting against the lies of devil, they will end up defeated. They will flee or faint. If they are fighting a spouse, teacher, fellow laborer, sibling and such they may use intimidation tactics such as scowling, growling, barking, and or biting. Many people use lying to get out of trouble. People use cheating and sneaking to get what they want.

Think about it, there is no good armor except God's armor. His way of dealing with mankind is to love them no matter what – just make sure that you love them with His kind of love – whatever the situation calls for. There's

tough love where firmness and insisting that the party do right is called for. There is killing them with kindness when it's a case of the other party wanting a conflict. There is loving them anyway – love takes no account of suffered wrongs. Love never fails.

What weapons are you using? And who are you fighting? And what are you fighting for? And did you know that there is a war going on between the spirit and the soul – whose side are you on?

How to Enter the Promised Land

Apply these scriptures in Deuteronomy spiritually and you will have God's instructions on how to enter the promise land.

1:8: Behold, I have set the land before you: go in and possess the land which the LORD swore unto your fathers, Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, to give unto them and to their seed after them.

1:13: Take you wise men, and understanding, and known among your tribes, and I will make them rulers over you.

1:25: And they took of the fruit of the land in their hands, and brought it down unto us, and brought us word again, and said, It is a good land which the LORD our God doth give us.

1:28-32: Whither shall we go up? Our brethren have discouraged our heart, saying, The people are greater and taller than we; the cities are great and walled up to heaven; and moreover we have seen the sons of the Anakims there. Then I said unto you, Dread not, neither be afraid of them. The LORD your God which goeth before you, he shall fight for you, according to all that he did for you in Egypt before your eyes; And in the wilderness, where thou hast seen how that the LORD thy God bare thee, as a man doth bear his son, in all the way that ye went, until ye came into this place. Yet in this thing ye did not believe the LORD your God,

1:36: Save Caleb the son of Jephunneh; he shall see it, and to him will I give the land that he hath trodden upon, and to his children, because he hath wholly followed the LORD.

1:41-46: Then ye answered and said unto me, We have sinned against the LORD, we will go up and fight, according to all that the LORD our God commanded us. And when ye had girded on every man his weapons of war, ye were ready to go up into the hill. And the LORD said unto me, Say unto them, Go not up, neither fight; for I am not among you; lest ye be smitten before your enemies. So I spake unto you; and ye would not hear, but rebelled against the commandment of the LORD, and went presumptuously up into the hill. And the Amorites, which dwelt in that mountain, came out against you, and chased you, as bees do, and destroyed you in Seir, even unto Hormah. And ye returned and wept before the LORD; but the LORD would not hearken to your voice, nor give ear unto you. So ye abode in Kadesh many days, according unto the days that ye abode there.

2:7: For the LORD thy God hath blessed thee in all the works of thy hand: he knoweth thy walking through this great wilderness: these forty years the LORD thy God hath been with thee; thou hast lacked nothing.

2:25: This day will I begin to put the dread of thee and the fear of thee upon the nations that are under the whole heaven, who shall hear report of thee, and shall tremble, and be in anguish because of thee.

4:1-10: Now therefore hearken, O Israel, unto the statutes and unto the judgments, which I teach you, for to do them, that ye may live, and go in and possess the land which the LORD God of your fathers giveth you. Ye shall not add unto the word which I command you, neither shall ye diminish ought from it, that ye may keep the commandments of the LORD your God which I command you. Your eyes have seen what the LORD did because of Baal-peor: for all the men that followed Baal-peor, the LORD thy God hath destroyed them from among you. But ye that did cleave unto the LORD your God are alive every one of you this day. Behold, I have taught you statutes and judgments, even as the LORD my God commanded me, that ye should do so in the land whither ye go to possess it. Keep therefore and do them; for this is your wisdom and your understanding in the sight of the nations, which shall hear all these statutes, and say, Surely this great nation is a wise and understanding people. For what nation is there so great, who hath God so nigh unto them, as the LORD our God is in all things that we call upon him for? And what nation is there so great, that hath statutes and judgments so righteous as all this law, which I set before you this day? Only take heed to thyself, and keep thy soul diligently, lest thou forget the things which thine eyes have seen, and lest they depart from thy heart all the days of thy life: but teach them thy sons, and thy sons' sons; Specially the day that thou stoodest before the LORD thy God in Horeb, when the LORD said unto me, Gather me the people together, and I will make them hear my words, that they may learn to fear me all the days that they shall live upon the earth, and that they may teach their children.

4:15-20: Take ye therefore good heed unto yourselves; for ye saw no manner of similitude on the day that the LORD spake unto you in Horeb out of the midst of the fire: Lest ye corrupt yourselves, and make you a graven image, the similitude of any figure, the likeness of male or female, The likeness of any beast that is on the earth, the likeness of any winged fowl that flieth in the air, The likeness of any thing that creepeth on the ground, the likeness of any fish that is in the waters beneath the earth: And lest thou lift up thine eyes unto heaven, and when

thou seest the sun, and the moon, and the stars, even all the host of heaven, shouldest be driven to worship them, and serve them, which the LORD thy God hath divided unto all nations under the whole heaven. But the LORD hath taken you, and brought you forth out of the iron furnace, even out of Egypt, to be unto him a people of inheritance, as ye are this day.

4:23-31: Take heed unto yourselves, lest ye forget the covenant of the LORD your God, which he made with you, and make you a graven image, or the likeness of any thing, which the LORD thy God hath forbidden thee. For the LORD thy God is a consuming fire, even a jealous God. When thou shalt beget children, and children's children, and ye shall have remained long in the land, and shall corrupt yourselves, and make a graven image, or the likeness of any thing, and shall do evil in the sight of the LORD thy God, to provoke him to anger: I call heaven and earth to witness against you this day, that ye shall soon utterly perish from off the land whereunto ye go over Jordan to possess it; ye shall not prolong your days upon it, but shall utterly be destroyed. And the LORD shall scatter you among the nations, and ye shall be left few in number among the heathen, whither the LORD shall lead you. And there ye shall serve gods, the work of men's hands, wood and stone, which neither see, nor hear, nor eat, nor smell. But if from thence thou shalt seek the LORD thy God, thou shalt find him, if thou seek him with all thy heart and with all thy soul. When thou art in tribulation, and all these things are come upon thee, even in the latter days, if thou turn to the LORD thy God, and shalt be obedient unto his voice; (For the LORD thy God is a merciful God;) he will not forsake thee, neither destroy thee, nor forget the covenant of thy fathers which he sware unto them.

4:32-35: For ask now of the days that are past, which were before thee, since the day that God created man upon the earth, and ask from the one side of heaven unto the other, whether there hath been any such thing as this great thing is, or hath been heard like it? Did ever people hear the voice of God speaking out of the midst of the fire, as thou hast heard, and live? Or hath God assayed to go and take him a nation from the midst of another nation, by temptations, by signs, and by wonders, and by war, and by a mighty hand, and by a stretched out arm, and by great terrors, according to all that the LORD your God did for you in Egypt before your eyes? Unto thee it was shewed, that thou mightest know that the LORD he is God; there is none else beside him.

4:40-41: Thou shalt keep therefore his statutes, and his commandments, which I command thee this day, that it may go well with thee, and with thy children after thee, and that thou mayest prolong thy days upon the earth, which the LORD thy God giveth thee, for ever.

5:14: But the seventh day is the sabbath of the LORD thy God: in it thou shalt not do any work, thou, nor thy son, nor thy daughter, nor thy manservant, nor thy maidservant, nor thine ox, nor thine ass, nor any of thy cattle, nor thy stranger that is within thy gates; that thy manservant and thy maidservant may rest as well as thou. [For the church pertaining to taking the land, he is talking about the seventh day Sabbath rest where by we rest from our labors and are led and empowered by his Spirit.]

5:29: O that there were such an heart in them, that they would fear me, and keep all my commandments always, that it might be well with them, and with their children for ever!

6:4-13: Hear, O Israel: The LORD our God is one LORD: And thou shalt love the LORD thy God with all thine heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy might. And these words, which I command thee this day, shall be in thine heart: And thou shalt teach them diligently unto thy children, and shalt talk of them when thou sittest in thine house, and when thou walkest by the way, and when thou liest down, and when thou risest up. And thou shalt bind them for a sign upon thine hand, and they shall be as frontlets between thine eyes. And thou shalt write them upon the posts of thy house, and on thy gates. And it shall be, when the LORD thy God shall have brought thee into the land which he swore unto thy fathers, to Abraham, to Isaac, and to Jacob, to give thee great and goodly cities, which thou buildedst not, And houses full of all good things, which thou filledst not, and wells digged, which thou diggedst not, vineyards and olive trees, which thou plantedst not; when thou shalt have eaten and be full; Then beware lest thou forget the LORD, which brought thee forth out of the land of Egypt, from the house of bondage. Thou shalt fear the LORD thy God, and serve him, and shalt swear by his name.

7:2-6: And when the LORD thy God shall deliver them before thee; thou shalt smite them, and utterly destroy them; thou shalt make no covenant with them, nor shew mercy unto them: Neither shalt thou make marriages with them; thy daughter thou shalt not give unto his son, nor his daughter shalt thou take unto thy son. For they will turn away thy son from following me, that they may serve other gods: so will the anger of the LORD be kindled against you, and destroy thee suddenly. But thus shall ye deal with them; ye shall destroy their altars, and break down their images, and cut down their groves, and burn their graven images with fire. For thou art an holy people unto the LORD thy God: the LORD thy God hath chosen thee to be a special people unto himself, above all people that are upon the face of the earth.

8:3-8: And he humbled thee, and suffered thee to hunger, and fed thee with manna, which thou knewest not, neither did thy fathers know; that he might make thee know that man doth not live by bread only, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of the LORD doth man live. Thy raiment waxed not old upon thee, neither did thy foot swell, these forty years. Thou shalt also consider in thine heart, that, as a man chasteneth his son, so the LORD thy God chasteneth thee. Therefore thou shalt keep the commandments of the LORD thy God, to walk in his ways, and to fear him. For the LORD thy God bringeth thee into a good land, a land of brooks of water, of fountains and depths that spring out of valleys and hills; A land of wheat, and barley, and vines, and fig trees, and pomegranates; a land of oil olive, and honey;

10:12-21: And now, Israel, what doth the LORD thy God require of thee, but to fear the LORD thy God, to walk in all his ways, and to love him, and to serve the LORD thy God with all thy heart and with all thy soul, To keep the commandments of the LORD, and his statutes, which I command thee this day for thy good? Behold, the heaven and the heaven of heavens is the LORD's thy God, the earth also, with all that therein is. Only the LORD had a delight in thy fathers to love them, and he chose their seed after them, even you above all people, as it is this day. Circumcise therefore the foreskin of your heart, and be no more stiffnecked. For the LORD your God is

God of gods, and Lord of lords, a great God, a mighty, and a terrible, which regardeth not persons, nor taketh reward: He doth execute the judgment of the fatherless and widow, and loveth the stranger, in giving him food and raiment. Love ye therefore the stranger: for ye were strangers in the land of Egypt. Thou shalt fear the LORD thy God; him shalt thou serve, and to him shalt thou cleave, and swear by his name. He is thy praise, and he is thy God, that hath done for thee these great and terrible things, which thine eyes have seen.

11:18-28: Therefore shall ye lay up these my words in your heart and in your soul, and bind them for a sign upon your hand, that they may be as frontlets between your eyes. And ye shall teach them your children, speaking of them when thou sittest in thine house, and when thou walkest by the way, when thou liest down, and when thou risest up. And thou shalt write them upon the door posts of thine house, and upon thy gates: That your days may be multiplied, and the days of your children, in the land which the LORD sware unto your fathers to give them, as the days of heaven upon the earth. For if ye shall diligently keep all these commandments which I command you, to do them, to love the LORD your God, to walk in all his ways, and to cleave unto him; Then will the LORD drive out all these nations from before you, and ye shall possess greater nations and mightier than yourselves. Every place whereon the soles of your feet shall tread shall be yours: from the wilderness and Lebanon, from the river, the river Euphrates, even unto the uttermost sea shall your coast be. There shall no man be able to stand before you: for the LORD your God shall lay the fear of you and the dread of you upon all the land that ye shall tread upon, as he hath said unto you. Behold, I set before you this day a blessing and a curse; A blessing, if ye obey the commandments of the LORD your God, which I command you this day: And a curse, if ye will not obey the commandments of the LORD your God, but turn aside out of the way which I command you this day, to go after other gods, which ye have not known.

12:5-7: But unto the place which the LORD your God shall choose out of all your tribes to put his name there, even unto his habitation shall ye seek, and thither thou shalt come: And thither ye shall bring your burnt offerings, and your sacrifices, and your tithes, and heave offerings of your hand, and your vows, and your freewill offerings, and the firstlings of your herds and of your flocks: And there ye shall eat before the LORD your God, and ye shall rejoice in all that ye put your hand unto, ye and your households, wherein the LORD thy God hath blessed thee.

13:1-11: If there arise among you a prophet, or a dreamer of dreams, and giveth thee a sign or a wonder, And the sign or the wonder come to pass, whereof he spake unto thee, saying, Let us go after other gods, which thou hast not known, and let us serve them; Thou shalt not hearken unto the words of that prophet, or that dreamer of dreams: for the LORD your God proveth you, to know whether ye love the LORD your God with all your heart and with all your soul. Ye shall walk after the LORD your God, and fear him, and keep his commandments, and obey his voice, and ye shall serve him, and cleave unto him. And that prophet, or that dreamer of dreams, shall be put to death; because he hath spoken to turn you away from the LORD your God, which brought you out of the land of Egypt, and redeemed you out of the house of bondage, to thrust thee out of the way which the LORD thy God commanded thee to walk in. So shalt thou put the evil away from the midst of thee. If thy brother, the son of thy mother, or thy son, or thy daughter, or the wife of thy bosom, or thy friend, which is as thine own soul, entice thee secretly, saying, Let us go and serve other gods, which thou hast not known, thou, nor thy

fathers; Namely, of the gods of the people which are round about you, nigh unto thee, or far off from thee, from the one end of the earth even unto the other end of the earth; Thou shalt not consent unto him, nor hearken unto him; neither shall thine eye pity him, neither shalt thou spare, neither shalt thou conceal him: But thou shalt surely kill him; thine hand shall be first upon him to put him to death, and afterwards the hand of all the people. And thou shalt stone him with stones, that he die; because he hath sought to thrust thee away from the LORD thy God, which brought thee out of the land of Egypt, from the house of bondage. And all Israel shall hear, and fear, and shall do no more any such wickedness as this is among you. (As Christians, we don't kill the false prophet – we confront them and if that doesn't shut up the false leading, then we publicly renounce his/her teaching – we kill the lie not the person.)

16:11-12: And thou shalt rejoice before the LORD thy God, thou, and thy son, and thy daughter, and thy manservant, and thy maidservant, and the Levite that is within thy gates, and the stranger, and the fatherless, and the widow, that are among you, in the place which the LORD thy God hath chosen to place his name there. And thou shalt remember that thou wast a bondman in Egypt: and thou shalt observe and do these statutes.

16:20: That which is altogether just shalt thou follow, that thou mayest live, and inherit the land which the LORD thy God giveth thee.

To those who lead God's people into the Promise Land:

Josh: 1:2-7: Moses my servant is dead; now therefore arise, go over this Jordan, thou, and all this people, unto the land which I do give to them, even to the children of Israel. Every place that the sole of your foot shall tread upon, that have I given unto you, as I said unto Moses. From the wilderness and this Lebanon even unto the great river, the river Euphrates, all the land of the Hittites, and unto the great sea toward the going down of the sun, shall be your coast. There shall not any man be able to stand before thee all the days of thy life: as I was with Moses, so I will be with thee: I will not fail thee, nor forsake thee. Be strong and of a good courage: for unto this people shalt thou divide for an inheritance the land, which I sware unto their fathers to give them. Only be thou strong and very courageous, that thou mayest observe to do according to all the law, which Moses my servant commanded thee: turn not from it to the right hand or to the left, that thou mayest prosper whithersoever thou goest.

8-9: This book of the law shall not depart out of thy mouth; but thou shalt meditate therein day and night, that thou mayest observe to do according to all that is written therein: for then thou shalt make thy way prosperous, and then thou shalt have good success. Have not I commanded thee? Be strong and of a good courage; be not afraid, neither be thou dismayed: for the LORD thy God is with thee whithersoever thou goest.

Is Not This the Fast That I Have Chosen?

This is to anyone who is crying out for more evidence of God's power and blessing on themselves and/or on their church. If the above is your question – below is your answer.

Isa: 58:1-3: Cry aloud, spare not, lift up thy voice like a trumpet, and shew my people their transgression, and the house of Jacob their sins. Yet they seek me daily, and delight to know my ways, as a nation that did righteousness, and forsook not the ordinance of their God: they ask of me the ordinances of justice; they take delight in approaching to God. Wherefore have we fasted, say they, and thou seest not? wherefore have we afflicted our soul, and thou takest no knowledge?

3-6: Behold, in the day of your fast ye find pleasure, and exact all your labours. Behold, ye fast for strife and debate, and to smite with the fist of wickedness: ye shall not fast as ye do this day, to make your voice to be heard on high. Is it such a fast that I have chosen? a day for a man to afflict his soul? is it to bow down his head as a bulrush, and to spread sackcloth and ashes under him? wilt thou call this a fast, and an acceptable day to the LORD?

God finds fault with the above kinds of fasts.

Do you act the way you feel like acting instead of behaving as God has taught His people to behave? And yet you ask God why He doesn't respond better or why He doesn't bless your church, if that is what your question is pertaining to?

Do you or your church pick a day or a season to fast the way you choose to do rather than fasting the way God has instructed His people to do?

Here is what God says about it:

Isa: 58:6-7: Is not this the fast that I have chosen? to loose the bands of wickedness, to undo the heavy burdens, and to let the oppressed go free, and that ye break every yoke? Is it not to deal thy bread to the hungry, and that

thou bring the poor that are cast out to thy house? when thou seest the naked, that thou cover him; and that thou hide not thyself from thine own flesh?

God plainly describes the fast that He wants from His people and it is the very thing Jesus said to do – take up the cross and follow Him.

This is what fasting the way God prescribes will accomplish:

Isa: 61:1-6: The Spirit of the Lord GOD is upon me; because the LORD hath anointed me to preach good tidings unto the meek; he hath sent me to bind up the brokenhearted, to proclaim liberty to the captives, and the opening of the prison to them that are bound; To proclaim the acceptable year of the LORD, and the day of vengeance of our God; to comfort all that mourn; To appoint unto them that mourn in Zion, to give unto them beauty for ashes, the oil of joy for mourning, the garment of praise for the spirit of heaviness; that they might be called trees of righteousness, the planting of the LORD, that he might be glorified. And they shall build the old wastes, they shall raise up the former desolations, and they shall repair the waste cities, the desolations of many generations. And strangers shall stand and feed your flocks, and the sons of the alien shall be your plowmen and your vine-dressers. But ye shall be named the Priests of the LORD: men shall call you the Ministers of our God: ye shall eat the riches of the Gentiles, and in their glory shall ye boast yourselves.

Rev: 1:6: And hath made us kings and priests unto God and his Father; to him be glory and dominion for ever and ever. Amen.

Rev: 5:10: And hast made us unto our God kings and priests: and we shall reign on the earth.

Let us look at what else God says will happen when His people do the fast that He has chosen.

Isa: 58:8-14: Then shall thy light break forth as the morning, and thine health shall spring forth speedily: and thy righteousness shall go before thee; the glory of the LORD shall be thy reward. Then shalt thou call, and the LORD shall answer; thou shalt cry, and he shall say, Here I am. If thou take away from the midst of thee the yoke, the putting forth of the finger, and speaking vanity; And if thou draw out thy soul to the hungry, and satisfy the afflicted soul; then shall thy light rise in obscurity, and thy darkness be as the noonday: And the LORD shall guide thee continually, and satisfy thy soul in drought, and make fat thy bones: and thou shalt be like a watered garden, and like a spring of water, whose waters fail not. And they that shall be of thee shall build the old waste places: thou shalt raise up the foundations of many generations; and thou shalt be called, The repairer of the breach, The restorer of paths to dwell in. If thou turn away thy foot from the sabbath, from doing thy pleasure on my holy day; and call the sabbath a delight, the holy of the LORD, honourable; and shalt honour

him, not doing thine own ways, nor finding thine own pleasure, nor speaking thine own words: Then shalt thou delight thyself in the LORD; and I will cause thee to ride upon the high places of the earth, and feed thee with the heritage of Jacob thy father: for the mouth of the LORD hath spoken it.

Sure looks to me as if this is the answer to the whole problem.

It's the Engrafted Word That Saves Your Soul

The soul is the mind, the will, and the emotions. When one comes to Jesus and asked to be saved often what they mean is that they want God to wipe out their sins so they can go to heaven instead of hell.

But God's plan is to wash away their sins, make them 'born again' of His Spirit, give them a new heart, and through the engrafted word renew their mind, save their soul, and change them into a new creation – a born-again child of the living God.

Deut: 30:6: And the LORD thy God will circumcise thine heart, and the heart of thy seed, to love the LORD thy God with all thine heart, and with all thy soul, that thou mayest live.

Jas: 1:21-25: Wherefore lay apart all filthiness and superfluity of naughtiness, and receive with meekness the engrafted word, which is able to save your souls. 22: But be ye doers of the word, and not hearers only, deceiving your own selves. 23: For if any be a hearer of the word, and not a doer, he is like unto a man beholding his natural face in a glass: 24: For he beholdeth himself, and goeth his way, and straightway forgetteth what manner of man he was. 25: But whoso looketh into the perfect law of liberty, and continueth therein, he being not a forgetful hearer, but a doer of the work, this man shall be blessed in his deed.

Here are some more good scriptures talking about the soul and how to stay out of trouble.

Deut: 4:9: Only take heed to thyself, and keep thy soul diligently, lest thou forget the things which thine eyes have seen, and lest they depart from thy heart all the days of thy life: but teach them thy sons, and thy sons' sons;

Deut: 4:29: But if from thence thou shalt seek the LORD thy God, thou shalt find him, if thou seek him with all thy heart and with all thy soul.

Deut: 10:12: And now, Israel, what doth the LORD thy God require of thee, but to fear the LORD thy God, to walk in all his ways, and to love him, and to serve the LORD thy God with all thy heart and with all thy soul,

Deut: 11:13: And it shall come to pass, if ye shall hearken diligently unto my commandments which I command you this day, to love the LORD your God, and to serve him with all your heart and with all your soul,

Ps: 19:7: The law of the LORD is perfect, converting the soul: the testimony of the LORD is sure, making wise the simple.

Ps: 23:3: He restoreth my soul: he leadeth me in the paths of righteousness for his name's sake.

Ps: 42:1: As the hart panteth after the water brooks, so panteth my soul after thee, O God.

Ps: 103:1: Bless the LORD, O my soul: and all that is within me, bless his holy name.

Ps: 119:167: My soul hath kept thy testimonies; and I love them exceedingly.

Ps: 124:7: Our soul is escaped as a bird out of the snare of the fowlers: the snare is broken, and we are escaped.

Prov: 2:9-10: Then shalt thou understand righteousness, and judgment, and equity; yea, every good path. 10: When wisdom entereth into thine heart, and knowledge is pleasant unto thy soul;

Prov: 3:21-22: My son, let not them depart from thine eyes: keep sound wisdom and discretion: So shall they be life unto thy soul, and grace to thy neck.

Prov: 8:36: But he that sinneth against me wrongeth his own soul: all they that hate me (Wisdom) love death.

Prov: 15:32: He that refuseth instruction despiseth his own soul: but he that heareth reproof getteth

understanding.

Prov: 16:17: The highway of the upright is to depart from evil: he that keepeth his way preserveth his soul.

Prov: 18:7: A fool's mouth is his destruction, and his lips are the snare of his soul.

Prov: 19:16: He that keepeth the commandment keepeth his own soul; but he that despiseth his ways shall die.

Mt: 10:28: And fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul: but rather fear him which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell.

Mt: 16:26: For what is a man profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul?

1Thes: 5:23: And the very God of peace sanctify you wholly; and I pray God your whole spirit and soul and body be preserved blameless unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.

Heb: 4:12: For the word of God is quick, and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joints and marrow, and is a discernor of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

1Pet: 2:11: Dearly beloved, I beseech you as strangers and pilgrims, abstain from fleshly lusts, which war against the soul;

3Jn: 1:2: Beloved, I wish above all things that thou mayest prosper and be in health, even as thy soul prospereth.

Prepare You the Way of the Lord

Lk: 3:1-6: Now in the fifteenth year of the reign of Tiberius Caesar, Pontius Pilate being governor of Judaea, and Herod being tetrarch of Galilee, and his brother Philip tetrarch of Ituraea and of the region of Trachonitis, and Lysanias the tetrarch of Abilene, 2: Annas and Caiaphas being the high priests, the word of God came unto John the son of Zacharias in the wilderness. 3: And he came into all the country about Jordan, preaching the baptism of repentance for the remission of sins; 4: As it is written in the book of the words of Esaias the prophet, saying, The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight. 5: Every valley shall be filled, and every mountain and hill shall be brought low; and the crooked shall be made straight, and the rough ways shall be made smooth; 6: And all flesh shall see the salvation of God.

1Jn: 5:12: He that hath the Son hath life; and he that hath not the Son of God hath not life.

Why did John the Baptist have to come and prepare the way of the Lord? In order for people to receive the Savior, they must repent of their ways and turn to God.

How did John say one must prepare? They must repent and get their hearts prepared to receive.

When kings travel in backward countries, say by camel train or even elephant, laborers go before the train and pick out the large stones and pebbles, and smoothes out the path or road so that the VIPs will have as pleasant a ride as can be had.

To prepare the way of the Lord, the Word must be preached or read and the hearer's heart must be brought into the right condition for the entry of the Lord. I am making a point of this because some have missed the point that in order for one to receive the Savior and in order for that one's soul to be saved, they must get the obstructions out of the way. This is done by sincerely wanting God's salvation and by sincerely turning to Him.

I am not talking about living right and then asking God to accept you. We are accepted in the beloved. I am talking about truly wanting to be saved from sin and death – rather than just wanting to escape hell or live in heaven.

This turning involves giving up the idea that one can do their own thing and still be in a position to have what God promised to give. He can only enter into covenant with you if you will receive Him as your authority. If you are not willing to receive Him as your Father and God, He cannot save your soul and Jesus cannot be your Savior.

Prepare ye the way of the Lord!

Romans 6-8

THE CONCEPT: Rom: 6:1-10: What shall we say then? Shall we continue in sin, that grace may abound? 2: God forbid. How shall we, that are dead to sin, live any longer therein? 3: Know ye not, that so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized into his death? 4: Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death: that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life. 5: For if we have been planted together in the likeness of his death, we shall be also in the likeness of his resurrection: 6: Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with him, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin. 7: For he that is dead is freed from sin. 8: Now if we be dead with Christ, we believe that we shall also live with him: 9: Knowing that Christ being raised from the dead dieth no more; death hath no more dominion over him. 10: For in that he died, he died unto sin once: but in that he liveth, he liveth unto God.

(This is God's plan of salvation. If the gospel that is going around does not include this concept it is not "The gospel".)

THE REALITY: God planned for mankind to be RECONCILED back to Him as His children through the sacrifice of His Son. Jesus' innocent blood cleanses the receiver from sin and guilt.

THE DELIVERANCE from sin comes through entering into Jesus' crucifixion and resurrection as described above.)

11-14: Likewise reckon ye also yourselves to be dead indeed unto sin, but alive unto God through Jesus Christ our Lord. 12: Let not sin therefore reign in your mortal body, that ye should obey it in the lusts thereof. 13: Neither yield ye your members as instruments of unrighteousness unto sin: but yield yourselves unto God, as those that are alive from the dead, and your members as instruments of righteousness unto God. 14: For sin shall not have dominion over you: for ye are not under the law, but under grace.

(HOW TO RESIST TEMPTATION: Knowing – reckon – let not – neither yield. To be under the law was to be under pressure – one strike and you were out. But under grace, the pressure is release – you fight until you win.)

15-16: What then? shall we sin, because we are not under the law, but under grace? God forbid. 16: Know ye not, that to whom ye yield yourselves servants to obey, his servants ye are to whom ye obey; whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousness?

(ADDED STRENGTH in the battle beside, knowing, reckoning, letting not, and not yielding is knowing that if you yield to sin, you are a servant of sin. You have given it your power. That's what Adam and Eve did. They yielded their power of choice to Satan and their carnal nature. Jesus, on the other hand, did not yield. He maintained His power over sin, flesh, and the devil. He did it the way that is describe here. So if you reckon yourself to be His servant instead of sin's servant, He will be your way, your truth, and your life and you will end up triumphant.)

THE GAME PLAN: 17-20: But God be thanked, that ye were the servants of sin, but ye have obeyed from the heart that form of doctrine which was delivered you. 18: Being then made free from sin, ye became the servants of righteousness. 19: I speak after the manner of men because of the infirmity of your flesh: for as ye have yielded your members servants to uncleanness and to iniquity unto iniquity; even so now yield your members servants to righteousness unto holiness. 20: For when ye were the servants of sin, ye were free from righteousness.

21-23: What fruit had ye then in those things whereof ye are now ashamed? for the end of those things is death. 22: But now being made free from sin, and become servants to God, ye have your fruit unto holiness, and the end everlasting life. 23: For the wages of sin is death; but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord.

(REMEMBER: The WAGES paid for sin is eternal death. The FRUIT of becoming servants of God is holiness, the end being eternal life.)

Romans 7 talks about the law of sin and death – it lays out the “born again” person’s dilemma. They want to and plan to do what is right, but often find themselves doing the opposite. The chapter ends with the question: 24: O wretched man that I am! who shall deliver me from the body of this death? 25: I thank God through Jesus Christ our Lord. So then with the mind I myself serve the law of God; but with the flesh the law of sin.

Remember that the original text was not separated into chapters. We are about to discover the deliverance for the chapter 7 dilemma.)

Rom: 8:1: There is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus, who walk not after the

flesh, but after the Spirit.

(How does the believer overcome the weakness described in chapter 7? By walking after his born again spirit and not after his fallen carnal nature. There is a choice to be made each time a challenge comes. Will you follow your regenerated heart or will you follow your lower nature?)

REMEMBER THIS: Life is about choices. And God is about goodness.)

2-7: For the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus hath made me free from the law of sin and death. 3: For what the law could not do, in that it was weak through the flesh, God sending his own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, and for sin, condemned sin in the flesh: 4: That the righteousness of the law might be fulfilled in us, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit. 5: For they that are after the flesh do mind the things of the flesh; but they that are after the Spirit the things of the Spirit. 6: For to be carnally minded is death; but to be spiritually minded is life and peace. 7: Because the carnal mind is enmity against God: for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be.

(Did you get that? THE LAW OF THE SPIRIT OF LIFE has set you free from the law of sin and death. Notice Vs 5 – are you following the flesh? If you are “born again” stop! God has enabled you to be spiritually-minded – you do not have to please your lower nature, you can please God now. The repentance and turning experience was to make the way smooth and straight for the King. It gives God the opportunity to give the receiver a new heart – a heart to please Him.)

8-14: So then they that are in the flesh cannot please God. 9: But ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his. 10: And if Christ be in you, the body is dead because of sin; but the Spirit is life because of righteousness. 11: But if the Spirit of him that raised up Jesus from the dead dwell in you, he that raised up Christ from the dead shall also quicken your mortal bodies by his Spirit that dwelleth in you. 12: Therefore, brethren, we are debtors, not to the flesh, to live after the flesh. 13: For if ye live after the flesh, ye shall die: but if ye through the Spirit do mortify the deeds of the body, ye shall live. 14: For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God.

(This is part of the gospel. This is the part where God saves you from sin and death. This is as true as any of the rest of it. Born again people are not to be in the flesh, but in the Spirit. What does Vs 13 say? It also is part of the gospel. If you live after the flesh, you shall die. MORTIFY the deeds of the body. Who are the sons of God that all creation is waiting, with groanings, to have manifest? Those that are led by the Spirit of God.)

15-17: For ye have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear; but ye have received the Spirit of adoption,

whereby we cry, Abba, Father. 16: The Spirit itself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God: 17: And if children, then heirs; heirs of God, and joint-heirs with Christ; if so be that we suffer with him, that we may be also glorified together.

(This is one place many people get tripped up. They feel a relationship and affection for God and think, therefore, that this scripture confirms their salvation. They think they have a spirit that cries, Abba Father! But if they are not being led by the Spirit, they do not have this relationship with God for the spirit that cries, Abba Father is a spirit of reverence and submission as well as a spirit of relationship and affection.

Somehow the whole chapter does not convince them of their error because the church has belabored the love and grace side and neglected the necessity of living a life of obedience to the Father. Yet it is that life of obedience that God wanted to give to us for our sake that we may live and not die.)

18: For I reckon that the sufferings of this present time are not worthy to be compared with the glory which shall be revealed in us.

(This is the suffering of the Saints: to resist the devil, draw nigh unto God. It is to walk by the Spirit and deny our carnal nature. It calls for long-suffering, patience, and endurance.)

19-22: For the earnest expectation of the creature waiteth for the manifestation of the sons of God. 20: For the creature was made subject to vanity, not willingly, but by reason of him who hath subjected the same in hope, 21: Because the creature itself also shall be delivered from the bondage of corruption into the glorious liberty of the children of God. 22: For we know that the whole creation groaneth and travaileth in pain together until now.

(This talks about God putting spiritual man in an earthen body. His intent was not so much humbling man, but His intent was for spiritual man to bring the carnal nature into submission to the spirit. These are the sons who will rule with Jesus – those who have subdued their carnal nature. God wanted His sons who rule the earth to be part of it – hence the earthen body. He also wanted His sons who rule to be one spirit with Him – hence the putting the flesh under.

When this happens and Jesus comes to rule – nature will be restored, including the extinct animals. Jesus' resurrection guarantees this. All of God's creation – every species – will be resurrected and the sons of God – those who suffer with Him – will rule with Him.)

Who Can Receive from God?

There are qualifications that must be met for all the promises of God. Do you qualify? If you are in Christ Jesus, you qualify for all of God's promises.

2Cor: 1:19-20: For the Son of God, Jesus Christ, who was preached among you by us, even by me and Silvanus and Timotheus, was not yea and nay, but in him was yea. 20: For all the promises of God in him are yea, and in him Amen, unto the glory of God by us. (The stipulation is that the person abides in Him.)

2Cor: 5:17: Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new.

2Cor: 5:21: For he hath made him to be sin for us, who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of God in him.

Gal: 3:29: And if ye be Christ's, then are ye Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise.

How does one abide in Him?

Jn: 15:4: Abide in me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, except it abide in the vine; no more can ye, except ye abide in me.

Jn: 15:6: If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered; and men gather them, and cast them into the fire, and they are burned.

Jn: 15:7: If ye abide in me, and my words abide in you, ye shall ask what ye will, and it shall be done unto you.

Jn: 15:10: If ye keep my commandments, ye shall abide in my love; even as I have kept my Father's commandments, and abide in his love.

1Jn: 2:24: Let that therefore abide in you, which ye have heard from the beginning. If that which ye have heard from the beginning shall remain in you, ye also shall continue in the Son, and in the Father.

1Jn: 2:28: And now, little children, abide in him; that, when he shall appear, we may have confidence, and not be ashamed before him at his coming.

Broken down individually as to how to qualify, it goes like this:

How to avoid being mastered by sin:

Gen: 4:7: If thou doest well, shalt thou not be accepted? and if thou doest not well, sin lieth at the door. And unto thee shall be his desire, and thou shalt rule over him. (One must follow the rules in order to win.)

How to be safe in the flood (There's a flood of false doctrine and heresy out there.):

Gen: 7:1: And the LORD said unto Noah, Come thou and all thy house into the ark; for thee have I seen righteous before me in this generation. (Noah had to believe God, obey God, build the ark and get in it in order to be saved.)

How to remain part of God's great nation:

Gen: 12: Now the LORD had said unto Abram, Get thee out of thy country, and from thy kindred, and from thy father's house, unto a land that I will shew thee: 2: And I will make of thee a great nation, and I will bless thee, and make thy name great; and thou shalt be a blessing: 3: And I will bless them that bless thee, and curse him that curseth thee: and in thee shall all families of the earth be blessed. (Abraham had to believe God and leave his own country in order to receive the promised blessing.)

How to find the Lord:

Deut: 4:29: But if from thence thou shalt seek the LORD thy God, thou shalt find him, if thou seek him with all thy heart and with all thy soul.

Prov: 2:3-5: Yea, if thou criest after knowledge, and liftest up thy voice for understanding; 4: If thou seekest her as silver, and searchest for her as for hid treasures; 5: Then shalt thou understand the fear of the LORD, and find the knowledge of God.

How to insure an increase:

Deut: 15:4-5: Save when there shall be no poor among you; for the LORD shall greatly bless thee in the land which the LORD thy God giveth thee for an inheritance to possess it: Only if thou carefully hearken unto the voice of the LORD thy God, to observe to do all these commandments which I command thee this day.

Prov: 3: 9-10: Honour the LORD with thy substance, and with the firstfruits of all thine increase: 10: So shall thy barns be filled with plenty, and thy presses shall burst out with new wine.

Prov: 11:25: The liberal soul (generous giver) shall be made fat: and he that watereth shall be watered also himself.

Mal: 3:10-12: Bring ye all the tithes into the storehouse, that there may be meat in mine house, and prove me now herewith, saith the LORD of hosts, if I will not open you the windows of heaven, and pour you out a blessing, that there shall not be room enough to receive it. 11: And I will rebuke the devourer for your sakes, and he shall not destroy the fruits of your ground; neither shall your vine cast her fruit before the time in the field, saith the LORD of hosts. 12: And all nations shall call you blessed: for ye shall be a delightsome land, saith the LORD of hosts.

Matt: 6:33: But seek ye first the kingdom of God, and his righteousness; and all these things shall be added unto you.

Lk: 6:38: Give, and it shall be given unto you; good measure, pressed down, and shaken together, and running over, shall men give into your bosom. For with the same measure that ye mete withal it shall be measured to you again.

How to be the head and not the tail:

Deut: 28:1-2: And it shall come to pass, if thou shalt hearken diligently unto the voice of the LORD thy God, to observe and to do all his commandments which I command thee this day, that the LORD thy God will set thee on high above all nations of the earth: 2: And all these blessings shall come on thee, and overtake thee, if thou

shalt hearken unto the voice of the LORD thy God.

How to have good success:

Josh: 1:8: This book of the law shall not depart out of thy mouth; but thou shalt meditate therein day and night, that thou mayest observe to do according to all that is written therein: for then thou shalt make thy way prosperous, and then thou shalt have good success.

Ps: 1:1-3: Blessed is the man that walketh not in the counsel of the ungodly, nor standeth in the way of sinners, nor sitteth in the seat of the scornful. 2: But his delight is in the law of the LORD; and in his law doth he meditate day and night. 3: And he shall be like a tree planted by the rivers of water, that bringeth forth his fruit in his season; his leaf also shall not wither; and whatsoever he doeth shall prosper.

Ezra: 9:22: . . . The hand of our God is upon all them for good that seek him; but his power and his wrath is against all them that forsake him.

How to have God as your champion:

2Chron: 16:9: For the eyes of the LORD run to and fro throughout the whole earth, to shew himself strong in the behalf of them whose heart is perfect toward him.

Ps: 91:14-16: Because he hath set his love upon me, therefore will I deliver him: I will set him on high, because he hath known my name. 15: He shall call upon me, and I will answer him: I will be with him in trouble; I will deliver him, and honour him. 16: With long life will I satisfy him, and shew him my salvation.

Prov: 20:22: Say not thou, I will recompense evil; but wait on the LORD, and he shall save thee.

How to abide in God's mercy and truth:

Ps: 25:10: All the paths of the LORD are mercy and truth unto such as keep his covenant and his testimonies.

Ps: 32:10: Many sorrows shall be to the wicked: but he that trusteth in the LORD, mercy shall compass him about.

How to reap all the benefits of the covenant:

Ps: 25:14: The secret of the LORD is with them that fear him; and he will shew them his covenant.

Ps: 50:15-16: And call upon me in the day of trouble: I will deliver thee, and thou shalt glorify me. 16: But unto the wicked God saith, What hast thou to do to declare my statutes, or that thou shouldest take my covenant in thy mouth?

How to be sure of protection and deliverance:

Ps: 34:7: The angel of the LORD encampeth round about them that fear him, and delivereth them.

Ps: 97:10: Ye that love the LORD, hate evil: he preserveth the souls of his saints; he delivereth them out of the hand of the wicked.

Prov: 18:10: The name of the LORD is a strong tower: the righteous runneth into it, and is safe.

Isa: 8:13-14: Sanctify the LORD of hosts himself; and let him be your fear, and let him be your dread. 14: And he shall be for a sanctuary;

How to have your needs met:

Ps: 34:9: O fear the LORD, ye his saints: for there is no want to them that fear him.

Ps: 37:3: Trust in the LORD, and do good; so shalt thou dwell in the land, and verily thou shalt be fed.

Ps: 37:18-19: The LORD knoweth the days of the upright: and their inheritance shall be for ever. 19: They shall not be ashamed in the evil time: and in the days of famine they shall be satisfied.

Prov: 13:21: Evil pursueth sinners: but to the righteous good shall be repayed.

Matt: 7:7: Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you:

How to have your prayers answered:

Ps: 34:15: The eyes of the LORD are upon the righteous, and his ears are open unto their cry.

Ps: 34:19: Many are the afflictions of the righteous: but the LORD delivereth him out of them all.

Ps: 84:11: For the LORD God is a sun and shield: the LORD will give grace and glory: no good thing will he withhold from them that walk uprightly.

Isa: 66:2: For all those things hath mine hand made, and those things have been, saith the LORD: but to this man will I look, even to him that is poor and of a contrite spirit, and trembleth at my word.

Matt: 18:19: Again I say unto you, That if two of you shall agree on earth as touching any thing that they shall ask, it shall be done for them of my Father which is in heaven.

Jn: 15:7: If ye abide in me, and my words abide in you, ye shall ask what ye will, and it shall be done unto you.

1Jn: 5:11-15: And this is the record, that God hath given to us eternal life, and this life is in his Son. 12: He that hath the Son hath life; and he that hath not the Son of God hath not life. 13: These things have I written unto you that believe on the name of the Son of God; that ye may know that ye have eternal life, and that ye may believe on the name of the Son of God. And this is the confidence that we have in him, that, if we ask any thing according to his will, he heareth us: 15: And if we know that he hear us, whatsoever we ask, we know that we have the petitions that we desired of him.

How to have your heart's desires:

Ps: 37:4: Delight thyself also in the LORD; and he shall give thee the desires of thine heart.

Ps: 37:5: Commit thy way unto the LORD; trust also in him; and he shall bring it to pass.

How to be sure of victory:

Ps: 37:23-24: The steps of a good man are ordered by the LORD: and he delighteth in his way. 24: Though he fall, he shall not be utterly cast down: for the LORD upholdeth him with his hand.

Ps: 128:1-2: Blessed is every one that feareth the LORD; that walketh in his ways. 2: For thou shalt eat the labour of thine hands: happy shalt thou be, and it shall be well with thee.

Prov: 13:13: Whoso despiseth the word shall be destroyed: but he that feareth the commandment shall be rewarded.

Isa: 30:15: For thus saith the Lord GOD, the Holy One of Israel; In returning and rest shall ye be saved; in quietness and in confidence shall be your strength: and ye would not.

Mal: 4:1-2: For, behold, the day cometh, that shall burn as an oven; and all the proud, yea, and all that do wickedly, shall be stubble: and the day that cometh shall burn them up, saith the LORD of hosts, that it shall leave them neither root nor branch. 2: But unto you that fear my name shall the Sun of righteousness arise with healing in his wings; and ye shall go forth, and grow up as calves of the stall.

Gal: 6:9: And let us not be weary in well doing: for in due season we shall reap, if we faint not.

Jas: 4:6: But he giveth more grace. Wherefore he saith, God resisteth the proud, but giveth grace unto the humble.

Who does God consider a saint?

Ps: 50:5: Gather my saints together unto me; those that have made a covenant with me by sacrifice. (The sacrifice for Christians is to take up the cross daily.)

Matt: 10:32: Whosoever therefore shall confess me before men, him will I confess also before my Father which is in heaven.

Rom: 4:21-24: And being fully persuaded that, what he had promised, he was able also to perform. 22: And therefore it was imputed to him for righteousness. 23: Now it was not written for his sake alone, that it was imputed to him; 24: But for us also, to whom it shall be imputed, if we believe on him that raised up Jesus our Lord from the dead;

How to have wisdom:

Prov: 2:7-9: He layeth up sound wisdom for the righteous: he is a buckler to them that walk uprightly. 8: He keepeth the paths of judgment, and preserveth the way of his saints. 9: Then shalt thou understand righteousness, and judgment, and equity; yea, every good path.

Prov: 3:6-8: In all thy ways acknowledge him, and he shall direct thy paths. 7: Be not wise in thine own eyes: fear the LORD, and depart from evil. 8: It shall be health to thy navel, and marrow to thy bones.

Prov: 3:21-23: My son, let not them depart from thine eyes: keep sound wisdom and discretion: 22: So shall they be life unto thy soul, and grace to thy neck. 23: Then shalt thou walk in thy way safely, and thy foot shall not stumble.

Prov: 4:5-9: Get wisdom, get understanding: forget it not; neither decline from the words of my mouth. 6: Forsake her not, and she shall preserve thee: love her, and she shall keep thee. 7: Wisdom is the principal thing; therefore get wisdom: and with all thy getting get understanding. 8: Exalt her, and she shall promote thee: she shall bring thee to honour, when thou dost embrace her. 9: She shall give to thine head an ornament of grace: a crown of glory shall she deliver to thee.

Prov: 16:20: He that handleth a matter wisely shall find good: and whoso trusteth in the LORD, happy is he.

How to have perfect peace:

Isa: 26:3: Thou wilt keep him in perfect peace, whose mind is stayed on thee: because he trusteth in thee.

How to have your strength renewed:

Isa: 40:31: But they that wait upon the LORD shall renew their strength; they shall mount up with wings as eagles; they shall run, and not be weary; and they shall walk, and not faint.

Blessed are those in these categories:

Matt: 5:3: Blessed are the poor in spirit: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.

4: Blessed are they that mourn: for they shall be comforted.

5: Blessed are the meek: for they shall inherit the earth.

6: Blessed are they which do hunger and thirst after righteousness: for they shall be filled.

7: Blessed are the merciful: for they shall obtain mercy.

8: Blessed are the pure in heart: for they shall see God.

9: Blessed are the peacemakers: for they shall be called the children of God.

10: Blessed are they which are persecuted for righteousness' sake: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.

11: Blessed are ye, when men shall revile you, and persecute you, and shall say all manner of evil against you falsely, for my sake.

Matt: 10:22: And ye shall be hated of all men for my name's sake: but he that endureth to the end shall be saved.

Matt: 10:39: He that findeth his life shall lose it: and he that loseth his life for my sake shall find it.

Matt: 12:50: For whosoever shall do the will of my Father which is in heaven, the same is my brother, and sister, and mother.

Jn: 6:51: I am the living bread which came down from heaven: if any man eat of this bread, he shall live for ever:

How to abide in your salvation:

Jn: 8:24: I said therefore unto you, that ye shall die in your sins: for if ye believe not that I am he, ye shall die in your sins.

Jn: 10:9: I am the door: by me if any man enter in, he shall be saved, and shall go in and out, and find pasture.

Rom: 6:5: For if we have been planted together in the likeness of his death, we shall be also in the likeness of his resurrection:

Rom: 6:8: Now if we be dead with Christ, we believe that we shall also live with him:

Rom: 8:9-10: But ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his. And if Christ be in you, the body is dead because of sin; but the Spirit is life because of righteousness.

Rom: 8:11: But if the Spirit of him that raised up Jesus from the dead dwell in you, he that raised up Christ from the dead shall also quicken your mortal bodies by his Spirit that dwelleth in you.

Rom: 8:13: For if ye live after the flesh, ye shall die: but if ye through the Spirit do mortify the deeds of the body, ye shall live.

Rom: 8:17: And if children, then heirs; heirs of God, and joint-heirs with Christ; if so be that we suffer with him, that we may be also glorified together.

Rom: 10:9: That if thou shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and shalt believe in thine heart that God hath raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved.

Rom: 11:22: Behold therefore the goodness and severity of God: on them which fell, severity; but toward thee, goodness, if thou continue in his goodness: otherwise thou also shalt be cut off.

1Jn: 2:5: But *whoso keepeth his word*, in him verily is the love of God perfected: hereby know we that we are in him.

How to move mountains:

Matt: 17:20: And Jesus said unto them, Because of your unbelief: for verily I say unto you, If ye have faith as a grain of mustard seed, ye shall say unto this mountain, Remove hence to yonder place; and it shall remove; and nothing shall be impossible unto you.

Matt: 21:21: Jesus answered and said unto them, Verily I say unto you, If ye have faith, and doubt not, ye shall not only do this which is done to the fig tree, but also if ye shall say unto this mountain, Be thou removed, and be thou cast into the sea; it shall be done.

Mk: 9:23: Jesus said unto him, If thou canst believe, all things are possible to him that believeth.

How to know the truth:

Jn: 8:31-32: Then said Jesus to those Jews which believed on him, If ye continue in my word, then are ye my disciples indeed; 32: And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.

How to be an effective witness:

Jn: 12:24: Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except a corn of wheat fall into the ground and die, it abideth alone: but if it die, it bringeth forth much fruit.

Jn: 12:26: If any man serve me, let him follow me; and where I am, there shall also my servant be: if any man serve me, him will my Father honour.

Sowing Series

Sowing and Reaping

Gen: 2:15: And the LORD God took the man, and put him into the Garden of Eden to dress it and to keep it. (Cultivate it)

1Cor: 3:6-9: I have planted, Apollos watered; but God gave the increase. So then neither is he that planteth any thing, neither he that watereth; but God that giveth the increase. Now he that planteth and he that watereth are one: and every man shall receive his own reward according to his own labour. For we are labourers together with God: ye are God's husbandry, ye are God's building. (This scripture is to show that cultivation takes place in human hearts.)

Mk: 4:14-20: The sower soweth the word. And these are they by the way side, where the word is sown; but when they have heard, Satan cometh immediately, and taketh away the word that was sown in their hearts. And these are they likewise which are sown on stony ground; who, when they have heard the word, immediately receive it with gladness; and have no root in themselves, and so endure but for a time: afterward, when affliction or persecution ariseth for the word's sake, immediately they are offended. (This is the fainting referred to in Heb: 12:1-13.) And these are they which are sown among thorns; such as hear the word, and the cares of this world, and the deceitfulness of riches, and the lusts of other things entering in, choke the word, and it becometh unfruitful. And these are they which are sown on good ground; such as hear the word, and receive it, and bring forth fruit, some thirty fold, some sixty, and some an hundred.

Those on stony ground – without deep roots fainted. Mk: 4:17, using the Amplified Bible, sheds light on why they fell away. It says they immediately were offended – became displeased, indignant, and resentful and they stumbled and fell away. In Matt: 13:21 it says – when the trouble comes they were repelled and began to distrust and desert him whom they ought to trust and obey and they fell away.

How did those whose heart was good ground manage not to faint as the flighty one did?

Jas: 1:2-8: My brethren, count it all joy when ye fall into divers temptations; knowing this, that the trying of your

faith worketh patience. But let patience have her perfect work, that ye may be perfect and entire, wanting nothing. If any of you lack wisdom, let him ask of God, that giveth to all men liberally, and upbraideth not; and it shall be given him. But let him ask in faith, nothing wavering. For he that wavereth is like a wave of the sea driven with the wind and tossed. For let not that man think that he shall receive any thing of the Lord. A double minded man is unstable in all his ways.

The next category of believer's soil is okay, but they have other things growing in their heart besides the Word of God – there are weeds and thorns growing there too. The weeds and thorns (other priority interests) choked the Word and it bears no fruit. In the Amplified Bible, it says thorns are the cares and anxieties of the world, the distractions of the age, and the pleasures and delight and false glamour, and deceitfulness of riches, and the craving and passionate desire for other things and that they creep in and suffocate the Word, and it becomes fruitless.

In this parable Jesus covers everything that causes a church or person to be non-productive, stagnate, immature, and/or even dead – some seed fell on good ground and brought forth fruit, thirty, sixty, and even one hundred times as much as was sown – they are the ones who hear the Word, and receive and accept and welcome it and bear fruit with patience.

Why do we need all that much patience? Because we already read that Satan wants to snatch the Word away. And we already read that tests and trials come because of the Word sown. And we read about people letting other things come in and grow in their hearts and that these things choke the Word of God out.

The fourth reason is Mk: 4:26-28: And he said, So is the kingdom of God, as if a man should cast seed into the ground; and should sleep, and rise night and day, and the seed should spring and grow up, he knoweth not how. For the earth bringeth forth fruit of herself; first the blade, then the ear, after that the full corn in the ear. But when the fruit is brought forth, immediately he putteth in the sickle, because the harvest is come. (It takes quality time.) God assures us in Gal: 6:9, that we shall reap in due season, if we faint not.

Yet, another point is how much understanding the person has. In Matt: 13:23 in the Amp. V. it says the person with the good soil grasped and understood the Word and therefore yielded a good harvest. That ties in with what Jesus said next in Mk: 4:23-25: If any man have ears to hear, let him hear. And he said unto them, Take heed what ye hear: with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you: and unto you that hear shall more be given. For he that hath, to him shall be given: and he that hath not, from him shall be taken even that which he hath. The Amp. V. says, the measure of thought and study you give to the truth you hear will be the measure of virtue and knowledge that comes back to you and more besides will be given to you who hear. This brings me to the next point, take heed what you sow.

Gal: 6:7-9: Be not deceived; God is not mocked: for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap. For he that soweth to his flesh shall of the flesh reap corruption; but he that soweth to the Spirit shall of the Spirit reap life everlasting. And let us not be weary in well doing: for in due season we shall reap, if we faint not. (There's the warning about fainting again.)

In Prov: 4:20-23: we read: My son, attend to my words; incline thine ear unto my sayings. Let them not depart from thine eyes; keep them in the midst of thine heart. For they are life unto those that find them, and health to all their flesh. Keep thy heart with all diligence; for out of it are the issues of life.

In Rom: 13:14 we are told to clothe ourselves with the Lord Jesus Christ and make no provision for indulging the flesh – put a stop to thinking about the evil cravings of your physical nature-to gratify its desires (lusts).

This all has to do with sowing and reaping. If you sow soap operas, guess what you are going to reap. If you sow babbling 'Talk shows', you will become a babbler. Whatever you are feeding into your computer (mind) will come out. If you do not feed it in, it cannot come out – garbage in, garbage out.

If you have chosen to be Christ-like, you must feed much on the Word of God. If you want to overcome, you must feed much on the Word of God. If you want to be protected from lies and the liar, you must feed on the Word of God. If you want to know how to handle trouble when it comes, you must feed on the Word of God. If you want faith in God's promises, you must feed on the Word of God. If you want to know the truth, you must feed on the Word of God. If you want strength to avoid temptation, you must feed on the Word of God. If you want to have the right attitudes toward all situations so that you can avoid resentment, frustration, anger, pouting, and anxiety, you must feed on the Word of God.

I have presented the case for cultivation: Cultivate your gardens!

How to Sow the Word – Isa: 28

Isaiah 28:5-6: In that day shall the LORD of hosts be for a crown of glory, and for a diadem of beauty, unto the residue of his people, And for a spirit of judgment to him that sitteth in judgment, and for strength to them that

turn the battle to the gate.

(God is looking for the day when Christians truly are led by His Spirit and not by man's understanding of His Spirit. You can tell which one by the results. When God's Spirit is truly in operation the church will bear good fruit – she will be godly and effective – effective in what? Evangelization? Yes, but also the church needs to be effective as being light and salt – the culture will then see godly standards.)

7-8: But they also have erred through wine, and through strong drink are out of the way; the priest and the prophet have erred through strong drink, they are swallowed up of wine, they are out of the way through strong drink; they err in vision, they stumble in judgment. For all tables are full of vomit and filthiness, so that there is no place clean.

(The strong wine (has fermented or become stagnant) here is man's understanding and teaching of the Bible. The vomit is people teaching what they have learned from other teachers instead of learning from God and teaching the pure wine of truth.)

9-13: Whom shall he teach knowledge? And whom shall he make to understand doctrine? Them that are weaned from the milk, and drawn from the breasts. For precept must be upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line; here a little, and there a little: For with stammering lips and another tongue will he speak to this people. To whom he said, This is the rest wherewith ye may cause the weary to rest; and this is the refreshing: yet they would not hear. But the word of the LORD was unto them precept upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line; here a little, and there a little; that they might go, and fall backward, and be broken, and snared, and taken.

(God says He had some teachers, but the people would not hear the straight stuff, so teachers began teaching the stuff the people would tolerate or that they liked and so it was line upon line and precept upon precept until they fell away backward. That is teachers keep teaching the same things over and over and therefore the church never goes on with God, in fact over time she goes backward or loses ground – accepts lower standards.)

14-22: Wherefore hear the word of the LORD, ye scornful men, that rule this people which is in Jerusalem. Because ye have said, We have made a covenant with death, and with hell are we at agreement; when the overflowing scourge shall pass through, it shall not come unto us: for we have made lies our refuge, and under falsehood have we hid ourselves: Therefore thus saith the Lord GOD, Behold, I lay in Zion for a foundation a stone, a tried stone, a precious corner stone, a sure foundation: he that believeth shall not make haste. (flee in panic) Judgment also will I lay to the line, and righteousness to the plummet: and the hail shall sweep away the refuge of lies, and the waters shall overflow the hiding place. And your covenant with death shall be disannulled, and your agreement with hell shall not stand; when the overflowing scourge shall pass through, then ye shall be

trodden down by it. From the time that it goeth forth it shall take you: for morning by morning shall it pass over, by day and by night: and it shall be a vexation only to understand the report. For the bed is shorter than that a man can stretch himself on it: and the covering narrower than that he can wrap himself in it. For the LORD shall rise up as in mount Perazim, he shall be wroth as in the valley of Gibeon, that he may do his work, his strange work; and bring to pass his act, his strange act. Now therefore be ye not mockers, lest your bands be made strong: for I have heard from the Lord GOD of hosts a consumption, even determined upon the whole earth.

(God is speaking to those who have short-changed His Word, His teachings, and His precepts. Many people think they will be all right with God because of what Jesus has done for mankind. But they have been wrongly taught and have misunderstood what God was doing. Had they heeded the word – such as Isaiah 8:20: To the law and to the testimony: if they speak not according to this word, it is because there is no light in them. – they would not have been fooled. There are many scriptures that can be used to help a person understand why God sent Jesus. He sent Jesus to restore those who will accept His offer to spiritual life, not to mainly get sinners into heaven, but to give Christians the power to resist the devil. But the group that God is referring to in the above scripture is those who really didn't want to hear the hard stuff, they just wanted to get by – that was Cain's attitude and God told him in Genesis 4:7 Amp. V.: If you do well, will you not be accepted? And if you do not do well, sin crouches at your door; its desire is for you, but you must master it. The above group thought they could get away with a short-changed gospel and God says it can't be done. He calls that kind of believing a covenant with death. And He goes on to tell them that that is why they have a short-changed salvation. [Vs 20] The strange work that God is doing today is told about in 2Thess: 2:11-12: And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie: That they all might be damned who believed not the truth, but had pleasure in unrighteousness.)

(The last segment of Isaiah 28 is teaching about sowing and reaping.)

23: Give ye ear, and hear my voice; hearken, and hear my speech. Doth the plowman plow all day to sow? Doth he open and break the clods of his ground?

(God is saying to teachers and preachers the first thing you have to do to sow His word is the break up the fallow ground – prepare the ground. How? Using the Bible, show the class or congregation the love of God, the righteousness of God, the mandate of God, the inevitable results of disobeying God, and the inevitable results of obeying God. That, if taught rightly, should have the people eager to receive forgiveness and a new life.)

24-25: When he hath made plain the face thereof, doth he not cast abroad the fitches, and scatter the cummin; and cast in the principal wheat and the appointed barley and rie in their place?

(He says the next thing that must be done is to sow the right seed, the right way, to the right people or group.

That's right – one group might need the foundation laid – the milk of the word. That would be new believers and the young children. Another group needs the next step up in instruction, and a third group is ready to move on to greater understanding. Not only is He talking about what teachers sow, but He points out that there are different methods of sowing for different seeds. He will teach the teacher who is being led by His Spirit how to teach and what to teach.)

26-29: For his God doth instruct him to discretion, and doth teach him. For the fitches are not threshed with a threshing instrument, neither is a cart wheel turned about upon the cummin; but the fitches are beaten out with a staff, and the cummin with a rod. Bread corn is bruised; because he will not ever be threshing it, nor break it with the wheel of his cart, nor bruise it with his horsemen. This also cometh forth from the LORD of hosts, which is wonderful in counsel, and excellent in working.

(Now we find out that it's not just getting the ground ready and planting the right seeds, but there is a certain way to harvest each kind of seed also. God says the teacher must have discretion. He must be able to discern the right approach – the one that will zero in and get the desired result.

So Isaiah 28 teaches the considerations involved in sowing and then reaping. My reason for pointing this scripture out is because I don't think that many teachers are following this instruction. I think mostly that they throw everything out there on unplowed ground and hope some of it will come up. Very seldom do they harvest or even know when harvest time has come.)

A Time to Sow and a Time to Reap

Sometimes people lay responsibility on Christians that they cannot handle. They can't handle them because they haven't reached that level of maturity yet. Teachers must remember that God is Father and we are all children at different levels of growth.

A child should not be expected to think and behave as an adult. Father is the epitome of adulthood and Christians are all in different stages of development.

Listen, Christians, if you don't hear the truth in your spirit and see it with your spiritual understanding, you can't do it. Don't let teachers put a guilt trip on you for not being fully mature when you are only, say 8 yrs. old in your understanding. One of the things Jesus wanted to accomplish was to set Christians free from guilt trips.

Heb: 7:24-27: But this man, because he continueth ever, hath an unchangeable priesthood. Wherefore he is able also to save them to the uttermost that come unto God by him, seeing he ever liveth to make intercession for them. For such a high priest became us, who is holy, harmless, undefiled, separate from sinners, and made higher than the heavens; Who needeth not daily, as those high priests, to offer up sacrifice, first for his own sins, and then for the people's: for this he did once, when he offered up himself.

To make the matter clear, I am not talking about deliberate sin. Those who have come to God have repented of their ways and have covenanted with God to receive Him as Father to be trusted and obeyed. And He has covenanted with those who receive His salvation to be a loving, providing Father.

1Jn: 3:6: Whosoever abideth in him sinneth not: whosoever sinneth hath not seen him, neither known him.

Break Up the Fallow Ground

Jer: 1:1-6: If thou wilt return, O Israel, saith the LORD, return unto me: and if thou wilt put away thine abominations out of my sight, then shalt thou not remove. 2: And thou shalt swear, The LORD liveth, in truth, in judgment, and in righteousness; and the nations shall bless themselves in him, and in him shall they glory. 3: For thus saith the LORD to the men of Judah and Jerusalem, Break up your fallow ground, and sow not among thorns. 4: Circumcise yourselves to the LORD, and take away the foreskins of your heart, ye men of Judah and inhabitants of Jerusalem: lest my fury come forth like fire, and burn that none can quench it, because of the evil of your doings. 5: Declare ye in Judah, and publish in Jerusalem; and say, Blow ye the trumpet in the land: cry, gather together, and say, Assemble yourselves, and let us go into the defenced cities. 6: Set up the standard toward Zion: retire, stay not: for I will bring evil from the north, and a great destruction.

I believe the largest mistake that the church is making is how they are handling the call to salvation. In fact today, it appears that most of those who evangelized are trying to make God's plan even simpler – telling the

hearer that all they have to do is believe that Jesus is the Savior and confess it with their mouth.

Some will say, “Well isn’t that what Rom: 10: 9-10 says?” No, not exactly. It says if you confess Jesus as Lord and believe God raised Him from the dead, you will be saved. The key word there is Lord. If you do Rom: 10:9-10 – that is: confess His Lordship in your life and walk it out, you will be saved. But too many are just agreeing with their mouth that Jesus is the Savior and are therefore hoping to go to heaven without having repented of their ways and turned to His.

As I was saying, if the call were handled correctly, I think at least three fourth of the church’s problems would be solved. Let me show you what I mean.

Though this should have been the first article in my sowing and reaping series, since it deals with preparing the ground, the inspiration came now, so it will have to be the fourth in the series.

In the above passage of scripture God calls the people to repent. He wants them to assemble and humbly repent and confess Him as Lord. He has Jeremiah refer to this as breaking up the fallow ground. That is what is not being done in the modern call to salvation.

Before the call to salvation is made, the hearers should be thoroughly convinced of their own inability to save themselves, and of their own inability to walk in agape love without God’s indwelling, and with their own inability to handle their own affairs the way God calls them to successfully, and they should be convinced that Jesus is the only way to God and the only way to eternal life.

This is breaking up the fallow ground. Now that the hearer is convinced that they can only have eternal life and live successfully by receiving Jesus as their Lord and Savior, they are probably ready even eager to receive Jesus, but they still need to see just how destructive selfishness and rebellion are. This is done by reading scriptures that show agape love in practice.

All of God’s commandments and mandates are agape love in practice, but the hearer must understand that the carnal nature or self serving nature is at enmity with God and will not and can not please Him i/e they cannot walk in agape love without a complete makeover.

Next the hearers must be shown God’s remedy for all of this. This is found in Rom: 6-8. God arranged for the carnal nature to be crucified with Christ and then He made it possible for the receiver to be resurrected with new life – a life in Christ and Christ in them.

Then they should be called up front to be led in a sinner's prayer – make it severe and thorough. There is a great advantage to a person to be broken-hearted over their sin. (Jas: 4:8-10: Draw nigh to God, and he will draw nigh to you. Cleanse your hands, ye sinners; and purify your hearts, ye double minded.9: Be afflicted, and mourn, and weep: let your laughter be turned to mourning, and your joy to heaviness. 10: Humble yourselves in the sight of the Lord, and he shall lift you up.)

They should be made to understand their upcoming baptism. The evangelist needs to explain that when they are immersed they are acting out their crucifixion and when they come up out of the water, they will be testifying to their resurrection from the dead into new life in Christ.

They should be made to understand the covenant that they are entering into. They are covenanting to receive God as their Father and God, promising to trust and obey Him. This is not something that was meant to take a lifetime to learn. At the time of salvation, a person is to repent of disobedience and rebellion and receive God's authority in their life. God is covenanting to be the person's Father in every sense of the word. He will take care of them, shelter them, teach them, provide for them, help them, heal them, and feed and clothe them.

Think about what kind of congregation a church would have if this was how the call was handled.

Sowing the Right Seeds

How can Christians overcome with today's thinking? It takes Bible thinking to be a real Christian witness and to

overcome.

When calling people to salvation or to serve the Lord we sow the seeds of the benefits that are promised in the Bible. But in teaching Christians how to live, it is far more powerful and effective to teach not from the angle of what do Christians stand to benefit, though that part should not be excluded, but from the angle of them being servants of the Lord. We should teach from the angle of their being members of the body of Christ.

Here's how it works:

Many today are trying to give Christians incentive to walk in God's way by listing all the earthly and heavenly benefits for doing so. The Bible does tell us of earthly and heavenly benefits for the obedient, but there is a more powerful incentive.

When a person receives God's offer of salvation, they come into covenant with God. On their end of the covenant they are to trust and obey Him – they are to receive Him as their Father. On His end He is to be Father to them – that is be their parent, guardian, and provider. That is the greatest blessing and benefit. After hearing about that, the listener should be eager to find out how it all works. I'm, at this time, talking about the call to salvation and I already owned that the benefits the recipient can expect right now are of the utmost of importance and should be elaborated on.

Once you have convinced them that it is entirely in their interest to repent and be reconciled to God, it is time to go into thorough detail about God's brilliant and perfect plan to save them. They need to understand that they are about to enter into Christ's crucifixion – their carnal desires are not to rule in their lives anymore thus God provided for our lower nature to be crucified. So it's repentance, crucifixion, and then new life or the resurrection from the dead.

That's how it works. If they don't understand that, how are they going to live the new life in Christ which is a life based upon their new desire to please the Godhead rather than to please their carnal nature? That's where the power lies. Any gospel that does not teach that is not the true gospel.

Now once the sinner has repented of doing things their way and has received Jesus into their heart, they are cultivated ground ready for proper sowing.

The angle for this stage is to emphasize Jesus. Magnify Him. Teach all about His nature, His attitudes, His way of life. Belabor the details of His beauty, His love, His sacrificial nature, and the monumental task He completed when He ascended into heaven to start His High Priestly ministry. The desired result is for the new believer to be

stirred to a high state of love, appreciation, admiration, and gratitude toward Him. This state should be nurtured regularly.

Teach them all about His High Priestly ministry and teach them all about the empowerment we have through His acts and His presence.

Then weekly the new or young converts should be taught how to relate their conduct to Jesus and be taught their part as a member of His body. Christianity is not a single player effort. Each Christian in the local body is a designated member of Christ's body and should be fitly joined to the other members. The teacher needs to stress this point – that the body works together for the cause of Christ. It's not we work together for the common good. It's not we work together to promote the church. It's we work together to continue Christ's work.

As you teach them to relate their activities to Christ and His body, you also teach them how to conduct their affairs and progressively learn to walk in love – teach them to put on the Lord Jesus Christ. The power lies in worshipping Jesus in one's heart and conscientiously living one day at a time in a manner that will promote Jesus' cause.

It's all about Jesus. Convincing people to receive Jesus is about them – what will happen to them if they do or they don't, but once they enter into covenant with God, it's about being about the Father's business. Jesus is the Way, the Truth and the Life. What else is there?

News flash: My outline is not original – this is the way the Bible handles things.

So as soon as a child is old enough to go to a Sunday school class, he or she should be taught to relate their conduct to Jesus. Examples of how to teach little children:

You do not teach them to be kind and to be good. When you do that, they know they ought to be that way, but if they don't feel like it, most times they won't have the power to do it.

You teach them about Jesus with the goal of causing them to love Him. Once you have them wanting to be like Jesus and to make Jesus happy, then you teach them how: Tell them like this:

Jesus is kind to people and He wants us to be kind to people too. Jesus is our example of how to behave as children of God. Every time you are kind, Jesus smiles.

You teach: We show grace to others, because God showed grace toward us and gave us the Spirit of grace. That means we try to bless people just because Jesus wants us to. We don't have to feel like being loving toward somebody, we do it because we have Jesus, the lover, in our hearts.

Teach them to be generous by telling them: Jesus is the wisest man in the world and He said: It is better to give than to receive. Learn to be a giver and you will see what He means. Give them the scriptures that assure us of a great return on our investment, because that makes it easier for them to share generously.

To teach patience, you say: We are patient with people because God is patient toward us. Read scriptures that talk about the importance of patience.

You use pictures to show Jesus ministering to people and you tell the story that goes with the picture and don't stop there – teach them that as Jesus is, so are we in this world. Teach them that Jesus is the Light and now He is in heaven helping all of us, His body on the earth, be light for others.

On and on it goes everything is taught from the angle that we have been bought with a price and we are no longer our own – we belong to God and this is a very good thing because He is the most wonderful Father. Teach them that Jesus is our shepherd and this is very good, because we need a shepherd and He is the most wonderful Shepherd.

Nurturing the crops:

Nurturing is done by repeatedly teaching them what the full armor of God is and how to put it on.

Harvesting takes place when the student blossoms out and begins to show their areas of expertise.

Along the same lines as likening the teaching of believers to sowing and reaping, we can use the illustration of team effort in building a magnificent building.

It is imperative for church leaders to build on the firm foundation spoken of in Eph: 2:20: And are built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ himself being the chief corner stone;

This means that the information God has given us through the prophets, and the apostles and Jesus Himself are the foundation that we build on. There is no other. So, new believers must be taught the things that are taught by these three sources. Not just what Jesus said, not just New Testament, but the history of God's dealings with mankind and the books of the prophets must be taught.

If any of this information is ignored, disregarded, or distorted the building will not be godly. It will not be magnificent. It will not glorify God.

Also the building materials must be of top quality. Not wood, hay, or stubble, but silver and gold. Wisdom, faith, and love are the precious metals in the Bible. Biblical wisdom is heeded. Biblical faith is tried. And Biblical love is exercised.

They Have Sown Wheat, But Reaped Thorns

To understand this: Think contemporary and think from a spiritual angle.

Jer: 12:1-2: Righteous art thou, O LORD, when I plead with thee: yet let me talk with thee of thy judgments: Wherefore doth the way of the wicked prosper? wherefore are all they happy that deal very treacherously? 2: Thou hast planted them, yea, they have taken root: they grow, yea, they bring forth fruit: thou art near in their mouth, and far from their reins.

(Why did Jeremiah call these God worshippers wicked and treacherous? Because they confessed to worship God, but they lived like the world.)

3: But thou, O LORD, knowest me: thou hast seen me, and tried mine heart toward thee: pull them out like sheep for the slaughter, and prepare them for the day of slaughter.

(This is what happens to Christians that go on living like the world, they get slaughtered. Why? Because Christians are supposed to follow Jesus not the world. Jesus is the good Shepherd.)

4: How long shall the land mourn, and the herbs of every field wither, for the wickedness of them that dwell therein? the beasts are consumed, and the birds; because they said, He shall not see our last end.

(This describes the churches' condition. We have not brought about salvation – not anyway near to the degree that we were ordained to produce.)

5-9: If thou hast run with the footmen, and they have wearied thee, then how canst thou contend with horses? and if in the land of peace, wherein thou trustedst, they wearied thee, then how wilt thou do in the swelling of Jordan? 6: For even thy brethren, and the house of thy father, even they have dealt treacherously with thee; yea, they have called a multitude after thee: believe them not, though they speak fair words unto thee. 7: I have forsaken mine house, I have left mine heritage; I have given the dearly beloved of my soul into the hand of her enemies. 8: Mine heritage is unto me as a lion in the forest; it crieth out against me: therefore have I hated it. 9: Mine heritage is unto me as a speckled bird, the birds round about are against her; come ye, assemble all the beasts of the field, come to devour.

(God talks to Jeremiah here. He says His prophets must be tough and stand fast. He agrees that these so called God worshippers are treacherous and He says He is going to let them alone. He intends to let them reap what they are sowing. What else could He do? If a person promises to trust and obey Him, but then goes right on trusting and obeying the world, what can He do, but let them learn the hard way. I know it says in Isa: 54:7: For a small moment have I forsaken thee; but with great mercies will I gather thee. 8: In a little wrath I hid my face from thee for a moment; but with everlasting kindness will I have mercy on thee, saith the LORD thy Redeemer. But He also said in Isa: 54:13: And all thy children shall be taught of the LORD; and great shall be the peace of thy children. That is the key to all of this. Christians must be taught of the Lord.)

10-11: Many pastors have destroyed my vineyard, they have trodden my portion under foot, they have made my pleasant portion a desolate wilderness. 11: They have made it desolate, and being desolate it mourneth unto me; the whole land is made desolate, because no man layeth it to heart.

(Many pastors have been wrongly taught and are wrongly teaching. It's as in Isa: 28:7: But they also have erred through wine, and through strong drink are out of the way; the priest and the prophet have erred through strong drink, they are swallowed up of wine, they are out of the way through strong drink; they err in vision, they stumble in judgment. 8: For all tables are full of vomit and filthiness, so that there is no place clean. [When you sow God's seed, be careful not to trample it.)

12-13: The spoilers are come upon all high places through the wilderness: for the sword of the LORD shall devour from the one end of the land even to the other end of the land: no flesh shall have peace. 13: They have

sown wheat, but shall reap thorns: they have put themselves to pain, but shall not profit: and they shall be ashamed of your revenues because of the fierce anger of the LORD.

(This is the inevitable result of following the world and not following Jesus.)

14-17: Thus saith the LORD against all mine evil neighbours, that touch the inheritance which I have caused my people Israel to inherit; Behold, I will pluck them out of their land, and pluck out the house of Judah from among them. 15: And it shall come to pass, after that I have plucked them out I will return, and have compassion on them, and will bring them again, every man to his heritage, and every man to his land. 16: And it shall come to pass, if they will diligently learn the ways of my people, to swear by my name, The LORD liveth; as they taught my people to swear by Baal; then shall they be built in the midst of my people. 17: But if they will not obey, I will utterly pluck up and destroy that nation, saith the LORD.

(The church can apply this. I know that the land in that passage is Israel and that it is a warning to any who try to possess the Jews inheritance, but the church is not enjoying her spiritual inheritance on the level that it was given to them and the answer is the same. If they will diligently learn God's ways and swear by His name, the church can become the glorious church that God intended. Otherwise, in these last days, God will only have a remnant and most of the church will join the great whore.)

Jer: 13:1-7: Thus saith the LORD unto me, Go and get thee a linen girdle, and put it upon thy loins, and put it not in water. 2: So I got a girdle according to the word of the LORD, and put it on my loins. 3: And the word of the LORD came unto me the second time, saying, 4: Take the girdle that thou hast got, which is upon thy loins, and arise, go to Euphrates, and hide it there in a hole of the rock. 5: So I went, and hid it by Euphrates, as the LORD commanded me. 6: And it came to pass after many days, that the LORD said unto me, Arise, go to Euphrates, and take the girdle from thence, which I commanded thee to hide there. 7: Then I went to Euphrates, and digged, and took the girdle from the place where I had hid it: and, behold, the girdle was marred, it was profitable for nothing.

8-11: Then the word of the LORD came unto me, saying, 9: Thus saith the LORD, After this manner will I mar the pride of Judah, and the great pride of Jerusalem. 10: This evil people, which refuse to hear my words, which walk in the imagination of their heart, and walk after other gods, to serve them, and to worship them, shall even be as this girdle, which is good for nothing. 11: For as the girdle cleaveth to the loins of a man, so have I caused to cleave unto me the whole house of Israel and the whole house of Judah, saith the LORD; that they might be unto me for a people, and for a name, and for a praise, and for a glory: but they would not hear.

(That's where the church belongs – cleaving to the Lord as a girdle cleaves to a man's loins. God says here that that's how He had in mind for Christians to be His people. They would cleave unto Him and He would teach

them His ways and lead them in a straight path. 2 Cor: 6:17-18: Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you, 18: And will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be my sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty.)

12-14: Therefore thou shalt speak unto them this word; Thus saith the LORD God of Israel, Every bottle shall be filled with wine: and they shall say unto thee, Do we not certainly know that every bottle shall be filled with wine? 13: Then shalt thou say unto them, Thus saith the LORD, Behold, I will fill all the inhabitants of this land, even the kings that sit upon David's throne, and the priests, and the prophets, and all the inhabitants of Jerusalem, with drunkenness. 14: And I will dash them one against another, even the fathers and the sons together, saith the LORD: I will not pity, nor spare, nor have mercy, but destroy them.

(This is the same drunkenness as in Isaiah 28. God is talking about an adulterated gospel.)

15-17: Hear ye, and give ear; be not proud: for the LORD hath spoken. 16: Give glory to the LORD your God, before he cause darkness, and before your feet stumble upon the dark mountains, and, while ye look for light, he turn it into the shadow of death, and make it gross darkness. 17: But if ye will not hear it, my soul shall weep in secret places for your pride; and mine eye shall weep sore, and run down with tears, because the LORD's flock is carried away captive.

18-21: Say unto the king and to the queen, Humble yourselves, sit down: for your principalities shall come down, even the crown of your glory. 19: The cities of the south shall be shut up, and none shall open them: Judah shall be carried away captive all of it, it shall be wholly carried away captive. 20: Lift up your eyes, and behold them that come from the north: where is the flock that was given thee, thy beautiful flock? 21: What wilt thou say when he shall punish thee? for thou hast taught them to be captains, and as chief over thee: shall not sorrows take thee, as a woman in travail?

22-23: And if thou say in thine heart, Wherefore come these things upon me? For the greatness of thine iniquity are thy skirts discovered, and thy heels made bare. 23: Can the Ethiopian change his skin, or the leopard his spots? then may ye also do good, that are accustomed to do evil.

24-27: Therefore will I scatter them as the stubble that passeth away by the wind of the wilderness. 25: This is thy lot, the portion of thy measures from me, saith the LORD; because thou hast forgotten me, and trusted in falsehood. 26: Therefore will I discover thy skirts upon thy face, that thy shame may appear. 27: I have seen thine adulteries, and thy neighings, the lewdness of thy whoredom, and thine abominations on the hills in the fields. Woe unto thee, O Jerusalem! wilt thou not be made clean? when shall it once be?

(God calls for the church to humble themselves. He has in mind the solemn assembly in Joel: 2:15-18: Blow the trumpet in Zion, sanctify a fast, call a solemn assembly: 16: Gather the people, sanctify the congregation, assemble the elders, gather the children, and those that suck the breasts: let the bridegroom go forth of his chamber, and the bride out of her closet. 17: Let the priests, the ministers of the LORD, weep between the porch and the altar, and let them say, Spare thy people, O LORD, and give not thine heritage to reproach, that the heathen should rule over them: wherefore should they say among the people, Where is their God? 18: Then will the LORD be jealous for his land, and pity his people.)

God asks if a leopard can change his spots – He is saying that a Christian cannot be a Christian unless they have Jesus operating in their heart, otherwise they are only human.

The sowing lesson in this article is; don't trample your crops, keep the pollution out, and if you are not truly in Christ, God will not bless your crops.)

We Must Put On the Mind of Christ

New Testament Thinking

Lk: 6:40: The disciple is not above his master: but every one that is perfect shall be as his master.

Rom: 12:2: And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God.

Rom: 13:14: But put ye on the Lord Jesus Christ, and make not provision for the flesh, to fulfil the lusts thereof. (Lust means an area of high pressure.)

2Cor: 5:15: And that he died for all, that they which live should not henceforth live unto themselves, but unto him which died for them, and rose again.

Gal: 2:20: I am crucified with Christ: nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me: and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himself for me.

Gal: 3:27: For as many of you as have been baptized into Christ have put on Christ.

Gal: 4:19: My little children, of whom I travail in birth again until Christ be formed in you,

Eph: 1:22-23: And hath put all things under his feet, and gave him to be the head over all things to the church, 23: Which is his body, the fullness of him that filleth all in all.

Col: 2:6: As ye have therefore received Christ Jesus the Lord, so walk ye in him:

1Jn: 4:17: Herein is our love made perfect, that we may have boldness in the day of judgment: because as he is, so are we in this world.

(Since these things are true, the necessity to think as Jesus does is evident. Jesus overcame by thinking this way and we will overcome the same way. The following scriptures teach us to think as Jesus thought. And to walk as Jesus walked.

These look like dos and don'ts, but they are meant to convey a state of mind – the mind of Christ. He thought this way because He walked by the spirit. Born again people walk by the spirit. These teachings of Jesus' show the correct spirit.)

Matt: 3:2-3, 8: And saying, Repent ye: for the kingdom of heaven is at hand. 3: For this is he that was spoken of by the prophet Esaias, saying, The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight. Vs 8: Bring forth therefore fruits meet for repentance: (This is not something Jesus had to do, but we need to do it to obtain the Christ-like mentality that we need in order to start down the right road.)

Matt: 4:4: But he answered and said, It is written, Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God. (Jesus lived by this precept; we must know this too, in order to overcome.)

Matt: 5:8: Blessed are the pure in heart: for they shall see God. (Our heart must be pure in order for us to walk close to God.)

Matt: 5:44: But I say unto you, Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you, and persecute you;

Matt: 6:33-34: But seek ye first the kingdom of God, and his righteousness; and all these things shall be added unto you. 34: Take therefore no thought for the morrow: for the morrow shall take thought for the things of itself. Sufficient unto the day is the evil thereof.

Matt: 10:37-39: He that loveth father or mother more than me is not worthy of me: and he that loveth son or daughter more than me is not worthy of me. 38: And he that taketh not his cross, and followeth after me, is not worthy of me. 39: He that findeth his life shall lose it: and he that loseth his life for my sake shall find it.

Matt: 16:23: But he turned, and said unto Peter, Get thee behind me, Satan: thou art an offence unto me: for thou savourest not the things that be of God, but those that be of men. (To win, we must partake not of the nature of men, but we must partake of the nature and quality of God. That is why you must renew your mind with these thoughts.)

Matt: 18:3: And said, Verily I say unto you, Except ye be converted, and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven. (Children are trusting, lowly, loving, and forgiving and that's the way Jesus is.)

Matt: 22:37-39: Jesus said unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. 38: This is the first and great commandment. 39: And the second is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself.

Matt: 25:40: And the King shall answer and say unto them, Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye have done it unto one of the least of these my brethren, ye have done it unto me. (This is how Jesus thinks.)

Mk: 4:3, 16-20, 24-25: Hearken; Behold, there went out a sower to sow: and accept and welcome it and bear fruit, some thirty times as much as was sown, some sixty times as much, and some (even) a hundred time as much. Vs 16-20: And these are they likewise which are sown on stony ground; who, when they have heard the word, immediately receive it with gladness; 17: And have no root in themselves, and so endure but for a time: afterward, when affliction or persecution ariseth for the word's sake, immediately they are offended. 18: And these are they which are sown among thorns; such as hear the word, 19: And the cares of this world, and the deceitfulness of riches, and the lusts of other things entering in, choke the word, and it becometh unfruitful. 20: And these are they which are sown on good ground; such as hear the word, and receive it, and bring forth fruit, some thirtyfold, some sixty, and some an hundred. (Jesus made sure His heart was good, well-adapted soil.) Vs 24-25: 24: And he said unto them, Take heed what ye hear: with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you: and unto you that hear shall more be given. 25: For he that hath, to him shall be given: and he that hath not, from him shall be taken even that which he hath. (So Christ succeeded because His heart was good ground and He was careful what He listened to and what He allowed to be sown in His heart.)

Mk: 8:34-38: And when he had called the people unto him with his disciples also, he said unto them, Whosoever will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me. 35: For whosoever will save his life shall lose it; but whosoever shall lose his life for my sake and the gospel's, the same shall save it. 36: For what shall it profit a man, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? 37: Or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul? 38: Whosoever therefore shall be ashamed of me and of my words in this adulterous and sinful generation; of him also shall the Son of man be ashamed, when he cometh in the glory of his Father with the holy angels. (Jesus won by having this kind of mindset.)

Mk: 9:23: Jesus said unto him, If thou canst believe, all things are possible to him that believeth.

Mk: 11:23-24: For verily I say unto you, That whosoever shall say unto this mountain, Be thou removed, and be thou cast into the sea; and shall not doubt in his heart, but shall believe that those things which he saith shall

come to pass; he shall have whatsoever he saith. 24: Therefore I say unto you, What things soever ye desire, when ye pray, believe that ye receive them, and ye shall have them. (These teachings are how Jesus overcame.)

Mk: 13:22-23, 33-35: For false Christs and false prophets shall rise, and shall shew signs and wonders, to seduce, if it were possible, even the elect. 23: But take ye heed: behold, I have foretold you all things. Vs 33-35: Take ye heed, watch and pray: for ye know not when the time is. 34: For the Son of man is as a man taking a far journey, who left his house, and gave authority to his servants, and to every man his work, and commanded the porter to watch. 35: Watch ye therefore: for ye know not when the master of the house cometh, at even, or at midnight, or at the cockcrowing, or in the morning: (Jesus lived this way.)

Mk: 14:38: Amp. V: Keep awake and watch and pray (constantly) that you may not enter into temptation; the spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak. (Jesus kept awake, watched and prayed in order to overcome the flesh.)

Lk: 2:49: And he said unto them, How is it that ye sought me? Wist ye not that I must be about my Father's business? (We need to have this same attitude.)

Lk: 6:22-23: Blessed are ye, when men shall hate you, and when they shall separate you from their company, and shall reproach you, and cast out your name as evil, for the Son of man's sake. 23: Rejoice ye in that day, and leap for joy: for, behold, your reward is great in heaven: for in the like manner did their fathers unto the prophets. (Jesus bore this advise in mind at all times and He overcame persecution in this way.)

Lk: 6:46: And why call ye me, Lord, Lord, and do not the things which I say? (Jesus called God, Father and listened to Him.)

Lk: 8:21: And he answered and said unto them, My mother and my brethren are these which hear the word of God, and do it. (The mind of Christ is that if God is my Father, I obey Him and if He is your Father, you obey Him. See: Jn: 8:37-47)

Lk: 8:25: And he said unto them, Where is your faith? And they being afraid wondered, saying one to another, What manner of man is this! For he commandeth even the winds and water, and they obey him. (Jesus expected them and us to trust in His veracity, that means His truthfulness and sincerity, and His integrity and therefore trust their lives in His hands. He expects the same of us.)

Lk: 11:9-10: And I say unto you, Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you. 10: For every one that asketh receiveth; and he that seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh it

shall be opened. (Jesus lived this way.)

Lk: 11:23: He that is not with me is against me: and he that gathereth not with me scattereth. (We must be with Him so we can help gather and not scatter.)

Lk: 12:22-23: And he said unto his disciples, Therefore I say unto you, Take no thought for your life, what ye shall eat; neither for the body, what ye shall put on. 23: The life is more than meat, and the body is more than raiment. (This is Jesus' attitude toward things.)

Lk: 12:26: If ye then be not able to do that thing which is least, why take ye thought for the rest? (This is a lesson in how to reason.)

Lk: 14:23: And the lord said unto the servant, Go out into the highways and hedges, and compel them to come in, that my house may be filled.

Lk: 14:26-28: If any man come to me, and hate not his father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brethren, and sisters, yea, and his own life also, he cannot be my disciple. 27: And whosoever doth not bear his cross, and come after me, cannot be my disciple. 28: For which of you, intending to build a tower, sitteth not down first, and counteth the cost, whether he have sufficient to finish it?

Lk: 14:33: So likewise, whosoever he be of you that forsaketh not all that he hath, he cannot be my disciple. (Jesus forsook all to be God's Messiah.)

Lk: 16:13: No servant can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon. (Jesus bore this in mind at all times and walked carefully.)

Lk: 22:42: Saying, Father, if thou be willing, remove this cup from me: nevertheless not my will, but thine, be done. (This is always the right attitude.)

Lk: 22:46: And said unto them: Why sleep ye? Rise and pray, lest ye enter into temptation. (This is the way to overcome temptation – deny the flesh and pray.)

Jn: 3:5-6: Jesus answered, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he

cannot enter into the kingdom of God. 6: That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit. (God put the sperm in Mary's womb, He is Jesus supernatural Father so that Jesus could be born spiritually alive when He was born. We get to be born spiritually alive when we receive Him into our hearts by faith.)

Jn: 7:7: The world cannot hate you; but me it hateth, because I testify of it, that the works thereof are evil. (I included this verse because, in order to think like and therefore act like Jesus, we must realize that those who love the truth will be hated unless they hide their light under a bushel. I'm trying to say, don't try so hard to be liked. Just love people, God's way.)

Jn: 7:24: Judge not according to the appearance, but judge righteous judgment. (Or as the Amplified Bible says: Be honest in your judgment and do not decide at a glance— superficially and by appearance; but judge fairly and righteously. Jesus always bore this in mind.)

Jn: 12:25-26: He that loveth his life shall lose it; and he that hateth his life in this world shall keep it unto life eternal. 26: If any man serve me, let him follow me; and where I am, there shall also my servant be: if any man serve me, him will my Father honour.

Jn: 14:15: If ye love me, keep my commandments.

Jn: 14:27: Peace I leave with you, my peace I give unto you: not as the world giveth, give I unto you. Let not your heart be troubled, neither let it be afraid. (That's right; Jesus had to fight the devil who brings fear. He kept faith in His Father presiding in His heart – there was no room for fear).

Jn: 15:7: If ye abide in me, and my words abide in you, ye shall ask what ye will, and it shall be done unto you.

Jn: 15:18-21: If the world hate you, ye know that it hated me before it hated you. 19: If ye were of the world, the world would love his own: but because ye are not of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world, therefore the world hateth you. 20: Remember the word that I said unto you, The servant is not greater than his lord. If they have persecuted me, they will also persecute you; if they have kept my saying, they will keep yours also. 21: But all these things will they do unto you for my name's sake, because they know not him that sent me.

Jn: 17:3: And this is life eternal, that they might know thee the only true God, and Jesus Christ, whom thou hast sent.

Acts: 11:23: Who, when he came, and had seen the grace of God, was glad, and exhorted them all, that with purpose of heart they would cleave unto the Lord.

Acts: 24:16: And herein do I exercise myself, to have always a conscience void of offence toward God, and toward men.

Rom: 2:7: To them who by patient continuance in well doing seek for glory and honour and immortality, eternal life: (Jesus' way.)

Rom: 4:20-21: He staggered not at the promise of God through unbelief; but was strong in faith, giving glory to God; 21: And being fully persuaded that, what he had promised, he was able also to perform. (That's how Jesus was too.)

Rom: 6:4-5: Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with him, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin. (This is how Jesus did it. Vs 5: He reckoned his members dead to sin and alive to God in unbroken fellowship. He practiced thinking this way in order to overcome sin.)

Rom: 14:8: For whether we live, we live unto the Lord; and whether we die, we die unto the Lord: whether we live therefore, or die, we are the Lord's. (Jesus thought this way.)

Rom: 15:2-3: Let every one of us please his neighbour for his good to edification. 3: For even Christ pleased not himself; but, as it is written, The reproaches of them that reproached thee fell on me. (Jesus lived this way.)

1Cor: 10:14: Amp. V: Therefore, my dearly beloved, shun— keep clear away from, avoid by flight if need be— any sort of idolatry (of loving or venerating anything more than God).

1Cor: 10:21: Ye cannot drink the cup of the Lord, and the cup of devils: ye cannot be partakers of the Lord's table, and of the table of devils. (Jesus hated evil – harm or harmful ways.)

1Cor: 10:24: Amp. V: Let not one then seek his own good and advantage and profit, but [rather let him seek the welfare of his neighbor] each one of the other. (Jesus' Spirit.)

1Cor: 10:31: Whether therefore ye eat, or drink, or whatsoever ye do, do all to the glory of God. (This was Jesus' attitude at all times.)

1Cor: 15:48: As is the earthy, such are they also that are earthy: and as is the heavenly, such are they also that are heavenly.

1Cor: 15:58: Therefore, my beloved brethren, be ye stedfast, unmoveable, always abounding in the work of the Lord, forasmuch as ye know that your labour is not in vain in the Lord. (Jesus determined to live this way.)

2Cor: 4:17-18: For our light affliction, which is but for a moment, worketh for us a far more exceeding and eternal weight of glory; 18: While we look not at the things which are seen, but at the things which are not seen: for the things which are seen are temporal; but the things which are not seen are eternal.

2Cor: 5:7: For we walk by faith, not by sight: (Jesus' way.)

2Cor: 6:14-7:1: Be ye not unequally yoked together with unbelievers: for what fellowship hath righteousness with unrighteousness? And what communion hath light with darkness? And what concord hath Christ with Belial? Or what part hath he that believeth with an infidel? And what agreement hath the temple of God with idols? For ye are the temple of the living God; as God hath said, I will dwell in them, and walk in them; and I will be their God, and they shall be my people. Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you, And will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be my sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty. Having therefore these promises, dearly beloved, let us cleanse ourselves from all filthiness of the flesh and spirit, perfecting holiness in the fear of God. (Jesus lived this way. In order to overcome, we have to live this way.)

2Cor: 10:4-5: (For the weapons of our warfare are not carnal, but mighty through God to the pulling down of strong holds;) Casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth itself against the knowledge of God, and bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ; (Jesus lived this way.)

2Cor: 11:3: But I fear, lest by any means, as the serpent beguiled Eve through his subtilty, so your minds should be corrupted from the simplicity that is in Christ. (Jesus practiced wholehearted and sincere and pure devotion towards God, His Father.)

Gal: 5:16: This I say then, Walk in the Spirit, and ye shall not fulfil the lust of the flesh. (You guessed it – this is how Jesus walked.)

Gal: 6:8: For he that soweth to his flesh shall of the flesh reap corruption; but he that soweth to the Spirit shall of

the Spirit reap life everlasting. (Jesus always sowed to the Spirit.)

Eph: 4:22: That ye put off concerning the former conversation the old man, which is corrupt according to the deceitful lusts; (And put on the mind of Christ. You have to put off as well as put on.)

Eph: 6:11-12: Put on the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil. For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places. (Jesus always wore the whole armor of God and He knew who He was wrestling with.)

Phil: 2:3-10: Let nothing be done through strife or vainglory; but in lowliness of mind let each esteem other better than themselves. Look not every man on his own things, but every man also on the things of others. Let this mind be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus: Who, being in the form of God, thought it not robbery to be equal with God: But made himself of no reputation, and took upon him the form of a servant, and was made in the likeness of men: And being found in fashion as a man, he humbled himself, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross. Wherefore God also hath highly exalted him, and given him a name which is above every name: That at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth; (There you have it – Jesus walked meek and lowly.)

Phil: 2:12-13: Wherefore, my beloved, as ye have always obeyed, not as in my presence only, but now much more in my absence, work out your own salvation with fear and trembling. For it is God which worketh in you both to will and to do of his good pleasure. (Jesus lived this way. This is the winning way.)

Phil: 3:8: Yea doubtless, and I count all things but loss for the excellency of the knowledge of Christ Jesus my Lord: for whom I have suffered the loss of all things, and do count them but dung, that I may win Christ, (Jesus had this kind of dedication to The Father.)

Phil: 4:4-8: Rejoice in the Lord I: and again I say, Rejoice. Let your moderation be known unto all men. The Lord is at hand. Be careful for nothing; but in every thing by prayer and supplication with thanksgiving let your requests be made known unto God. And the peace of God, which passeth all understanding, shall keep your hearts and minds through Christ Jesus. Finally, brethren, whatsoever things are true, whatsoever things are honest, whatsoever things are just, whatsoever things are pure, whatsoever things are lovely, whatsoever things are of good report; if there be any virtue, and if there be any praise, think on these things. (Yep! Jesus did this.)

Col: 1:10-11: That ye might walk worthy of the Lord unto all pleasing, being fruitful in every good work, and increasing in the knowledge of God; Strengthened with all might, according to his glorious power, unto all

patience and longsuffering with joyfulness;

Col: 2:6: As ye have therefore received Christ Jesus the Lord, so walk ye in him:

Col: 2:9-10: For in him dwelleth all the fullness of the Godhead bodily. And ye are complete in him, which is the head of all principality and power: (This one is for confirmation and encouragement.)

Col: 3:17: And whatsoever ye do in word or deed, do all in the name of the Lord Jesus, giving thanks to God and the Father by him.

2Tim: 2:3-4: Thou therefore endure hardness, as a good soldier of Jesus Christ. No man that warreth entangleth himself with the affairs of this life; that he may please him who hath chosen him to be a soldier. (Jesus's attitude.)

Heb: 1:9: Thou hast loved righteousness, and hated iniquity; therefore God, even thy God, hath anointed thee with the oil of gladness above thy fellows. (This verse is talking about Jesus. Remember we are to think like Jesus does. Therefore we practice delighting in righteousness.)

Heb: 3:14: For we are made partakers of Christ, if we hold the beginning of our confidence stedfast unto the end; (Jesus had to hold fast. Believe it or not, the carnal nature caused Him trouble, too.)

Heb: 4:10: For he that is entered into his rest, he also hath ceased from his own works, as God did from his. (Jesus abided in God's rest.)

Heb: 5:7: Who in the days of his flesh, when he had offered up prayers and supplications with strong crying and tears unto him that was able to save him from death, and was heard in that he feared; (This is how He did it. He prayed earnestly and with tears that God wouldn't let Him fall. He treasured God presence more than anything else He had.)

Heb: 7:11: If therefore perfection were by the Levitical priesthood, (for under it the people received the law,) what further need was there that another priest should rise after the order of Melchisedec, and not be called after the order of Aaron. (Notice that perfection, for us, is perfect fellowship with the Father. Jesus won by maintaining a perfect fellowship with His Father.)

Heb: 8:10: For this is the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel after those days, saith the Lord; I will put my laws into their mind, and write them in their hearts: and I will be to them a God, and they shall be to me a people: (Jesus had God's laws imprinted upon His mind and He bore in mind at all times that God was His God.)

Heb: 12:1-3: Wherefore seeing we also are compassed about with so great a cloud of witnesses, let us lay aside every weight, and the sin which doth so easily beset us, and let us run with patience the race that is set before us, Looking unto Jesus the author and finisher of our faith; who for the joy that was set before him endured the cross, despising the shame, and is set down at the right hand of the throne of God. For consider him that endured such contradiction of sinners against himself, lest ye be wearied and faint in your minds. (Jesus did not allow Himself to get weighted down with any self-interest that would hold Him back. He wouldn't entertain the temptation to faint either. We can stay tuned, too, if we will keep our priorities straight and when tempted to faint, consider Jesus and what He endured.)

Heb: 12:7: If ye endure chastening, God dealeth with you as with sons; for what son is he whom the father chasteneth not? (Hebrews 2:9-11 tells us that Jesus endured severe discipline in order to be perfected for His mission. We, too, must endure whatever discipline God deems good for us without grumbling.)

Heb: 13:13-14: Let us go forth therefore unto him without the camp, bearing his reproach. For here have we no continuing city, but we seek one to come.

Jas: 1:6: James, a servant of God and of the Lord Jesus Christ, to the twelve tribes which are scattered abroad, greeting. My brethren, count it all joy when ye fall into divers temptations; Knowing this, that the trying of your faith worketh patience. But let patience have her perfect work, that ye may be perfect and entire, wanting nothing. If any of you lack wisdom, let him ask of God, that giveth to all men liberally, and upbraideth not; and it shall be given him. But let him ask in faith, nothing wavering. For he that wavereth is like a wave of the sea driven with the wind and tossed. (Jesus always walked by faith, never wavering. He had to overcome the temptation to waver too. He had His mind stayed on God.)

Jas: 1:12: Blessed is the man that endureth temptation: for when he is tried, he shall receive the crown of life, which the Lord hath promised to them that love him. (Jesus stood the test because of His great love for His Father.)

Jas: 1:21-22: Wherefore lay apart all filthiness and superfluity of naughtiness, and receive with meekness the engrafted word, which is able to save your souls. But be ye doers of the word, and not hearers only, deceiving your own selves.

Jas: 4:4: Ye adulterers and adulteresses, know ye not that the friendship of the world is enmity with God? Whosoever therefore will be a friend of the world is the enemy of God. (Being a friend of publicans and sinners is not the same as being a friend of the world. A friend of the world receives and submits to its rules and ways which are carnal. Remember Romans 8:7: the carnal mind is at enmity with God and cannot obey Him. Jesus played by God's rules. Jesus walked in God's ways no matter what the cost.)

Jas: 4:8: Draw nigh to God, and he will draw nigh to you. Cleanse your hands, ye sinners; and purify your hearts, ye double minded. (Having divided interests is spiritual adultery. Jesus was single-minded on serving the Father.)

2Pet: 1:13-14: Wherefore gird up the loins of your mind, be sober, and hope to the end for the grace that is to be brought unto you at the revelation of Jesus Christ; As obedient children, not fashioning yourselves according to the former lusts in your ignorance: (Jesus lived as an obedient Son of God.)

1Jn: 3:22-24: And whatsoever we ask, we receive of him, because we keep his commandments, and do those things that are pleasing in his sight. And this is his commandment, That we should believe on the name of his Son Jesus Christ, and love one another, as he gave us commandment. And he that keepeth his commandments dwelleth in him, and he in him. And hereby we know that he abideth in us, by the Spirit which he hath given us. (Jesus practiced pleasing God and kept His commandments and had His prayers answered because God's Spirit lived in Him. He has given us His Spirit so that we can live this way and win.)

1Jn: 5:4: For whatsoever is born of God overcometh the world: and this is the victory that overcometh the world, even our faith. (Jesus was born of God, that's how He overcame. We are born of God and we are destined to put on the Lord Jesus Christ and be victorious over the world.)

1Jn: 5:11-12: And this is the record, that God hath given to us eternal life, and this life is in his Son. He that hath the Son hath life; and he that hath not the Son of God hath not life.

Rev: 3:10: Because thou hast kept the word of my patience, I also will keep thee from the hour of temptation, which shall come upon all the world, to try them that dwell upon the earth. (Jesus guarded and kept God's word. If you want to be raptured out before the wrath comes, you will have to do the same.)

Rev: 5:5: And one of the elders saith unto me, Weep not: behold, the Lion of the tribe of Juda, the Root of David, hath prevailed to open the book, and to loose the seven seals thereof. (I told you He had to overcome.)

Warnings or reminders:

Rev: 12:11: And I heard a loud voice saying in heaven, Now is come salvation, and strength, and the kingdom of our God, and the power of his Christ: for the accuser of our brethren is cast down, which accused them before our God day and night.

Rev: 16:15: Behold, I come as a thief. Blessed is he that watcheth, and keepeth his garments, lest he walk naked, and they see his shame.

Rev: 19:10: And I fell at his feet to worship him. And he said unto me, See thou do it not: I am thy fellowservant, and of thy brethren that have the testimony of Jesus: worship God: for the testimony of Jesus is the spirit of prophecy.

Rev: 22:12: And, behold, I come quickly; and my reward is with me, to give every man according as his work shall be.

Relating Proverbs to Today

Prov: 1:1-9: The proverbs of Solomon the son of David, king of Israel; To know wisdom and instruction; to perceive the words of understanding; To receive the instruction of wisdom, justice, and judgment, and equity; To give subtilty to the simple, to the young man knowledge and discretion. A wise man will hear, and will increase learning; and a man of understanding shall attain unto wise counsels: To understand a proverb, and the interpretation; the words of the wise, and their dark sayings. The fear of the LORD is the beginning of knowledge: but fools despise wisdom and instruction. My son, hear the instruction of thy father, and forsake not the law of thy mother: For they shall be an ornament of grace unto thy head, and chains about thy neck.

(Notice that Solomon says here that the intent of the book of Proverbs is to instill wisdom and instruction into people so that they can operate in sound judgment, justice, equity, knowledge, and discretion – in other words, wisdom.

He goes on to say that a wise man will seek out wisdom and apply it to his or her life.

Solomon says he is also writing Proverbs to help people understand proverbs.

First thing a person must have in order to obtain wisdom is to have or receive the fear of the Lord. The fear of the Lord means to revere Him as the one who knows what He's talking about and has the power to follow through. It is to know that God is our help.

His first piece of advice as a wise counselor is to tell the seeker to listen to the teachings of the Bible. God is the Father and he is love. Biblical wisdom is the female counterpart. To walk in love the church must learn the balance of love and wisdom.)

Prov: 1:10-19: My son, if sinners entice thee, consent thou not. If they say, Come with us, let us lay wait for blood, let us lurk privily for the innocent without cause: Let us swallow them up alive as the grave; and whole, as those that go down into the pit: We shall find all precious substance, we shall fill our houses with spoil: Cast in thy lot among us; let us all have one purse: My son, walk not thou in the way with them; refrain thy foot from their path: For their feet run to evil, and make haste to shed blood. Surely in vain the net is spread in the sight of any bird. And they lay wait for their own blood; they lurk privily for their own lives. So are the ways of every one that is greedy of gain; which taketh away the life of the owners thereof.

(There's not much to say about those verses. They are elementary teaching about not getting into trouble. Still, I'm sorry to say that many people do not apply this teaching. Yet, running with a bad crowd will get you into trouble every time.)

Prov: 1:20-33: Wisdom crieth without; she uttereth her voice in the streets: She crieth in the chief place of concourse, in the openings of the gates: in the city she uttereth her words, saying, How long, ye simple ones, will ye love simplicity? And the scorners delight in their scorning, and fools hate knowledge? Turn you at my reproof: behold, I will pour out my spirit unto you, I will make known my words unto you. Because I have called, and ye refused; I have stretched out my hand, and no man regarded; But ye have set at nought all my counsel, and would none of my reproof: I also will laugh at your calamity; I will mock when your fear cometh; When your fear cometh as desolation, and your destruction cometh as a whirlwind; when distress and anguish cometh upon you. Then shall they call upon me, but I will not answer; they shall seek me early, but they shall not find me: For that they hated knowledge, and did not choose the fear of the LORD: They would none of my counsel: they despised all my reproof. Therefore shall they eat of the fruit of their own way, and be filled with their own devices. For the turning away of the simple shall slay them, and the prosperity of fools shall destroy them. But whoso hearkeneth unto me shall dwell safely, and shall be quiet from fear of evil.

(These verses are profound, yet I doubt if many Christians know they are in the Bible. Solomon says Wisdom

cries out to be heard and not in a corner but in the thoroughfares. Notice that Wisdom here is capitalized – that is because it is God’s Wisdom crying out to be heard. Notice that Wisdom is a she here. I told you that this is the female counterpart of God. God says here that He has created commonsense and a conscience – you don’t have to be a rocket scientist to recognize what might hurt you.

Wisdom cries out – how long will you stick your head in it? How long will you go your own way and ignore what God has said? God pleads for mankind to turn at His reproof – listen to Him and be spared from many of their troubles and hardships. You don’t believe me? Wait until we finish this book of the Bible.

God’s Wisdom goes on to say that since people don’t want to hear it – refuse to believe that they are headed for trouble – when the inevitable trouble comes, don’t expect Him to get you out of it, because he would use Wisdom to stay out of trouble and He would use Wisdom to get out of trouble and the person He’s talking to here, doesn’t like Wisdom – doesn’t heed sound advise, so there is no helping he or she.

He assures mankind that if they will listen to Him, it will be well with them. In other words, they will be spared many of the problems that come with foolishness, such as – huge debt, addiction to drugs or alcohol, venereal disease, broken homes, unsafe neighborhoods, obesity, and adultery to name a few. Then these things afore mentioned lead to degradation, rape, pornography, etc.

Maybe you thought those things just happened to society. No, they come because Wisdom cried out and no one would listen. The trouble that the United States is in today – the individuals, the homes, and the local, state, and federal governments – is because they will not listen to God’s Wisdom.)

Prov: 2:1-9: My son, if thou wilt receive my words, and hide my commandments with thee; So that thou incline thine ear unto wisdom, and apply thine heart to understanding; Yea, if thou criest after knowledge, and liftest up thy voice for understanding; If thou seekest her as silver, and searchest for her as for hid treasures; Then shalt thou understand the fear of the LORD, and find the knowledge of God. For the LORD giveth wisdom: out of his mouth cometh knowledge and understanding. He layeth up sound wisdom for the righteous: he is a buckler to them that walk uprightly. He keepeth the paths of judgment, and preserveth the way of his saints. Then shalt thou understand righteousness, and judgment, and equity; yea, every good path.

(Please take note: Wisdom and understanding do not just happen to a person. It does not fall on them or enter into them just because they received salvation. God is talking to all of His sons and daughters here about how to have wisdom, knowledge, and understanding.

He says you have to receive it – that means when you hear it or when you read it you must accept it as the right

way to perceive the situation.

Next, not all you need to know is going to fall in your lap, you are going to have to search for it and even dig deep for it.

Thirdly, you're going to have to apply it. Put it to use.

Also, God establishes here that all true wisdom is from Him and He is pleased to give it to us. He also points out that if the person doing the seeking does not care about righteousness, they will not receive the truth.

These point are all important because a lot of people think they don't have to work for God's treasure, but they must work because the enemy is doing all he can to keep these things from mankind.)

Prov: 2:10-22: When wisdom entereth into thine heart, and knowledge is pleasant unto thy soul; Discretion shall preserve thee, understanding shall keep thee: To deliver thee from the way of the evil man, from the man that speaketh froward things; Who leave the paths of uprightness, to walk in the ways of darkness; Who rejoice to do evil, and delight in the frowardness of the wicked; Whose ways are crooked, and they froward in their paths: To deliver thee from the strange woman, even from the stranger which flattereth with her words; Which forsaketh the guide of her youth, and forgetteth the covenant of her God. For her house inclineth unto death, and her paths unto the dead. None that go unto her return again, neither take they hold of the paths of life. That thou mayest walk in the way of good men, and keep the paths of the righteous. For the upright shall dwell in the land, and the perfect shall remain in it. But the wicked shall be cut off from the earth, and the transgressors shall be rooted out of it.

(Now God says once you have this wisdom and the knowledge of it is a good thing with you, it will enable you to use discretion. Discretion: 1 the freedom or authority to make decisions and choices; power to judge or act. 2 the quality of being discreet or careful about what one does and says; prudence.

This discretion will preserve, keep, and deliver the practicer from evil – harm and from harming others.

The details above about the loose woman and the dishonest companions are to drive home the point that when a person is under strong temptation they will often need understanding of the consequences in order to have power to make the right choice. The details also show the power of persuasion, deception, and enticement – all of which the enemy uses against all of us.

God also points out that in the end only those who make right choices will be in His kingdom.)

Prov: 3:1-2: My son, forget not my law; but let thine heart keep my commandments: For length of days, and long life, and peace, shall they add to thee.

(God actually says here that practicing His ways – law here includes all the things He has taught man to practice – can add days, even years to a person’s life. He also promises that the doer of His Word will enjoy a peace that the world cannot receive.)

Prov: 3:3-4: Let not mercy and truth forsake thee: bind them about thy neck; write them upon the table of thine heart: So shalt thou find favour and good understanding in the sight of God and man.

(God says that practicing mercy and truth will proclaim your godly character to others. Please notice that, again, because of the enemy, mercy and truth must be clung to, even forcibly attached to the godly man.

I must point out that it says mercy and truth, for I fear that many Christians work on the mercy part but hide their truth under a bushel. Also there are those who exalt truth to the point that they cannot show mercy. Balance – the Bible is the balance. The Christian life takes balance. A person learns to walk when they learn balance. The Christian walk is the proper balance of love and wisdom.)

Prov: 3:5-6: Trust in the LORD with all thine heart; and lean not unto thine own understanding. In all thy ways acknowledge him, and he shall direct thy paths.

(We all know we should trust the Lord. Many are trying to put their trust in Him. But very few have been able to trust with all their heart. Jesus did and that is why He was able to do what He did. Included in this trust is the humility that knows that only with God directing a person’s path will they be guaranteed the most out of life.)

Prov: 3:7-8: Be not wise in thine own eyes: fear the LORD, and depart from evil. It shall be health to thy navel, and marrow to thy bones.

(This verse had done many in good stead over the years, because the enemy tries to get the believer to doubt God and this verse tells us not to use our own wisdom and understanding – the enemy can confuse us if we do. We must trust in God no matter what – no matter if it does seem as if He’s not working on our case – even if it looks as if He’s not blessing us. He says to trust Him and not to take matters into our own hands, ever. If the believer will do that, He promises them health and strong bones. I think that this is because fretting and worry cause

illness and effect the bones negatively.

Again, we must understand that a person can still suffer from osteoporosis or get a disease or have a short life even though they were truly one of God's children. This is one of those areas that if we do not trust the matter in God's hands, the enemy will try to make trouble. Why would one of God's children suffer these when God says here that they won't? I can't answer all the mysteries in the Word, but here I think the answer is that God is saying practicing these things will ensure that worry and fretfulness will not take a person's health or weaken their bones – there is obviously other reasons why this might happen or maybe the Christian was weak in this area and it came on them. We cannot judge. As God is saying here – trust Him and trust that His Word is true no matter what you see. We'll understand in the sweet by and by.)

Prov: 3:9-10: Honour the LORD with thy substance, and with the firstfruits of all thine increase: So shall thy barns be filled with plenty, and thy presses shall burst out with new wine.

(This is to be taken seriously. I say that because my impression is that most Christians do not take this seriously. God says that giving a portion of your income off the top is a form of worshipping or honoring Him. He promises prosperity to those who honor Him in this way.

Some may ask why then are there Christians who tithe and do not have full storehouses. The answer could be that they never learned how to be good business people. Or an unforeseen disaster hindered their prosperity. But God makes it clear that even if a drought of some kind does attack His people that the way out of the trouble is to trust in Him. He promises to never leave them nor forsake them. He is Jehovah-Jireh – the Lord our provider.)

Prov: 3:11-12: My son, despise not the chastening of the LORD; neither be weary of his correction: For whom the LORD loveth he correcteth; even as a father the son in whom he delighteth.

(I'm so glad God assures us in His Word that the bad times are for a purpose. I'm referring here to the bad times that come on a Christian even though they made right choices. Sometimes bad things happen to Christians because they haven't learned to make right choices in that area, yet. Then God uses the situation to teach them not to make the bad choice again.

If bad times come even though the believer was making good choices – there are many reasons that this could happen – we do not live in a vacuum – God uses the situation for further training or testing. Remember Adam and Eve did not keep the faith – Jesus did – believers must keep the faith or continue in the things of the Lord in order to triumph over the enemy.

Notice that the one being chastised is experiencing the love of God. He is dealing with them because He cares about them, but the enemy would have us believe that trouble happens because He doesn't care about us.

Those who go through hard times without God – I am not among those who think that the devil only attacks Christians – he is out to destroy anyone and he is out to be god over anyone. It is true that a Christian may be more of a prize to him since he can flaunt the sin in God's face, but hard times come to all. It's what a person does with it or about it that determines whether it will be used for good or for harm.)

Prov: 3:13-26: Happy is the man that findeth wisdom, and the man that getteth understanding. For the merchandise of it is better than the merchandise of silver, and the gain thereof than fine gold. She is more precious than rubies: and all the things thou canst desire are not to be compared unto her. Length of days is in her right hand; and in her left hand riches and honour. Her ways are ways of pleasantness, and all her paths are peace. She is a tree of life to them that lay hold upon her: and happy is every one that retaineth her. The LORD by wisdom hath founded the earth; by understanding hath he established the heavens. By his knowledge the depths are broken up, and the clouds drop down the dew. My son, let not them depart from thine eyes: keep sound wisdom and discretion: So shall they be life unto thy soul, and grace to thy neck. Then shalt thou walk in thy way safely, and thy foot shall not stumble. When thou liest down, thou shalt not be afraid: yea, thou shalt lie down, and thy sleep shall be sweet. Be not afraid of sudden fear, neither of the desolation of the wicked, when it cometh. For the LORD shall be thy confidence, and shall keep thy foot from being taken.

(Notice again how high Wisdom is exalted. God, through Solomon, can't say enough about it. Remember what He said in chapter 1, here in chapter 3 he elaborates some more on the benefits of Wisdom – if it's capitalized, it's godly wisdom – the only accurate kind of wisdom. God says dealing wisely will add days to your life. Wise choices will help you financially. Wise choices will insure you a more peaceful and pleasant life. Using Wisdom will provide you a measure of safety.)

Prov: 3:27-35: Withhold not good from them to whom it is due, when it is in the power of thine hand to do it. 28: Say not unto thy neighbour, Go, and come again, and to morrow I will give; when thou hast it by thee. Devise not evil against thy neighbour, seeing he dwelleth securely by thee. Strive not with a man without cause, if he have done thee no harm. Envy thou not the oppressor, and choose none of his ways. For the froward is abomination to the LORD: but his secret is with the righteous. The curse of the LORD is in the house of the wicked: but he blesseth the habitation of the just. Surely he scorneth the scorners: but he giveth grace unto the lowly. The wise shall inherit glory: but shame shall be the promotion of fools.

(These verses elaborate on some wise choices that are based on the fear of the Lord. The first one deals with doing good to people. The second one talks about not doing harm to people. The third wise choice is to avoid strife with people. The fourth wise admonition is avoid envying the ungodly. He says this can be done by remembering what's going to happen to the ungodly. Number 1, their choices will bring them trouble and God

will not be there to help them out and number 2, they're headed for hell. Froward means stubborn, willful, not easily controlled – they are an abomination to the Lord. It says He scorns the scorner. That means they scorned His Word (had contempt for it) and so He will scorn their trouble, but He gives grace – help in time of need – to the lowly or humble – those who worship Him and ask Him for His help. The wise, He says, will end up honored. The foolish will be shamed.)

Prov: 4:1-13: Hear, ye children, the instruction of a father, and attend to know understanding. For I give you good doctrine, forsake ye not my law. For I was my father's son, tender and only beloved in the sight of my mother. He taught me also, and said unto me, Let thine heart retain my words: keep my commandments, and live. Get wisdom, get understanding: forget it not; neither decline from the words of my mouth. Forsake her not, and she shall preserve thee: love her, and she shall keep thee. Wisdom is the principal thing; therefore get wisdom: and with all thy getting get understanding. Exalt her, and she shall promote thee: she shall bring thee to honour, when thou dost embrace her. She shall give to thine head an ornament of grace: a crown of glory shall she deliver to thee. Hear, O my son, and receive my sayings; and the years of thy life shall be many. I have taught thee in the way of wisdom; I have led thee in right paths. When thou goest, thy steps shall not be straitened; and when thou runnest, thou shalt not stumble. Take fast hold of instruction; let her not go: keep her; for she is thy life.

(God, speaking through Solomon, is still begging His children to walk in wisdom. He says to hide His word in your heart and obey it. He says to get wisdom and understanding and keep it. He says wisdom is the principle thing. That means it has top priority along with love. This is why the enemy keeps pushing and enticing the church into one ditch or the other. Legalism – wisdom without love – or liberalism – love without wisdom – those are the ditches.)

Prov: 4:14-19: Enter not into the path of the wicked, and go not in the way of evil men. Avoid it, pass not by it, turn from it, and pass away. For they sleep not, except they have done mischief; and their sleep is taken away, unless they cause some to fall. For they eat the bread of wickedness, and drink the wine of violence. But the path of the just is as the shining light, that shineth more and more unto the perfect day. The way of the wicked is as darkness: they know not at what they stumble.

Prov: 4:20-27: My son, attend to my words; incline thine ear unto my sayings. Let them not depart from thine eyes; keep them in the midst of thine heart. For they are life unto those that find them, and health to all their flesh. Keep thy heart with all diligence; for out of it are the issues of life. Put away from thee a froward mouth, and perverse lips put far from thee. Let thine eyes look right on, and let thine eyelids look straight before thee. Ponder the path of thy feet, and let all thy ways be established. Turn not to the right hand nor to the left: remove thy foot from evil.

(Here God elaborates on how to cleave unto His Word and why it is that important. Incline your ear to His

saying. Let them not depart – keep them in the middle of your heart – keep them there with all diligence. Why? Out of them are the issues or important matters of life. He tells us how to keep them there. Put away from you a disobedience mouth. He has much to say in the Bible about what we are to say. Don't let your eyes look on things that will weaken you from doing things His way and speaking things His way. Every time you choose a path, think about where you will end up because of that choice. You can know that from God's testimony – the Bible, and from life's experience – the testimony of those who have been there and done that. He tells us not to go off His path to the right or to the left. Stick with the Bible. This is very timely, because many have gone off to the left and to the right and they will end up with the mark of the beast.)

Prov: 5:1-14: My son, attend unto my wisdom, and bow thine ear to my understanding: That thou mayest regard discretion, and that thy lips may keep knowledge. For the lips of a strange woman drop as an honeycomb, and her mouth is smoother than oil: But her end is bitter as wormwood, sharp as a twoedged sword. Her feet go down to death; her steps take hold on hell. Lest thou shouldest ponder the path of life, her ways are moveable, that thou canst not know them. Hear me now therefore, O ye children, and depart not from the words of my mouth. Remove thy way far from her, and come not nigh the door of her house: Lest thou give thine honour unto others, and thy years unto the cruel: Lest strangers be filled with thy wealth; and thy labours be in the house of a stranger; And thou mourn at the last, when thy flesh and thy body are consumed, And say, How have I hated instruction, and my heart despised reproof; And have not obeyed the voice of my teachers, nor inclined mine ear to them that instructed me! I was almost in all evil in the midst of the congregation and assembly.

(Prov: 5 is a thorough warning not to go after or yield to strange women. You are urged to consider the end of the matter. You could lose everything – your health, your job, your money, your mate, your reputation.)

Prov: 5:15-23: Drink waters out of thine own cistern, and running waters out of thine own well. Let thy fountains be dispersed abroad, and rivers of waters in the streets. Let them be only thine own, and not strangers' with thee. Let thy fountain be blessed: and rejoice with the wife of thy youth. Let her be as the loving hind and pleasant roe; let her breasts satisfy thee at all times; and be thou ravished always with her love. And why wilt thou, my son, be ravished with a strange woman, and embrace the bosom of a stranger? For the ways of man are before the eyes of the LORD, and he pondereth all his goings. His own iniquities shall take the wicked himself, and he shall be holden with the cords of his sins. He shall die without instruction; and in the greatness of his folly he shall go astray.

(The rest of Proverbs chapter 5 tells you what to do instead of yielding to the strange woman – which is to enjoy your wife. He points out that not only will you have safety from the above hazards, but you will not be in sin.)

Prov: 6:1-5: My son, if thou be surety for thy friend, if thou hast stricken thy hand with a stranger, Thou art snared with the words of thy mouth, thou art taken with the words of thy mouth. Do this now, my son, deliver thyself, when thou art come into the hand of thy friend; go, humble thyself, and make sure thy friend. Give not

sleep to thine eyes, nor slumber to thine eyelids. Deliver thyself as a roe from the hand of the hunter, and as a bird from the hand of the fowler.

(He says get out of debt. Being in debt is like being caught in a snare.)

Prov: 6:6-11: Go to the ant, thou sluggard; consider her ways, and be wise: Which having no guide, overseer, or ruler, Provideth her meat in the summer, and gathereth her food in the harvest. How long wilt thou sleep, O sluggard? When wilt thou arise out of thy sleep? Yet a little sleep, a little slumber, a little folding of the hands to sleep: So shall thy poverty come as one that travelleth, and thy want as an armed man.

(He says one way to keep out of debt is to work hard and pay cash. He points out that laziness will get your poor and keep you poor.)

Prov: 6:12-15: A naughty person, a wicked man, walketh with a froward mouth. He winketh with his eyes, he speaketh with his feet, he teacheth with his fingers; Frowardness is in his heart, he deviseth mischief continually; he soweth discord. Therefore shall his calamity come suddenly; suddenly shall he be broken without remedy.

(He says a man who does not control his tongue, does not control his thoughts either and he will end up in trouble for it.)

Prov: 6:16-19: These six things doth the LORD hate: yea, seven are an abomination unto him: A proud look, a lying tongue, and hands that shed innocent blood, An heart that deviseth wicked imaginations, feet that be swift in running to mischief, A false witness that speaketh lies, and he that soweth discord among brethren. (These six things are to be avoided at all cost.)

Prov: 6:20-35: My son, keep thy father's commandment, and forsake not the law of thy mother: Bind them continually upon thine heart, and tie them about thy neck. When thou goest, it shall lead thee; when thou sleepest, it shall keep thee; and when thou awakest, it shall talk with thee. For the commandment is a lamp; and the law is light; and reproofs of instruction are the way of life: To keep thee from the evil woman, from the flattery of the tongue of a strange woman. Lust not after her beauty in thine heart; neither let her take thee with her eyelids. For by means of a whorish woman a man is brought to a piece of bread: and the adulteress will hunt for the precious life. Can a man take fire in his bosom, and his clothes not be burned? Can one go upon hot coals, and his feet not be burned? So he that goeth in to his neighbour's wife; whosoever toucheth her shall not be innocent. Men do not despise a thief, if he steal to satisfy his soul when he is hungry; But if he be found, he shall restore sevenfold; he shall give all the substance of his house. But whoso committeth adultery with a woman lacketh understanding: he that doeth it destroyeth his own soul. A wound and dishonour shall he get; and

his reproach shall not be wiped away. For jealousy is the rage of a man: therefore he will not spare in the day of vengeance. He will not regard any ransom; neither will he rest content, though thou givest many gifts.

(Here we are urged again to know what God teaches and keep that knowledge handy at all times. Why? Because it's if you are a doer of the word, you will be kept from evil. If you are someone prone to sexual temptations, God's teachings that are ever-present with you will help you not to fall. He then warns against committing adultery and goes into some of the dangers of committing adultery – you will get burned.)

Prov: 7:1-27: My son, keep my words, and lay up my commandments with thee.

2: Keep my commandments, and live; and my law as the apple of thine eye.

3: Bind them upon thy fingers, write them upon the table of thine heart.

4: Say unto wisdom, Thou art my sister; and call understanding thy kinswoman:

5: That they may keep thee from the strange woman, from the stranger which flattereth with her words.

6: For at the window of my house I looked through my casement,

7: And beheld among the simple ones, I discerned among the youths, a young man void of understanding,

8: Passing through the street near her corner; and he went the way to her house,

9: In the twilight, in the evening, in the black and dark night:

10: And, behold, there met him a woman with the attire of an harlot, and subtil of heart.

11: (She is loud and stubborn; her feet abide not in her house:

12: Now is she without, now in the streets, and lieth in wait at every corner.)

13: So she caught him, and kissed him, and with an impudent face said unto him,

14: I have peace offerings with me; this day have I payed my vows.

15: Therefore came I forth to meet thee, diligently to seek thy face, and I have found thee.

16: I have decked my bed with coverings of tapestry, with carved works, with fine linen of Egypt.

17: I have perfumed my bed with myrrh, aloes, and cinnamon.

18: Come, let us take our fill of love until the morning: let us solace ourselves with loves.

19: For the goodman is not at home, he is gone a long journey:

20: He hath taken a bag of money with him, and will come home at the day appointed.

21: With her much fair speech she caused him to yield, with the flattering of her lips she forced him.

22: He goeth after her straightway, as an ox goeth to the slaughter, or as a fool to the correction of the stocks;

23: Till a dart strike through his liver; as a bird hasteth to the snare, and knoweth not that it is for his life.

24: Hearken unto me now therefore, O ye children, and attend to the words of my mouth.

25: Let not thine heart decline to her ways, go not astray in her paths.

26: For she hath cast down many wounded: yea, many strong men have been slain by her.

27: Her house is the way to hell, going down to the chambers of death.

Deliverance

Lk: 1:68-70: Blessed be the Lord God of Israel; for he hath visited and redeemed his people, 69: And hath raised up an horn of salvation for us in the house of his servant David; 70: As he spake by the mouth of his holy prophets, which have been since the world began:

What is the salvation that Zechariah is prophesying about here? The Holy Spirit is talking about Jesus' birth and the significance of it which we will find out about as we read on.

71-75: That we should be saved from our enemies, and from the hand of all that hate us; 72: To perform the mercy promised to our fathers, and to remember his holy covenant; 73: The oath which he swore to our father Abraham, 74: That he would grant unto us, that we being delivered out of the hand of our enemies might serve him without fear, 75: In holiness and righteousness before him, all the days of our life.

It says that Jesus came to give us the Holy Spirit and that had to be done through His total obedience to the Father, making right everything that Adam and Eve had destroyed and thus reconciling to God all those who want the heavenly Father. The reconciliation is the act of God's Spirit moving into the person who chose to have it so. Adam and Eve were made spiritually alive when God breathed the breath of life into them and they died spiritually when they chose to listen to the liar so they could do their own thing instead of doing righteousness at all cost which is what God and His children do.

So, He came to reconcile us to the Father and make a way for mankind to be born again of the Spirit of God. We know this is important in order for a person to have a close personal relationship with God, but there's more to this passage. It says that this salvation is to provide deliverance from our enemies and that the believers have been enabled to serve God without fear, which enables them to live a life of holiness and walk in righteousness. Holiness means the believer lives a life separated from the world – a life hid with Christ in God.

I am magnifying these scriptures to make a point that it seems to me is not taken by many Christians in this day and age and that is that Christians are to live a life separated unto God and are expected by God to do what is right even if every fiber of their being bulks at it. This can be done because the believer has repented of doing their own thing and has been born again of the Spirit of God. Not only that, but they then have the Bible to instruct them, the Holy Spirit to lead them, and Jesus Christ to live in them and coach or shepherd them on the right paths. So those who receive God's gift of salvation have been equipped to walk in righteousness and holiness and that is the only life for a true believer.

Today, many people consider themselves to be Christians and some even know that we are to be separated from the world, but I think the understanding of that has changed. I think it originally meant that a Christian would renew their mind with the word of God and walk as the new creature they are with their new heart and new mind and it would be as in 1Jn: 2:15-17: Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world. If any man love the world, the love of the Father is not in him. 16: For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, and the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world. 17: And the world passeth away, and the lust thereof: but he that doeth the will of God abideth for ever.

The difference between the church and the world would have been very significant and noticeable. But I think the meaning has changed for the majority of the church into meaning we don't go quite as far as the world does on things so therefore we are different.

Sadly, the line keeps moving back for the world and also for the church until now the church is as bad as the world used to be and the world is even worse. This is a very serious situation and God's great shaking has started. All those who do not receive God's salvation as proclaimed above will lose everything, maybe even eternal life.

Heb: 12:24-29: And to Jesus the mediator of the new covenant, and to the blood of sprinkling, that speaketh better things than that of Abel. 25: See that ye refuse not him that speaketh. For if they escaped not who refused him that spake on earth, much more shall not we escape, if we turn away from him that speaketh from heaven: 26: Whose voice then shook the earth: but now he hath promised, saying, Yet once more I shake not the earth only, but also heaven. 27: And this word, Yet once more, signifieth the removing of those things that are shaken, as of things that are made, that those things which cannot be shaken may remain. 28: Wherefore we receiving a kingdom which cannot be moved, let us have grace, whereby we may serve God acceptably with reverence and godly fear: 29: For our God is a consuming fire.

Paying the Price

Or

True Reverence

Are you truly saved from sin and death or are you sneaking into the movies – in this case into God's fold?

These are not just words on a page. Listen to God speak:

Deut: 10:12: And now, Israel, what doth the LORD thy God require of thee, but to fear the LORD thy God, to walk in all his ways, and to love him, and to serve the LORD thy God with all thy heart and with all thy soul,

Deut: 4:1-6: Now therefore hearken, O Israel, unto the statutes and unto the judgments, which I teach you, for to do them, that ye may live, and go in and possess the land which the LORD God of your fathers giveth you. 2: Ye shall not add unto the word which I command you, neither shall ye diminish ought from it, that ye may keep the commandments of the LORD your God which I command you. 3: Your eyes have seen what the LORD did because of Baal-peor: for all the men that followed Baal-peor, the LORD thy God hath destroyed them from among you. 4: But ye that did cleave unto the LORD your God are alive every one of you this day. 5: Behold, I have taught you statutes and judgments, even as the LORD my God commanded me, that ye should do so in the land whither ye go to possess it. 6: Keep therefore and do them; for this is your wisdom and your understanding in the sight of the nations, which shall hear all these statutes, and say, Surely this great nation is a wise and understanding people.

Deut: 11:13-28: And it shall come to pass, if ye shall hearken diligently unto my commandments which I command you this day, to love the LORD your God, and to serve him with all your heart and with all your soul, 14: That I will give you the rain of your land in his due season, the first rain and the latter rain, that thou mayest gather in thy corn, and thy wine, and thine oil. 15: And I will send grass in thy fields for thy cattle, that thou mayest eat and be full. 16: Take heed to yourselves, that your heart be not deceived, and ye turn aside, and serve other gods, and worship them; 17: And then the LORD's wrath be kindled against you, and he shut up the heaven, that there be no rain, and that the land yield not her fruit; and lest ye perish quickly from off the good land which the LORD giveth you. 18: Therefore shall ye lay up these my words in your heart and in your soul, and bind them for a sign upon your hand, that they may be as frontlets between your eyes. 19: And ye shall teach them your children, speaking of them when thou sittest in thine house, and when thou walkest by the way, when thou liest down, and when thou risest up. 20: And thou shalt write them upon the door posts of thine house, and upon thy gates: 21: That your days may be multiplied, and the days of your children, in the land which the LORD sware unto your fathers to give them, as the days of heaven upon the earth. 22: For if ye shall diligently

keep all these commandments which I command you, to do them, to love the LORD your God, to walk in all his ways, and to cleave unto him; 23: Then will the LORD drive out all these nations from before you, and ye shall possess greater nations and mightier than yourselves. 24: Every place whereon the soles of your feet shall tread shall be yours: from the wilderness and Lebanon, from the river, the river Euphrates, even unto the uttermost sea shall your coast be. 25: There shall no man be able to stand before you: for the LORD your God shall lay the fear of you and the dread of you upon all the land that ye shall tread upon, as he hath said unto you. 26: Behold, I set before you this day a blessing and a curse; 27: A blessing, if ye obey the commandments of the LORD your God, which I command you this day: 28: And a curse, if ye will not obey the commandments of the LORD your God, but turn aside out of the way which I command you this day, to go after other gods, which ye have not known.

Josh: 1:6-8: Be strong and of a good courage: for unto this people shalt thou divide for an inheritance the land, which I swear unto their fathers to give them. 7: Only be thou strong and very courageous, that thou mayest observe to do according to all the law, which Moses my servant commanded thee: turn not from it to the right hand or to the left, that thou mayest prosper whithersoever thou goest. 8: This book of the law shall not depart out of thy mouth; but thou shalt meditate therein day and night, that thou mayest observe to do according to all that is written therein: for then thou shalt make thy way prosperous, and then thou shalt have good success.

Ps: 1:1-6: Blessed is the man that walketh not in the counsel of the ungodly, nor standeth in the way of sinners, nor sitteth in the seat of the scornful. 2: But his delight is in the law of the LORD; and in his law doth he meditate day and night. 3: And he shall be like a tree planted by the rivers of water, that bringeth forth his fruit in his season; his leaf also shall not wither; and whatsoever he doeth shall prosper. 4: The ungodly are not so: but are like the chaff which the wind driveth away. 5: Therefore the ungodly shall not stand in the judgment, nor sinners in the congregation of the righteous. 6: For the LORD knoweth the way of the righteous: but the way of the ungodly shall perish.

Ps: 81: 8-16: Hear, O my people, and I will testify unto thee: O Israel, if thou wilt hearken unto me; 9: There shall no strange god be in thee; neither shalt thou worship any strange god. 10: I am the LORD thy God, which brought thee out of the land of Egypt: open thy mouth wide, and I will fill it. 11: But my people would not hearken to my voice; and Israel would none of me. 12: So I gave them up unto their own hearts' lust: and they walked in their own counsels. 13: Oh that my people had hearkened unto me, and Israel had walked in my ways! 14: I should soon have subdued their enemies, and turned my hand against their adversaries. 15: The haters of the LORD should have submitted themselves unto him: but their time should have endured for ever. 16: He should have fed them also with the finest of the wheat: and with honey out of the rock should I have satisfied thee.

Ps: 91:1-16: He that dwelleth in the secret place of the most High shall abide under the shadow of the Almighty. 2: I will say of the LORD, He is my refuge and my fortress: my God; in him will I trust. 3: Surely he shall deliver thee from the snare of the fowler, and from the noisome pestilence. 4: He shall cover thee with his

feathers, and under his wings shalt thou trust: his truth shall be thy shield and buckler. 5: Thou shalt not be afraid for the terror by night; nor for the arrow that flieth by day; 6: Nor for the pestilence that walketh in darkness; nor for the destruction that wasteth at noonday. 7: A thousand shall fall at thy side, and ten thousand at thy right hand; but it shall not come nigh thee. 8: Only with thine eyes shalt thou behold and see the reward of the wicked. 9: Because thou hast made the LORD, which is my refuge, even the most High, thy habitation; 10: There shall no evil befall thee, neither shall any plague come nigh thy dwelling. 11: For he shall give his angels charge over thee, to keep thee in all thy ways. 12: They shall bear thee up in their hands, lest thou dash thy foot against a stone. 13: Thou shalt tread upon the lion and adder: the young lion and the dragon shalt thou trample under feet. 14: Because he hath set his love upon me, therefore will I deliver him: I will set him on high, because he hath known my name. 15: He shall call upon me, and I will answer him: I will be with him in trouble; I will deliver him, and honour him. 16: With long life will I satisfy him, and shew him my salvation.

Prov: 1:20-33: Wisdom crieth without; she uttereth her voice in the streets: 21: She crieth in the chief place of concourse, in the openings of the gates: in the city she uttereth her words, saying, 22: How long, ye simple ones, will ye love simplicity? and the scorers delight in their scorning, and fools hate knowledge? Turn you at my reproof: behold, I will pour out my spirit unto you, I will make known my words unto you. 24: Because I have called, and ye refused; I have stretched out my hand, and no man regarded; 25: But ye have set at nought all my counsel, and would none of my reproof: 26: I also will laugh at your calamity; I will mock when your fear cometh; 27: When your fear cometh as desolation, and your destruction cometh as a whirlwind; when distress and anguish cometh upon you. 28: Then shall they call upon me, but I will not answer; they shall seek me early, but they shall not find me: 29: For that they hated knowledge, and did not choose the fear of the LORD: 30: They would none of my counsel: they despised all my reproof. 31: Therefore shall they eat of the fruit of their own way, and be filled with their own devices. 32: For the turning away of the simple shall slay them, and the prosperity of fools shall destroy them. 33: But whoso hearkeneth unto me shall dwell safely, and shall be quiet from fear of evil.

Prov: 4:20-27: My son, attend to my words; incline thine ear unto my sayings. 21: Let them not depart from thine eyes; keep them in the midst of thine heart. 22: For they are life unto those that find them, and health to all their flesh. 23: Keep thy heart with all diligence; for out of it are the issues of life. 24: Put away from thee a froward mouth, and perverse lips put far from thee. 25: Let thine eyes look right on, and let thine eyelids look straight before thee. 26: Ponder the path of thy feet, and let all thy ways be established. 27: Turn not to the right hand nor to the left: remove thy foot from evil.

Isa: 66:1-2: Thus saith the LORD, The heaven is my throne, and the earth is my footstool: where is the house that ye build unto me? and where is the place of my rest? 2: For all those things hath mine hand made, and those things have been, saith the LORD: but to this man will I look, even to him that is poor and of a contrite spirit, and trembleth at my word.

Matt: 5:27-30: Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not commit adultery: 28: But I say

unto you, That whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her hath committed adultery with her already in his heart. 29: And if thy right eye offend thee, pluck it out, and cast it from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not that thy whole body should be cast into hell. 30: And if thy right hand offend thee, cut it off, and cast it from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not that thy whole body should be cast into hell.

Matt: 13:46-50: Who, when he had found one pearl of great price, went and sold all that he had, and bought it. 47: Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto a net, that was cast into the sea, and gathered of every kind: 48: Which, when it was full, they drew to shore, and sat down, and gathered the good into vessels, but cast the bad away. 49: So shall it be at the end of the world: the angels shall come forth, and sever the wicked from among the just, 50: And shall cast them into the furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth.: Who, when he had found one pearl of great price, went and sold all that he had, and bought it.

Matt: 16:24-27: Then said Jesus unto his disciples, If any man will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me. 25: For whosoever will save his life shall lose it: and whosoever will lose his life for my sake shall find it. 26: For what is a man profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul? 27: For the Son of man shall come in the glory of his Father with his angels; and then he shall reward every man according to his works.

Lk: 9:23-26: And he said to them all, If any man will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross daily, and follow me. 24: For whosoever will save his life shall lose it: but whosoever will lose his life for my sake, the same shall save it. 25: For what is a man advantaged, if he gain the whole world, and lose himself, or be cast away? 26: For whosoever shall be ashamed of me and of my words, of him shall the Son of man be ashamed, when he shall come in his own glory, and in his Father's, and of the holy angels.

Jn: 15:1-10: I am the true vine, and my Father is the husbandman. 2: Every branch in me that beareth not fruit he taketh away: and every branch that beareth fruit, he purgeth it, that it may bring forth more fruit. 3: Now ye are clean through the word which I have spoken unto you. 4: Abide in me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, except it abide in the vine; no more can ye, except ye abide in me. 5: I am the vine, ye are the branches: He that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: for without me ye can do nothing. 6: If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered; and men gather them, and cast them into the fire, and they are burned. 7: If ye abide in me, and my words abide in you, ye shall ask what ye will, and it shall be done unto you. 8: Herein is my Father glorified, that ye bear much fruit; so shall ye be my disciples. 9: As the Father hath loved me, so have I loved you: continue ye in my love. 10: If ye keep my commandments, ye shall abide in my love; even as I have kept my Father's commandments, and abide in his love.

Rom: 6:3-18: Know ye not, that so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized into his death?

4: Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death: that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life. 5: For if we have been planted together in the likeness of his death, we shall be also in the likeness of his resurrection: 6: Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with him, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin. 7: For he that is dead is freed from sin. 8: Now if we be dead with Christ, we believe that we shall also live with him: 9: Knowing that Christ being raised from the dead dieth no more; death hath no more dominion over him. 10: For in that he died, he died unto sin once: but in that he liveth, he liveth unto God. 11: Likewise reckon ye also yourselves to be dead indeed unto sin, but alive unto God through Jesus Christ our Lord. 12: Let not sin therefore reign in your mortal body, that ye should obey it in the lusts thereof. 13: Neither yield ye your members as instruments of unrighteousness unto sin: but yield yourselves unto God, as those that are alive from the dead, and your members as instruments of righteousness unto God. 14: For sin shall not have dominion over you: for ye are not under the law, but under grace. 15: What then? shall we sin, because we are not under the law, but under grace? God forbid. 16: Know ye not, that to whom ye yield yourselves servants to obey, his servants ye are to whom ye obey; whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousness? 17: But God be thanked, that ye were the servants of sin, but ye have obeyed from the heart that form of doctrine which was delivered you. 18: Being then made free from sin, ye became the servants of righteousness.

1Cor: 6:18-20: Flee fornication. Every sin that a man doeth is without the body; but he that committeth fornication sinneth against his own body. 19: What? know ye not that your body is the temple of the Holy Ghost which is in you, which ye have of God, and ye are not your own?

20: For ye are bought with a price: therefore glorify God in your body, and in your spirit, which are God's.

1Cor: 7:23: Ye are bought with a price; be not ye the servants of men.

Gal: 6:7-8: Be not deceived; God is not mocked: for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap. 8: For he that soweth to his flesh shall of the flesh reap corruption; but he that soweth to the Spirit shall of the Spirit reap life everlasting.

Overcoming the Carnal Nature

You must forsake all in order to follow Jesus. Lk: 14:33

You must deny yourself and take up your cross daily and follow Jesus. This means to give up your self-interest and do what falls to you to do to help others. Lk: 9:23

You must continue in well-doing. Rom: 2:7

You have to reckon yourself dead to sin and alive to God. This can be done because we partake of Jesus' crucifixion and subsequently His resurrection. Rom: 6-8

You present your body as a living sacrifice unto God and you must renew your mind with the word of God. Rom: 12: 1-2

You must know that your sins are forgiven and that you are indwelt by God's very Spirit and you can go boldly to the throne and obtain the help that you need. Heb: 4:16

You must submit yourself unto God and resist the devil. Jas: 4:6-8

You must be sober and vigilant and stand fast. Eph. 6:10-18, 1Pet: 5:8-9

You must press toward the mark, receiving discipline and training as any Olympic runner does. Phil: 3:14

You must realize that Jesus paid the price. He bought you. He is now your Lord. You have been delivered out of the power of darkness and translated into the kingdom of God's dear Son. Col: 1:13

You must be rooted and grounded in faith and not be moved away from the hope of the Gospel. Col: 1:23

You must remember that Jesus went through it all and is helping you do it. Heb: 2:17

You must purify yourself as He is pure. 1Jn: 3:3

You must remember that it takes many years to grow to full stature.

In Jesus' letters in Revelation, He gave this outline: (Amp. V.)

Rev: 2:5: Repent— change the inner man *to* meet God's will . . .

Rev: 2:10: Be loyally faithful unto death.

Repent of any teachings that are not biblical. Rev: 2:13-16: I know thy works, and where thou dwellest, even where Satan's seat is: and thou holdest fast my name, and hast not denied my faith, even in those days wherein Antipas was my faithful martyr, who was slain among you, where Satan dwelleth. 14: But I have a few things against thee, because thou hast there them that hold the doctrine of Balaam, who taught Balac to cast a stumbling-block before the children of Israel, to eat things sacrificed unto idols, and to commit fornication. 15: So hast thou also them that hold the doctrine of the Nicolaitans, which thing I hate. 16: Repent; or else I will come unto thee quickly, and will fight against them with the sword of my mouth.

Rev: 2:20: Do not tolerate destructive teachings.

Rev: 2:25: Cleave unto the truth, hold fast to what you have.

Rev: 3:1-2: Those who are as dead are to rouse yourself and keep awake, and strengthen and invigorate what remains and is at the point of dying; for He has not found any work of yours meeting the requirements of His God or perfect in His sight.

Rev: 3:3-4: Call to mind the lessons you have received and heard; continually lay them to heart and obey them and repent. Those who have not soiled their clothes shall walk with Him in white, because they are worthy and deserving. For those who have guarded and kept His word of patience and endurance – have held fast the lesson of His patience with the expected endurance that He gives us. Therefore He will also keep them safe from the hour of trial which is coming on the whole world, to try those who dwell upon the earth. Vs 10: Because thou hast kept the word of my patience, I also will keep thee from the hour of temptation, which shall come upon all the world, to try them that dwell upon the earth.

Rev: 3:18: Purchase from Him gold refined and tested by fire, that you may be truly wealthy, and white clothes to clothe you and to keep the shame of your nudity from being seen and salve to put on your eyes that you may see.

Rev: 3:19: Be enthusiastic and in earnest and burning with zeal.

God Covered Every Need

The crucifixion takes care of cleansing us and destroying the problem area which is our lower or carnal nature.

Jesus blood shed for all is powerful enough to wash away any and all sin. He bore the punishment for our sins to deliver us from all guilt, ignorance, and bondage which causes sicknesses, diseases, and curses. We still have tests and trials, but we also have a SAVIOR AND DELIVERER. Through this one act of agape love by Jesus Christ, God provided a clean spirit that a Holy God can dwell in, access to the throne anytime, deliverance from the sin life and our lower nature, and healing physically, mentally, spiritually, emotionally, and financially.

The resurrection provides eternal life, a loving Father, a living Savior, a perfect hero, and example, a good shepherd, the door to life, access to the way, the truth, and the life, a trustworthy Lord, access to the Spirit of truth to guide us, and hope for the future.

God gives believers a new heart, new goals, new love, new hope and expectancy. He gives them many promises that help them through the tests and trials of life and He gives them peace in the storms.

God provided the Bible, a complete guide to life. It gives a picture of the true God and real life. In it you can find strength, hope, deliverance, promises, instruction, wisdom, understanding, weapons and armor to resist temptation and deception, and much more.

God offers peace and reconciliation with Him. He offers everyone eternal life through being born again of His Spirit (the receiver becomes spiritually alive as Adam and Eve were before the fall). The believer again becomes His child in the sense of being able to have a close personal relationship – a Father/child relationship with Him. God becomes involved in the believer's daily life, guiding, teaching, training, and helping, as any loving parent would do.

The Blessings and Obedience Go Hand in Hand

This article is to show that obedience is directly linked to receiving the blessings.

Deut: 5:33: Ye shall walk in all the ways which the LORD your God hath commanded you, that ye may live, and that it may be well with you, and that ye may prolong your days in the land which ye shall possess.

The blessings and curse of the law:

Deut: 28:1-13: And it shall come to pass, if thou shalt hearken diligently unto the voice of the LORD thy God, to observe and to do all his commandments which I command thee this day, that the LORD thy God will set thee on high above all nations of the earth: 2: And all these blessings shall come on thee, and overtake thee, if thou shalt hearken unto the voice of the LORD thy God. 3: Blessed shalt thou be in the city, and blessed shalt thou be in the field. 4: Blessed shall be the fruit of thy body, and the fruit of thy ground, and the fruit of thy cattle, the increase of thy kine, and the flocks of thy sheep. 5: Blessed shall be thy basket and thy store. 6: Blessed shalt thou be when thou comest in, and blessed shalt thou be when thou goest out. 7: The LORD shall cause thine enemies that rise up against thee to be smitten before thy face: they shall come out against thee one way, and flee before thee seven ways. 8: The LORD shall command the blessing upon thee in thy storehouses, and in all that thou settest thine hand unto; and he shall bless thee in the land which the LORD thy God giveth thee. 9: The LORD shall establish thee an holy people unto himself, as he hath sworn unto thee, if thou shalt keep the commandments of the LORD thy God, and walk in his ways. 10: And all people of the earth shall see that thou art called by the name of the LORD; and they shall be afraid of thee. 11: And the LORD shall make thee plenteous in goods, in the fruit of thy body, and in the fruit of thy cattle, and in the fruit of thy ground, in the land which the LORD sware unto thy fathers to give thee. 12: The LORD shall open unto thee his good treasure, the heaven to give the rain unto thy land in his season, and to bless all the work of thine hand: and thou shalt lend unto many nations, and thou shalt not borrow. 13: And the LORD shall make thee the head, and not the tail; and thou shalt be above only, and thou shalt not be beneath; if that thou hearken unto the commandments of the LORD thy God, which I command thee this day, to observe and to do them:

Deut: 14-25: And thou shalt not go aside from any of the words which I command thee this day, to the right hand, or to the left, to go after other gods to serve them. 15: But it shall come to pass, if thou wilt not hearken unto the voice of the LORD thy God, to observe to do all his commandments and his statutes which I command

thee this day; that all these curses shall come upon thee, and overtake thee: 16: Cursed shalt thou be in the city, and cursed shalt thou be in the field. 17: Cursed shall be thy basket and thy store. 18: Cursed shall be the fruit of thy body, and the fruit of thy land, the increase of thy kine, and the flocks of thy sheep. 19: Cursed shalt thou be when thou comest in, and cursed shalt thou be when thou goest out. 20: The LORD shall send upon thee cursing, vexation, and rebuke, in all that thou settest thine hand unto for to do, until thou be destroyed, and until thou perish quickly; because of the wickedness of thy doings, whereby thou hast forsaken me. 21: The LORD shall make the pestilence cleave unto thee, until he have consumed thee from off the land, whither thou goest to possess it. 22: The LORD shall smite thee with a consumption, and with a fever, and with an inflammation, and with an extreme burning, and with the sword, and with blasting, and with mildew; and they shall pursue thee until thou perish. 23: And thy heaven that is over thy head shall be brass, and the earth that is under thee shall be iron. 24: The LORD shall make the rain of thy land powder and dust: from heaven shall it come down upon thee, until thou be destroyed. 25: The LORD shall cause thee to be smitten before thine enemies: thou shalt go out one way against them, and flee seven ways before them: and shalt be removed into all the kingdoms of the earth. ...

Redemption from the curse:

Gal: 3:13-16: Christ hath redeemed us from the curse of the law, being made a curse for us: for it is written, Cursed is every one that hangeth on a tree: That the blessing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles through Jesus Christ; that we might receive the promise of the Spirit through faith. Brethren, I speak after the manner of men; Though it be but a man's covenant, yet if it be confirmed, no man disannulleth, or addeth thereto. Now to Abraham and his seed were the promises made. He saith not, And to seeds, as of many; but as of one, And to thy seed, which is Christ. (Here it says that the blessings and the Holy Spirit promised to Abraham are to be given to Jesus and all who hide and abide in Him.

2Cor: 1:20: For all the promises of God in him are yea, and in him Amen, unto the glory of God by us.)

How does one abide in Jesus?

Jn: 15:4: Abide in me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, except it abide in the vine; no more can ye, except ye abide in me.

Jn: 15:7: If ye abide in me, and my words abide in you, ye shall ask what ye will, and it shall be done unto you.

Jn: 15:10: If ye keep my commandments, ye shall abide in my love; even as I have kept my Father's commandments, and abide in his love.

What I want to make sure is perfectly clear is that curses are the inevitable result of not living uprightly – not living God’s way and God has redeemed us from the curse by enabling us to live righteously.

God gave us (meaning believers) a perfect Savior:

- Someone who can bridge the gap between God and man.
- Someone who would go through the death due us and then give us His life.
- Someone whose blood was so pure that it can wash away any and every sin.
- Someone who walked God’s ways out as a Spirit-filled man and can therefore help us walk it out.

He made a way for our lower nature to be crucified so that we can be born again of the Spirit of God so that we can walk by the Spirit and not by the dictates of the lower nature. (We are not only human.)

He calls for repentance of our ways and then gives us a new heart, a heart to please Him.

He enters into a covenant with us – a Father/child relationship and writes His laws in our hearts – which means He gives us the will and the way to obey Him.

He gave us the Spirit of truth to combat the liar.

He gave us the full armor of God to combat the enemy. (Eph: 6)

He gave us a ingenious instruction book that covers everything we need to know in general.

He opened the way for us to interact with Himself at any time and obtain any further guidance that we may need. (prayer)

Jer: 31:31-33: Behold, the days come, saith the LORD, that I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel, and with the house of Judah: 32: Not according to the covenant that I made with their fathers in the day that I took them by the hand to bring them out of the land of Egypt; which my covenant they brake, although I was an husband unto them, saith the LORD: 33: But this shall be the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel; After those days, saith the LORD, I will put my law in their inward parts, and write it in their hearts; and will be

their God, and they shall be my people.

Jer: 32:40: And I will make an everlasting covenant with them, that I will not turn away from them, to do them good; but I will put my fear in their hearts, that they shall not depart from me.

Warning:

Prov: 1:24-33: Because I have called, and ye refused; I have stretched out my hand, and no man regarded; 25: But ye have set at nought all my counsel, and would none of my reproof: 26: I also will laugh at your calamity; I will mock when your fear cometh; 27: When your fear cometh as desolation, and your destruction cometh as a whirlwind; when distress and anguish cometh upon you. 28: Then shall they call upon me, but I will not answer; they shall seek me early, but they shall not find me: 29: For that they hated knowledge, and did not choose the fear of the LORD: 30: They would none of my counsel: they despised all my reproof. 31: Therefore shall they eat of the fruit of their own way, and be filled with their own devices. 32: For the turning away of the simple shall slay them, and the prosperity of fools shall destroy them. 33: But whoso hearkeneth unto me shall dwell safely, and shall be quiet from fear of evil.

Jer: 5:25: Your iniquities have turned away these things, and your sins have withholden good things from you.

Break the Cycle

I think the wheel in Ezekiel is referring to the cycle of life – the different emotions a person goes through and what the four main cycles can be compared to. If my analysis is correct, God wants us to know that our feelings and emotions are powerful to the point of effecting our whole life – steering our course. I will show that when a Christian walks by the spirit and not by the flesh he/she is enabled to overcome the downers in life.

Ezek: 1:5-20: Also out of the midst thereof came the likeness of four living creatures. And this was their appearance; they had the likeness of a man. And every one had four faces, and every one had four wings. And their feet were straight feet; and the sole of their feet was like the sole of a calf's foot: and they sparkled like the colour of burnished brass. And they had the hands of a man under their wings on their four sides; and they four had their faces and their wings. Their wings were joined one to another; they turned not when they went; they

went every one straight forward. As for the likeness of their faces, they four had the face of a man, and the face of a lion, on the right side: and they four had the face of an ox on the left side; they four also had the face of an eagle. Thus were their faces: and their wings were stretched upward; two wings of every one were joined one to another, and two covered their bodies. And they went every one straight forward: whither the spirit was to go, they went; and they turned not when they went. As for the likeness of the living creatures, their appearance was like burning coals of fire, and like the appearance of lamps: it went up and down among the living creatures; and the fire was bright, and out of the fire went forth lightning. And the living creatures ran and returned as the appearance of a flash of lightning. Now as I beheld the living creatures, behold one wheel upon the earth by the living creatures, with his four faces. The appearance of the wheels and their work was like unto the colour of a beryl: and they four had one likeness: and their appearance and their work was as it were a wheel in the middle of a wheel. When they went, they went upon their four sides: and they turned not when they went. As for their rings, they were so high that they were dreadful; and their rings were full of eyes round about them four. And when the living creatures went, the wheels went by them: and when the living creatures were lifted up from the earth, the wheels were lifted up. Whithersoever the spirit was to go, they went, thither was their spirit to go; and the wheels were lifted up over against them: for the spirit of the living creature was in the wheels.

I think that the wheel within the wheel spoken of in the above scripture is talking about human's emotions and circumstances changing causing them to respond and react in a given way and these choices affect the person's whole life. We (humans) go through a cycle of emotions and circumstances. Note the example below.

Say a person is knocked down by life's blows and God gradually helps him or her up (for we are applying this to God's people). Say this person's emotions then, because of God's encouragement, go way up and the person experiences a high – soaring like the [eagle]. The next stage, again because of God's encouragement and because the person is on a high, he/she will be brave and strong like a [lion]. But life's circumstances and the person's own feelings about things cause him/her to be vulnerable the [ox – dumb brute] and eventually they are worn down and knocked down again. It's a cycle and it causes the person a lot of trouble. Is there any way out?

Yes, praise the Lord, there is. Through Jesus we are more than conquerors. Notice in Ezek: 10:14: the ox is not there, there is a cherub [submissive to God] instead. When a Christian walks by the spirit and not by the flesh he/she is enabled to overcome the ox.

Ezek: 10:13-17: As for the wheels, it was cried unto them in my hearing, O wheel. And every one had four faces: the first face was the face of a cherub, and the second face was the face of a man, and the third the face of a lion, and the fourth the face of an eagle. And the cherubims were lifted up. This is the living creature that I saw by the river of Chebar. And when the cherubims went, the wheels went by them: and when the cherubims lifted up their wings to mount up from the earth, the same wheels also turned not from beside them. When they stood, these stood; and when they were lifted up, these lifted up themselves also: for the spirit of the living creature was in them.

How to Protect Your Heart

Summary– Keep your eyes focused on God and His kingdom.

Deut: 20:17-18: But thou shalt utterly destroy them; namely, the Hittites, and the Amorites, the Canaanites, and the Perizzites, the Hivites, and the Jebusites; as the Lord thy God hath commanded thee: That they teach you not to do after all their abominations, which they have done unto their gods; so should ye sin against the Lord your God. [Spiritually, the enemies referred to here are the inhabitants of the land or the sins, bad habits, and false gods in our lives.]

Josh: 23:7: That ye come not among these nations, these that remain among you; neither make mention of the name of their gods, nor cause to swear by them, neither serve them, nor bow yourselves unto them:

Judges: 2:1-3: And an angel of the Lord came up from Gilgal to Bochim, and said, I made you to go up out of Egypt, and have brought you unto the land which I sware unto your fathers; and I said, I will never break My covenant with you. And ye shall make no league with the inhabitants of this land; ye shall throw down their altars: but ye have not obeyed My voice: why have ye done this? Wherefore I also said, I will not drive them out from before you; but they shall be as thorns in your sides, and their gods shall be a snare unto you. [When we come into covenant with God, this is part of it. We are receiving Him as our Father and God. All this other has to go.]

Prov: 4:20-27: My son, attend to My words; incline thine ear unto My sayings. Let them not depart from thine eyes; keep them in the midst of thine heart. For they are life unto those that find them, and health to all their flesh. Keep thy heart with all diligence; for out of it are the issues of life. Put away from thee a froward mouth, and perverse lips put far from thee. Let thine eyes look right on, and let thine eyelids look straight before thee. Ponder the path of thy feet, and let all thy ways be established. Turn not to the right hand nor to the left: remove thy foot from evil.

Matt: 6:33: But seek ye first the kingdom of God, and His righteousness; and all these things shall be added unto you.

2Thess: 3:6: Now we command you, brethren, in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that ye withdraw yourselves from every brother that walketh disorderly, and not after the tradition which he received of us.

1Tim: 6:20-21: O Timothy, keep that which is committed to thy trust, avoiding profane and vain babblings, and oppositions of science falsely so called: Which some professing have erred concerning the faith. Grace be with thee. Amen.

2Tim: 1:12-14: For the which cause I also suffer these things: nevertheless I am not ashamed: for I know whom I have believed, and am persuaded that He is able to keep that which I have committed unto Him against that day. Hold fast the form of sound words, which thou hast heard of me, in faith and love which is in Christ Jesus. That good thing which was committed unto thee keep by the Holy Ghost which dwelleth in us.

2Tim: 2:16-23: But shun profane and vain babblings: for they will increase unto more ungodliness. And their word will eat as doth a canker: of whom is Hymenaeus and Philetus; who concerning the truth have erred, saying that the resurrection is past already; and overthrow the faith of some: Nevertheless the foundation of God standeth sure, having this seal, The Lord knoweth them that are His. And, Let every one that nameth the name of Christ depart from iniquity. But in a great house there are not only vessels of gold and of silver, but also of wood and of earth; and some to honour, and some to dishonour. If a man therefore purge himself from these, he shall be a vessel unto honour, sanctified, and meet for the master's use, and prepared unto every good work. Flee also youthful lusts: but follow righteousness, faith, charity, peace, with them that call on the Lord out of a pure heart. But foolish and unlearned questions avoid, knowing that they do gender strifes.

Circumcision of the Heart

Jer: 4:4: Circumcise yourselves to the LORD, and take away the foreskins of your heart, ye men of Judah and inhabitants of Jerusalem: lest my fury come forth like fire, and burn that none can quench it, because of the evil of your doings.

Jer: 9:23-26 Thus saith the LORD, Let not the wise man glory in his wisdom, neither let the mighty man glory in his might, let not the rich man glory in his riches: 24: But let him that glorieth glory in this, that he understandeth

and knoweth me, that I am the LORD which exercise lovingkindness, judgment, and righteousness, in the earth: for in these things I delight, saith the LORD. 25: Behold, the days come, saith the LORD, that I will punish all them which are circumcised with the uncircumcised; 26: Egypt, and Judah, and Edom, and the children of Ammon, and Moab, and all that are in the utmost corners, that dwell in the wilderness: for all these nations are uncircumcised, and all the house of Israel are uncircumcised in the heart.

Rom: 2:25-29: For circumcision verily profiteth, if thou keep the law: but if thou be a breaker of the law, thy circumcision is made uncircumcision. 26: Therefore if the uncircumcision keep the righteousness of the law, shall not his uncircumcision be counted for circumcision? 27: And shall not uncircumcision which is by nature, if it fulfil the law, judge thee, who by the letter and circumcision dost transgress the law? 28: For he is not a Jew, which is one outwardly; neither is that circumcision, which is outward in the flesh: 29: But he is a Jew, which is one inwardly; and circumcision is that of the heart, in the spirit, and not in the letter; whose praise is not of men, but of God.

Phil: 3:3: For we are the circumcision, which worship God in the spirit, and rejoice in Christ Jesus, and have no confidence in the flesh.

Col: 2:11-13: In whom also ye are circumcised with the circumcision made without hands, in putting off the body of the sins of the flesh by the circumcision of Christ: 12: Buried with him in baptism, wherein also ye are risen with him through the faith of the operation of God, who hath raised him from the dead. 13: And you, being dead in your sins and the uncircumcision of your flesh, hath he quickened together with him, having forgiven you all trespasses;

The circumcision that God introduced to Abraham in Genesis 17:10 and 21-26 was symbolic. God had them cut off the foreskin of the instrument or tool used to consummate a covenant between a man and a woman. The tool was also used to fertilize the egg of new life. He used this ingeniously allegorical method to seal His covenant with Abraham and then later with Israel for those reasons. The circumcision stood for an outward sign that they had covenanted with God to be His people and to obey His voice. God's part of the covenant was to take care of and bless those who were in covenant with Him. In Deuteronomy 28 you can read a list of many of the things God would provide for them. There you can also see the list of what would happen to them if they broke covenant with Him.

That is why Jesus said to the Jews in (Lk: 13:16: And ought not this woman, being a daughter of Abraham, whom Satan hath bound, lo, these eighteen years, be loosed from this bond on the sabbath day?) He was talking about covenant relationship. The woman was bound by Satan's lies due to her sins. Apparently the devil interfered with her receiving forgiveness and wholeness. God took care of that in the New Covenant by establishing that Christians can come boldly to the throne and receive the grace and help that they need. (Heb: 4:16)

When a person asks God to forgive their sins or asks Jesus into their heart as they are directed, they are making covenant with God. The reconciled one enters into a Father/child relationship with God and promises to trust and obey Him. God promises all that is written in His covenant book, the Bible.

The only way to trust and obey God is to cut off the flesh – be circumcised. A person has to be spiritually circumcised to take advantage of the New Covenant. It was submission to their lower nature that killed Adam and Eve and it takes submission to God to have eternal life.

Be Ye Transformed

Rom: 12:1-2: I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, which is your reasonable service.²: And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God.

(How can one be transformed? By the renewing of your mind. This is very important. So many confessing Christians are not renewing their mind with the written Word of God which is to be quickened unto them by the Holy Spirit. 1Jn: 2:27-29 By neglecting this duty these confessing Christians are rocking the boat. They are the cause of disunity in the body and they are the cause of ineffectiveness of the body. I will show what mean.)

This is how you serve in an office. The rest may be hands and feet, but I think Christ's body has every organ that the human body it is compared to has.

3-8: For I say, through the grace given unto me, to every man that is among you, not to think of himself more highly than he ought to think; but to think soberly, according as God hath dealt to every man the measure of faith. 4: For as we have many members in one body, and all members have not the same office: 5: So we, being many, are one body in Christ, and every one members one of another. 6: Having then gifts differing according to the grace that is given to us, whether prophecy, let us prophesy according to the proportion of faith; 7: Or ministry, let us wait on our ministering: or he that teacheth, on teaching; 8: Or he that exhorteth, on exhortation: he that giveth, let him do it with simplicity; he that ruleth, with diligence; he that sheweth mercy, with

cheerfulness.

This is how you love:

9-16: Let love be without dissimulation. Abhor that which is evil; cleave to that which is good. 10: Be kindly affectioned one to another with brotherly love; in honour preferring one another; 11: Not slothful in business; fervent in spirit; serving the Lord; 12: Rejoicing in hope; patient in tribulation; continuing instant in prayer; 13: Distributing to the necessity of saints; given to hospitality. 14: Bless them which persecute you: bless, and curse not. 15: Rejoice with them that do rejoice, and weep with them that weep. 16: Be of the same mind one toward another. Mind not high things, but condescend to men of low estate. Be not wise in your own conceits.

17-21: Recompense to no man evil for evil. Provide things honest in the sight of all men. 18: If it be possible, as much as lieth in you, live peaceably with all men. 19: Dearly beloved, avenge not yourselves, but rather give place unto wrath: for it is written, Vengeance is mine; I will repay, saith the Lord. 20: Therefore if thine enemy hunger, feed him; if he thirst, give him drink: for in so doing thou shalt heap coals of fire on his head. 21: Be not overcome of evil, but overcome evil with good.

(To have unity and love for one another we must be of the same mind – a renewed mind that is trained to take up the cross daily and follow Him.)

Be Not Worldly-minded

What do I mean when I admonish the church to be not worldly-minded?

This verse explains what I'm talking about: 2Cor: 4:18: While we look not at the things which are seen, but at the things which are not seen: for the things which are seen are temporal; but the things which are not seen are eternal.

And this verse: 1Cor: 15:47-48: The first man is of the earth, earthy: the second man is the Lord from heaven. 48: As is the earthy, such are they also that are earthy: and as is the heavenly, such are they also that are

heavenly.

For a Christian the advantage of being heavenly-minded can not be over-emphasized. First and foremost, this is how a Christian can be patient and wait on the Lord to work instead of taking things into their own hands. They do it by reminding themselves that this world is not their home and this suffering is temporary and that they do not have to have their fun or happiness now, they will have eternal happiness in the hereafter and rich rewards to boot, if they overcome.

Heb: 2:15: And deliver them who through fear of death were all their lifetime subject to bondage.

Worldly-minded people think they must have their fun and happiness now because life on earth is short. But heavenly-minded people are laying up their treasures in heaven. They look forward to a better life than what can be had here without God.

Being heavenly-minded makes dying a whole lot easier, but in this article, I am addressing the need in this life to be heavenly-minded.

So the first advantage is that the heavenly-minded can lay down their life for others. They can have the mind of Christ which knows that it is better to suffer than to fail to please God. They can, "let it go" so to speak – they do not have to grab and grasp at life.

1Pt: 4:1-4: Forasmuch then as Christ hath suffered for us in the flesh, arm yourselves likewise with the same mind: for he that hath suffered in the flesh hath ceased from sin; 2: That he no longer should live the rest of his time in the flesh to the lusts of men, but to the will of God. 3: For the time past of our life may suffice us to have wrought the will of the Gentiles, when we walked in lasciviousness, lusts, excess of wine, revellings, banquetings, and abominable idolatries: 4: Wherein they think it strange that ye run not with them to the same excess of riot, speaking evil of you:

Below are many scriptures that show the advantage of being heavenly-minded:

Mt: 5:14: Ye are the light of the world. A city that is set on an hill cannot be hid. (The heavenly-minded are not caught up in the things of the world, they focus on being light and salt for the world.)

Mt: 16:23-27: But he turned, and said unto Peter, Get thee behind me, Satan: thou art an offence unto me: for thou savourest not the things that be of God, but those that be of men. 24: Then said Jesus unto his disciples, If

any man will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me. 25: For whosoever will save his life shall lose it: and whosoever will lose his life for my sake shall find it. 26: For what is a man profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? Or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul? 27: For the Son of man shall come in the glory of his Father with his angels; and then he shall reward every man according to his works.

Lk: 12:3-39: For all these things do the nations of the world seek after: and your Father knoweth that ye have need of these things. 31: But rather seek ye the kingdom of God; and all these things shall be added unto you. 32: Fear not, little flock; for it is your Father's good pleasure to give you the kingdom. 33: Sell that ye have, and give alms; provide yourselves bags which wax not old, a treasure in the heavens that faileth not, where no thief approacheth, neither moth corrupteth. 34: For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also. 35: Let your loins be girded about, and your lights burning; 36: And ye yourselves like unto men that wait for their lord, when he will return from the wedding; that when he cometh and knocketh, they may open unto him immediately. 37: Blessed are those servants, whom the lord when he cometh shall find watching: verily I say unto you, that he shall gird himself, and make them to sit down to meat, and will come forth and serve them. 38: And if he shall come in the second watch, or come in the third watch, and find them so, blessed are those servants. 39: And this know, that if the ullnes of the house had known what hour the thief would come, he would have watched, and not have suffered his house to be broken through.

Lk: 16:8: And the lord commended the unjust steward, because he had done wisely: for the children of this world are in their generation wiser than the children of light. (The children of light – the heavenly-minded do righteousness at all cost.)

Jn: 12:25: He that loveth his life shall lose it; and he that hateth (Hateth here means not loving their life here, but loving eternal life.) his life in this world shall keep it unto life eternal.

Jn: 15:18-19: If the world hate you, ye know that it hated me before it hated you. 19: If ye were of the world, the world would love his own: but because ye are not of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world, therefore the world hateth you. (The world hates those who are willing to give up their sinful pleasures here in exchange for a promise of a better tomorrow.)

Jn: 16:33: These things I have spoken unto you, that in me ye might have peace. In the world ye shall have tribulation: but be of good cheer; I have overcome the world. (Jesus overcame the world by being heavenly-minded. Heb: 12:2: Looking unto Jesus the author and finisher of our faith; who for the joy that was set before him endured the cross, despising the shame, and is set down at the right hand of the throne of God.)

Rom: 12:2: And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye

may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God. (The heavenly-minded renew their mind with the thinking revealed in the New Testament which is the mind of Christ.)

1Cor: 2:12: Now we have received, not the spirit of the world, but the spirit which is of God; that we might know the things that are freely given to us of God. (Worldly-minded people cannot walk by the Spirit of God because the world has too strong of a hold on them.)

1Cor: 3:18-19: Let no man deceive himself. If any man among you seemeth to be wise in this world, let him become a fool, that he may be wise. 19: For the wisdom of this world is foolishness with God. (Likewise, the wisdom of God is foolishness to the world. The heavenly-minded want God's approval, not the world's approval – not if it means being alienated from the life of God and it does.)

2Cor: 6:14-18: Be ye not unequally yoked together with unbelievers: for what fellowship hath righteousness with unrighteousness? And what communion hath light with darkness? 15: And what concord hath Christ with Belial? Or what part hath he that believeth with an infidel?

16: And what agreement hath the temple of God with idols? For ye are the temple of the living God; as God hath said, I will dwell in them, and walk in them; and I will be their God, and they shall be my people. 17: Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you, 18: And will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be my sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty. (Only the heavenly-minded can come out from among them.)

Gal: 6:14: But God forbid that I should glory, save in the cross of our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom the world is crucified unto me, and I unto the world. (Only the heavenly-minded can say this in truth.)

Eph: 2:2-6: Wherein in time past ye walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience: 3: Among whom also we all had our conversation in times past in the lusts of our flesh, fulfilling the desires of the flesh and of the mind; and were by nature the children of wrath, even as others. 4: But God, who is rich in mercy, for his great love wherewith he loved us, 5: Even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved;) 6: And hath raised us up together, and made us sit together in heavenly places in Christ Jesus:

Titus: 2:12: Teaching us that, denying ungodliness and worldly lusts, we should live soberly, righteously, and godly, in this present world; (This is done by being heavenly-minded.)

Jas: 1:27: Pure religion and undefiled before God and the Father is this, To visit the fatherless and widows in their affliction, and to keep himself unspotted from the world.

Jas: 4:4: Ye adulterers and adulteresses, know ye not that the friendship of the world is enmity with God? Whosoever therefore will be a friend of the world is the enemy of God.

2Pt: 1:4: Whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious promises: that by these ye might be partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust. (To hold fast to these promises that help us not to give in to our own high pressure temptations we must have the mind-set of 2 Cor:4:18 – knowing that the things of this world are temporary and the things of God are eternal – that is being heavenly-minded.)

1Jn: 2:15-17: Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world. If any man love the world, the love of the Father is not in him. For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, and the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world. And the world passeth away, and the lust thereof: but he that doeth the will of God abideth for ever.

1Jn: 3:1: Behold, what manner of love the Father hath bestowed upon us, that we should be called the sons of God: therefore the world knoweth us not, because it knew him not. (Get rid of the idea that Christians must blend in with the world or that Christians must get along with everyone or that Christians must win the world by being like or accepted by them – these ideas are a lie. Christians should project and minister love, but it's the God kind of love such as a good Father has for his children, not a love that doesn't want to hurt anyone's feelings even if the person needs to know the truth. Godly love tries to meet the person's real needs even if it might cause animosity or rejection. This is why God has not been universally accepted – because He always does what is right, not what is popular.)

1Jn: 4:4-7: Ye are of God, little children, and have overcome them: because greater is he that is in you, than he that is in the world. They are of the world: therefore speak they of the world, and the world heareth them. 5: They are of the world: therefore speak they of the world, and the world heareth them. 6: We are of God: he that knoweth God heareth us; he that is not of God heareth not us. Hereby know we the spirit of truth, and the spirit of error. 7: Beloved, let us love one another: for love is of God; and every one that loveth is born of God, and knoweth God.

1Jn: 4:17: Herein is our love made perfect, that we may have boldness in the day of judgment: because as he is, so are we in this world.

1Jn: 5:4: For whatsoever is born of God overcometh the world: and this is the victory that overcometh the world, even our faith.

1Jn: 5:19: And we know that we are of God, and the whole world lieth in wickedness.

Rev: 12:9: And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world: he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him.

My Sheep Hear My Voice

Jn: 10:24-28: Then came the Jews round about him, and said unto him, How long dost thou make us to doubt? If thou be the Christ, tell us plainly. 25: Jesus answered them, I told you, and ye believed not: the works that I do in my Father's name, they bear witness of me. 26: But ye believe not, because ye are not of my sheep, as I said unto you. 27: My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me: 28: And I give unto them eternal life; and they shall never perish, neither shall any man pluck them out of my hand.

Often in Scripture Jesus is referred to as the Shepherd and Christians or God's people are referred to as sheep. There is a very good reason for this and it is not because people are stupid. It is because people are limited.

Christians must follow the Shepherd because they are limited by a number of things. First of all Christians start out as newborns. They mature slowly and are, in comparison to God, small children most of their lives. Some do make it to a maturity that qualifies them to be called adults, but never masters. The Lord alone is master.

Second, Christians are limited because the world, the flesh, and the devil interfere with their learning process, succeeding on occasion in putting in false information, causing glitches in their learning process.

Third, they need the Shepherd because He has earned the position as their leader.

My point is that many think that God refers to people as sheep because they are stupid or dumb, but that's not it.

He wants us to follow Him because He is so smart – He has it all. It is important that it be understood that God is not demeaning people and He does not want His people to feel dumb. God uses the sheep illustration because sheep are smart enough to or learn to follow their Shepherd.

And Christians do need to follow Him. All sheep (Christians) who do not follow Jesus will end up in a pit, or will eat poison and perish, or will fall off the edge of the cliff, or be eaten by a wolf or bear. All of that must be applied spiritually, but those are the dangers and the reason Christians need to follow the Shepherd.

This is really good news for those who are serious about being God's children because all they have to do is follow Jesus, meaning all the decisions and head work are His and all they have to do is what He leads them to do. This is called resting in the Lord. It is a place of green pastures beside still waters.

What does it mean to follow Jesus, the good Shepherd? It means His sheep do not serve mammon. They take heed what they hear. They are careful about the company they keep. They love their enemies and pray for those who spitefully use them. They reach out to others with love and truth. They are not entangled in the affairs of the world because Jesus said that those things would choke the Word. They put on the full armor of God and keep it on. They remember what they look like in the mirror of the Word and they behave accordingly. The list could go on and on, but hopefully the reader gets the idea.

SHEEP FOLLOW THEIR SHEPHERD.

The Kingdom of God

Matt: 4:23: And Jesus went about all Galilee, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and healing all manner of sickness and all manner of disease among the people.

Matt: 9:35: And Jesus went about all the cities and villages, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and healing every sickness and every disease among the

Lk: 1:14: Now after that John was put in prison, Jesus came into Galilee, preaching the gospel of the kingdom of God,

Mk: 1:33: And he shall reign over the house of Jacob for ever; and of his kingdom there shall be no end.

(The gospel that we are to preach is the gospel or good news of the kingdom.)

Whose kingdom is it?

Matt: 6:10: Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done in earth, as it is in heaven.

Matt: 6:13: And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil: For thine is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen.

Lk: 4:43: And he said unto them, I must preach the kingdom of God to other cities also: for therefore am I sent.

Lk: 8:1: And it came to pass afterward, that he went throughout every city and village, preaching and shewing the glad tidings of the kingdom of God: and the twelve were with him,

Lk: 9:2: And he sent them to preach the kingdom of God, and to heal the sick.

Lk: 9:11: And the people, when they knew it, followed him: and he received them, and spake unto them of the kingdom of God, and healed them that had need of healing.

Lk: 9:60: Jesus said unto him, Let the dead bury their dead: but go thou and preach the kingdom of God.

Lk: 21:31: So likewise ye, when ye see these things come to pass, know ye that the kingdom of God is nigh at hand.

Col: 1:13: Who hath delivered us from the power of darkness, and hath translated us into the kingdom of his dear Son:

Heb: 1:8: But unto the Son he saith, Thy throne, O God, is for ever and ever: a sceptre of righteousness is the sceptre of thy kingdom.

How do you get into the kingdom?

Matt: 3:2: John the Baptist preached – Repent ye: for the kingdom of heaven is at hand.

Matt: 4:17: Jesus preached – From that time Jesus began to preach, and to say, Repent: for the kingdom of heaven is at hand.

Matt: 6:33: But seek ye first the kingdom of God, and his righteousness; and all these things shall be added unto you.

Matt: 19:14: But Jesus said, Suffer little children, and forbid them not, to come unto me: for of such is the kingdom of heaven. (have faith in God as a little child has in their caregiver)

Mk: 1:15: And saying, The time is fulfilled, and the kingdom of God is at hand: repent ye, and believe the gospel.

Mk: 9:47: And if thine eye offend thee, pluck it out: it is better for thee to enter into the kingdom of God with one eye, than having two eyes to be cast into hell fire:

What is the first key to the kingdom?

Matt: 16:16-18: And Simon Peter answered and said, Thou art the Christ, the Son of the living God. And Jesus answered and said unto him, Blessed art thou, Simon Bar-jona: for flesh and blood hath not revealed it unto thee, but my Father which is in heaven. And I say also unto thee, That thou art Peter, and upon this rock I will build my church; and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it. And I will give unto thee the keys of the kingdom of heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven. (Revelation knowledge)

Who will enter the kingdom? Who will have the kingdom?

Matt: 5:3: Blessed are the poor in spirit: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.

Matt: 5:10: Blessed are they which are persecuted for righteousness' sake: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.

Matt: 5:20: For I say unto you, That except your righteousness shall exceed the righteousness of the scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no case enter into the kingdom of heaven.

Matt: 7:21: Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven.

Matt: 8:10-12: When Jesus heard it, he marvelled, and said to them that followed, Verily I say unto you, I have not found so great faith, (faith in Jesus) no, not in Israel. And I say unto you, That many shall come from the east and west, and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, in the kingdom of heaven. But the children of the kingdom shall be cast out into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

Matt: 22:2-13: The kingdom of heaven is like unto a certain king, which made a marriage for his son, And sent forth his servants to call them that were bidden to the wedding: and they would not come. Again, he sent forth other servants, saying, Tell them which are bidden, Behold, I have prepared my dinner: my oxen and my fatlings are killed, and all things are ready: come unto the marriage. But they made light of it, and went their ways, one to his farm, another to his merchandise: And the remnant took his servants, and entreated them spitefully, and slew them. But when the king heard thereof, he was wroth: and he sent forth his armies, and destroyed those murderers, and burned up their city. Then saith he to his servants, The wedding is ready, but they which were bidden were not worthy. Go ye therefore into the highways, and as many as ye shall find, bid to the marriage. So those servants went out into the highways, and gathered together all as many as they found, both bad and good: and the wedding was furnished with guests. And when the king came in to see the guests, he saw there a man which had not on a wedding garment: And he saith unto him, Friend, how camest thou in hither not having a wedding garment? And he was speechless. Then said the king to the servants, Bind him hand and foot, and take him away, and cast him into outer darkness; there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth. (Put on the Lord Jesus Christ – Rom: 13:14)

Mk: 12:32-34: And the scribe said unto him, Well, Master, thou hast said the truth: for there is one God; and there is none other but he: And to love him with all the heart, and with all the understanding, and with all the soul, and with all the strength, and to love his neighbour as himself, is more than all whole burnt offerings and sacrifices. And when Jesus saw that he answered discreetly, he said unto him, Thou art not far from the kingdom of God. And no man after that durst ask him any question.

Acts: 14:22: Confirming the souls of the disciples, and exhorting them to continue in the faith, and that we must through much tribulation enter into the kingdom of God.

Who can know the mysteries of the kingdom?

Matt: 13:11: He answered and said unto them, Because it is given unto you to know the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven, but to them it is not given. (His disciples – those who are learning from him)

Jn: 3:3: Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God.

Jn: 3:5: Jesus answered, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God.

Jas: 2:5: Hearken, my beloved brethren, Hath not God chosen the poor of this world rich in faith, and heirs of the kingdom which he hath promised to them that love him?

What does the kingdom produce?

Matt: 13:31-32: Another parable put he forth unto them, saying, The kingdom of heaven is like to a grain of mustard seed, which a man took, and sowed in his field: Which indeed is the least of all seeds: but when it is grown, it is the greatest among herbs, and becometh a tree, so that the birds of the air come and lodge in the branches thereof. (a beneficial thing)

Matt: 21:43: Therefore say I unto you, The kingdom of God shall be taken from you, and given to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof.

Rom: 14:17: For the kingdom of God is not meat and drink; but righteousness, and peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost.

Heb: 12:28: Wherefore we receiving a kingdom which cannot be moved, let us have grace, whereby we may serve God acceptably with reverence and godly fear:

What power to influence does the kingdom have?

Matt: 13:33: Another parable spake he unto them; The kingdom of heaven is like unto leaven, which a woman took, and hid in three measures of meal, till the whole was leavened.

How precious a treasure is the kingdom?

Matt: 13:44: Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto treasure hid in a field; the which when a man hath found, he hideth, and for joy thereof goeth and selleth all that he hath, and buyeth that field.

Matt: 13:45-50: Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto a merchant man, seeking goodly pearls: Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto a net, that was cast into the sea, and gathered of every kind: Which, when it was full, they drew to shore, and sat down, and gathered the good into vessels, but cast the bad away. So shall it be at the end of the world: the angels shall come forth, and sever the wicked from among the just, And shall cast them into the furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth.

Where is the kingdom now?

Lk: 17:20-21: And when he was demanded of the Pharisees, when the kingdom of God should come, he answered them and said, The kingdom of God cometh not with observation: Neither shall they say, Lo here! or, lo there! for, behold, the kingdom of God is within you.

Jn: 18:36: Jesus answered, My kingdom is not of this world: if my kingdom were of this world, then would my servants fight, that I should not be delivered to the Jews: but now is my kingdom not from hence.

What must take place before the kingdom comes to reign?

Matt: 24-14: And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations; and then shall the end come.

1Cor: 15:24: Then cometh the end, when he shall have delivered up the kingdom to God, even the Father; when he shall have put down all rule and all authority and power.

Does the Old Testament teach about the kingdom?

Matt: 13:52: Then said he unto them, Therefore every scribe which is instructed unto the kingdom of heaven is like unto a man that is an householder, which bringeth forth out of his treasure things new and old.

Who is the greatest in the kingdom?

Matt: 18:1-4: At the same time came the disciples unto Jesus, saying, Who is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven? And Jesus called a little child unto him, and set him in the midst of them, And said, Verily I say unto you, Except ye be converted, and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven. Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little child, the same is greatest in the kingdom of heaven.

Who shall be least in the kingdom?

Matt: 5:19: Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven: but whosoever shall do and teach them, the same shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven.

How can you miss the kingdom?

Matt: 13:9: When any one heareth the word of the kingdom, and understandeth it not, then cometh the wicked one, and catcheth away that which was sown in his heart. This is he which received seed by the way side.

Matt: 13:24-30: Another parable put he forth unto them, saying, The kingdom of heaven is likened unto a man which sowed good seed in his field: But while men slept, his enemy came and sowed tares among the wheat, and went his way. But when the blade was sprung up, and brought forth fruit, then appeared the tares also. So the servants of the householder came and said unto him, Sir, didst not thou sow good seed in thy field? from whence then hath it tares? He said unto them, An enemy hath done this. The servants said unto him, Wilt thou then that we go and gather them up? But he said, Nay; lest while ye gather up the tares, ye root up also the wheat with them. Let both grow together until the harvest: and in the time of harvest I will say to the reapers, Gather ye together first the tares, and bind them in bundles to burn them: but gather the wheat into my barn.

Matt: 13:38-43: The field is the world; the good seed are the children of the kingdom; but the tares are the

children of the wicked one; The Son of man shall send forth his angels, and they shall gather out of his kingdom all things that offend, and them which do iniquity; And shall cast them into a furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth. Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their Father. Who hath ears to hear, let him hear.

Matt: 18:23-35: Therefore is the kingdom of heaven likened unto a certain king, which would take account of his servants. And when he had begun to reckon, one was brought unto him, which owed him ten thousand talents. But forasmuch as he had not to pay, his lord commanded him to be sold, and his wife, and children, and all that he had, and payment to be made. The servant therefore fell down, and worshipped him, saying, Lord, have patience with me, and I will pay thee all. Then the lord of that servant was moved with compassion, and loosed him, and forgave him the debt. But the same servant went out, and found one of his fellowservants, which owed him an hundred pence: and he laid hands on him, and took him by the throat, saying, Pay me that thou owest. And his fellowservant fell down at his feet, and besought him, saying, Have patience with me, and I will pay thee all. And he would not: but went and cast him into prison, till he should pay the debt. So when his fellowservants saw what was done, they were very sorry, and came and told unto their lord all that was done. Then his lord, after that he had called him, said unto him, O thou wicked servant, I forgave thee all that debt, because thou desiredst me: Shouldest not thou also have had compassion on thy fellowservant, even as I had pity on thee? And his lord was wroth, and delivered him to the tormentors, till he should pay all that was due unto him. So likewise shall my heavenly Father do also unto you, if ye from your hearts forgive not every one his brother their trespasses.

Matt: 19:24: And again I say unto you, It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God. (if you trust and depend upon you bank account instead of God)

Matt: 25:1-13: Then shall the kingdom of heaven be likened unto ten virgins, which took their lamps, and went forth to meet the bridegroom. And five of them were wise, and five were foolish. They that were foolish took their lamps, and took no oil with them: But the wise took oil in their vessels with their lamps. While the bridegroom tarried, they all slumbered and slept. And at midnight there was a cry made, Behold, the bridegroom cometh; go ye out to meet him. Then all those virgins arose, and trimmed their lamps. And the foolish said unto the wise, Give us of your oil; for our lamps are gone out. But the wise answered, saying, Not so; lest there be not enough for us and you: but go ye rather to them that sell, and buy for yourselves. And while they went to buy, the bridegroom came; and they that were ready went in with him to the marriage: and the door was shut. Afterward came also the other virgins, saying, Lord, Lord, open to us. But he answered and said, Verily I say unto you, I know you not. Watch therefore, for ye know neither the day nor the hour wherein the Son of man cometh.

Lk: 9:62: And Jesus said unto him, No man, having put his hand to the plough, and looking back, is fit for the kingdom of God.

1Cor: 6:9-10: Know ye not that the unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdom of God? Be not deceived: neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselves with mankind, Nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, shall inherit the kingdom of God.

Matt: 25:14-36: For the kingdom of heaven is as a man travelling into a far country, who called his own servants, and delivered unto them his goods. And unto one he gave five talents, to another two, and to another one; to every man according to his several ability; and straightway took his journey. Then he that had received the five talents went and traded with the same, and made them other five talents. And likewise he that had received two, he also gained other two. But he that had received one went and digged in the earth, and hid his lord's money. After a long time the lord of those servants cometh, and reckoneth with them. And so he that had received five talents came and brought other five talents, saying, Lord, thou deliveredst unto me five talents: behold, I have gained beside them five talents more. His lord said unto him, Well done, thou good and faithful servant: thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord. He also that had received two talents came and said, Lord, thou deliveredst unto me two talents: behold, I have gained two other talents beside them. His lord said unto him, Well done, good and faithful servant; thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord. Then he which had received the one talent came and said, Lord, I knew thee that thou art an hard man, reaping where thou hast not sown, and gathering where thou hast not strawed: And I was afraid, and went and hid thy talent in the earth: lo, there thou hast that is thine. His lord answered and said unto him, Thou wicked and slothful servant, thou knewest that I reap where I sowed not, and gather where I have not strawed: Thou oughtest therefore to have put my money to the exchangers, and then at my coming I should have received mine own with usury. Take therefore the talent from him, and give it unto him which hath ten talents. For unto every one that hath shall be given, and he shall have abundance: but from him that hath not shall be taken away even that which he hath. And cast ye the unprofitable servant into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth. When the Son of man shall come in his glory, and all the holy angels with him, then shall he sit upon the throne of his glory: And before him shall be gathered all nations: and he shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd divideth his sheep from the goats: And he shall set the sheep on his right hand, but the goats on the left. Then shall the King say unto them on his right hand, Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world: For I was an hungred, and ye gave me meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me drink: I was a stranger, and ye took me in: Naked, and ye clothed me: I was sick, and ye visited me: I was in prison, and ye came unto me. Then shall the righteous answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungred, and fed thee? or thirsty, and gave thee drink? When saw we thee a stranger, and took thee in? or naked, and clothed thee? Or when saw we thee sick, or in prison, and came unto thee? And the King shall answer and say unto them, Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye have done it unto one of the least of these my brethren, ye have done it unto me. Then shall he say also unto them on the left hand, Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels: For I was an hungred, and ye gave me no meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me no drink: I was a stranger, and ye took me not in: naked, and ye clothed me not: sick, and in prison, and ye visited me not. Then shall they also answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungred, or athirst, or a stranger, or naked, or sick, or in prison, and did not minister unto thee? Then shall he answer them, saying, Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye did it not to one of the least of these, ye did it not to me.

And these shall go away into everlasting punishment: but the righteous into life eternal.

1Cor: 15:50: Now this I say, brethren, that flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God; neither doth corruption inherit incorruption.

Gal: 5:21: Envyings, murders, drunkenness, revellings, and such like: of the which I tell you before, as I have also told you in time past, that they which do such things shall not inherit the kingdom of God.

Eph: 5:5: For this ye know, that no whoremonger, nor unclean person, nor covetous man, who is an idolater, hath any inheritance in the kingdom of Christ and of God.

What will cause a kingdom to fall?

Matt: 12:25: And Jesus knew their thoughts, and said unto them, Every kingdom divided against itself is brought to desolation; and every city or house divided against itself shall not stand:

The gospel that we are to be preaching is about entering the kingdom of God. Matt: 28:19-20: Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost: Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and, lo, I am with you always, even unto the end of the world. Amen.

Col: 4:11: And Jesus, which is called Justus, who are of the circumcision. These only are my fellow workers unto the kingdom of God, which have been a comfort unto me.

1Thess: 2:12: That ye would walk worthy of God, who hath called you unto his kingdom and glory.

2Thess: 1:5: Which is a manifest token of the righteous judgment of God that ye may be counted worthy of the kingdom of God, for which ye also suffer:

In the kingdom of God, God rules in your life. In the kingdom of heaven, God has ruled in your life. Please get it! Winning is about receiving Jesus as your Lord and God as your Father – authority figure.

Gen: 3:17: And unto Adam he said, Because thou hast hearkened unto the voice of thy wife, and hast eaten of the tree, of which I commanded thee, saying, Thou shalt not eat of it: cursed is the ground for thy sake; in sorrow shalt thou eat of it all the days of thy life;

Jn: 14:15-21: If ye love me, keep my commandments. And I will pray the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter that he may abide with you for ever; Even the Spirit of truth; whom the world cannot receive, because it seeth him not, neither knoweth him: but ye know him; for he dwelleth with you, and shall be in you. I will not leave you comfortless: I will come to you. Yet a little while, and the world seeth me no more; but ye see me: because I live, ye shall live also. At that day ye shall know that I am in my Father, and ye in me, and I in you. He that hath my commandments, and keepeth them, he it is that loveth me: and he that loveth me shall be loved of my Father, and I will love him, and will manifest myself to him.

Do Not Fear Man

Lk: 21:5-7: And as some spake of the temple, how it was adorned with goodly stones and gifts, he said, 6: As for these things which ye behold, the days will come, in the which there shall not be left one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down. 7: And they asked him, saying, Master, but when shall these things be? And what sign will there be when these things shall come to pass?

8-9: And he said, Take heed that ye be not deceived: for many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ; and the time draweth near: go ye not therefore after them. 9: But when ye shall hear of wars and commotions, be not terrified: for these things must first come to pass; but the end is not by and by.

10-11: Then said he unto them, Nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: 11: And great earthquakes shall be in divers places, and famines, and pestilences; and fearful sights and great signs shall there be from heaven.

12-15: But before all these, they shall lay their hands on you, and persecute you, delivering you up to the synagogues, and into prisons, being brought before kings and rulers for my name's sake. 13: And it shall turn to you for a testimony. 14: Settle it therefore in your hearts, not to meditate before what ye shall answer: 15: For I

will give you a mouth and wisdom, which all your adversaries shall not be able to gainsay nor resist.

(Some will insist that these passages are only for the Jews, but I think Jesus gave these warnings in such a way that the early church would heed them and the latter church would have the same warnings to prepare them for what is to come.

We live in a day and age where the enemy is attacking the Bible and trying to discredit it. We live in a day when people love unrighteousness. We live in a day when the law has been taken out of the way. We live in a day of every wind of doctrine. We live in a day of the casual church. We live in a day of the Oprahs and Obamas. I'd say the signs are here. We better get ready for the fight for our lives.)

16-19: And ye shall be betrayed both by parents, and brethren, and kinsfolks, and friends; and some of you shall they cause to be put to death. 17: And ye shall be hated of all men for my name's sake. 18: But there shall not an hair of your head perish. 19: In your patience possess ye your souls.

(This is very conceivable now that we see the church is dividing into two camps – those who love the Bible and are sticking with what it teaches and those who have reinterpreted the Bible into “Do what is right in your own eyes.” [Study the book of Judges.]

The new gospel seems right to many in the modern and post-modern world because they were conditioned to it gradually. We can liken it unto the way one cooks frogs. They are put in a pot of cold water and it is slowly brought to a boil. The frogs never suspect that they are in danger until it is too late to jump out.

The new gospel seems right to many of today's Christians and they like it better because they can continue in unrighteousness and still claim salvation through the blood of Christ who was just trying to enable people to go to heaven even though they were sinners.

With the new gospel came the teachings such as a woman's right to choose to murder her baby and that men can love men, etc. And that God mainly wants us to help those in need, and so on. The pressure to live godly is off and they like it so. Many will hate those who stand for the truth and they will turn against them.)

20-28: And when ye shall see Jerusalem compassed with armies, then know that the desolation thereof is nigh. 21: Then let them which are in Judaea flee to the mountains; and let them which are in the midst of it depart out; and let not them that are in the countries enter thereinto. 22: For these be the days of vengeance, that all things which are written may be fulfilled. 23: But woe unto them that are with child, and to them that give suck, in

those days! For there shall be great distress in the land, and wrath upon this people. 24: And they shall fall by the edge of the sword, and shall be led away captive into all nations: and Jerusalem shall be trodden down of the Gentiles, until the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled. 25: And there shall be signs in the sun, and in the moon, and in the stars; and upon the earth distress of nations, with perplexity; the sea and the waves roaring; 26: Men's hearts failing them for fear, and for looking after those things which are coming on the earth: for the powers of heaven shall be shaken. 27: And then shall they see the Son of man coming in a cloud with power and great glory. 28: And when these things begin to come to pass, then look up, and lift up your heads; for your redemption draweth nigh.

(Here Jesus gives us many signs of the times – all of them going on right now. On CBN news just this morning I heard how Jerusalem is being surrounded by enemies. It's taking shape.)

29-33: And he spake to them a parable; Behold the fig tree, and all the trees; 30: When they now shoot forth, ye see and know of your own selves that summer is now nigh at hand. 31: So likewise ye, when ye see these things come to pass, know ye that the kingdom of God is nigh at hand. 32: Verily I say unto you, This generation shall not pass away, till all be fulfilled. 33: Heaven and earth shall pass away: but my words shall not pass away.

(Jesus says you can know the times by the signs. He says not all those living in the day of these signs will pass away before all is fulfilled. Then He says take heed.)

34-38: And take heed to yourselves, lest at any time your hearts be over-charged with surfeiting, and drunkenness, and cares of this life, and so that day come upon you unawares. 35: For as a snare shall it come on all them that dwell on the face of the whole earth. 36: Watch ye therefore, and pray always, that ye may be accounted worthy to escape all these things that shall come to pass, and to stand before the Son of man. 37: And in the day time he was teaching in the temple; and at night he went out, and abode in the mount that is called the mount of Olives. 38: And all the people came early in the morning to him in the temple, for to hear him.

(Take heed to what? Be careful not to get caught up in what the world is doing. It will blind your eyes. It will dull your senses. It will pervert your understanding. You could get caught up in loving not the Truth. [2Thess: 2])

How does Jesus say to avoid being caught up in what's happening? Watch and pray. He instructs us to pray that we may be accounted worthy to escape all these things and to stand before the Son of man. This means that you will have to put on the full armor of God and stand against the times. Stand against the teachings. Stand against the temptations. And sometimes it means you will have to stand against other Christians.)

Mt: 10:28: And fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul: but rather fear him which is

able to destroy both soul and body in hell.

Endued With Power from On High

The key word today in spreading the gospel or getting people into church is creativity. I am taking a firm stand against it. I believe and will endeavor to show that God has endued us with power from on high to spread the gospel and be His witnesses and there is no other acceptable way.

Do the powerful works of the Holy Spirit have much effect?

Matt: 11:21: Woe unto thee, Chorazin! Woe unto thee, Bethsaida! For if the mighty works, which were done in you, had been done in Tyre and Sidon, they would have repented long ago in sackcloth and ashes.

Was the church given this power? And is it the way that Jesus attracted crowds: And did He intend for us to evangelize the same way?

Matt: 26:18-20: And Jesus came and spake unto them, saying, All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth. 19: Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost: 20: Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and, lo, I am with you I, even unto the end of the world. Amen.

Mk: 16:15-20: And he said unto them, Go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature. 16: He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved; but he that believeth not shall be damned. 17: And these signs shall follow them that believe; In my name shall they cast out devils; they shall speak with new tongues; 18: They shall take up serpents; and if they drink any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them; they shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover. 19: So then after the Lord had spoken unto them, he was received up into heaven, and sat on the right hand of God. 20: And they went forth, and preached every where, the Lord working with them, and confirming the word with signs following. Amen.

Lk: 10:2-20: Therefore said he unto them, The harvest truly is great, but the labourers are few: pray ye therefore

the Lord of the harvest, that he would send forth labourers into his harvest. 3: Go your ways: behold, I send you forth as lambs among wolves. 4: Carry neither purse, nor scrip, nor shoes: and salute no man by the way. 5: And into whatsoever house ye enter, first say, Peace be to this house. 6: And if the son of peace be there, your peace shall rest upon it: if not, it shall turn to you again. 7: And in the same house remain, eating and drinking such things as they give: for the labourer is worthy of his hire. Go not from house to house. 8: And into whatsoever city ye enter, and they receive you, eat such things as are set before you: 9: And heal the sick that are therein, and say unto them, The kingdom of God is come nigh unto you. 10: But into whatsoever city ye enter, and they receive you not, go your ways out into the streets of the same, and say, 11: Even the very dust of your city, which cleaveth on us, we do wipe off against you: notwithstanding be ye sure of this, that the kingdom of God is come nigh unto you. 12: But I say unto you, that it shall be more tolerable in that day for Sodom, than for that city. 13: Woe unto thee, Chorazin! Woe unto thee, Bethsaida! For if the mighty works had been done in Tyre and Sidon, which have been done in you, they had a great while ago repented, sitting in sackcloth and ashes. 14: But it shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon at the judgment, than for you. 15: And thou, Capernaum, which art exalted to heaven, shalt be thrust down to hell. 16: He that heareth you heareth me; and he that despiseth you despiseth me; and he that despiseth me despiseth him that sent me. 17: And the seventy returned again with joy, saying, Lord, even the devils are subject unto us through thy name. 18: And he said unto them, I beheld Satan as lightning fall from heaven. 19: Behold, I give unto you power to tread on serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy: and nothing shall by any means hurt you. 20: Notwithstanding in this rejoice not, that the spirits are subject unto you; but rather rejoice, because your names are written in heaven.

Are the powerful works a powerful witness?

Jn: 5:36: But I have greater witness than that of John: for the works which the Father hath given me to finish, the same works that I do, bear witness of me, that the Father hath sent me.

Lk: 24:46-49: And said unto them, Thus it is written, and thus it behoved Christ to suffer, and to rise from the dead the third day: 47: And that repentance and remission of sins should be preached in his name among all nations, beginning at Jerusalem. 48: And ye are witnesses of these things. 49: And, behold, I send the promise of my Father upon you: but tarry ye in the city of Jerusalem, until ye be endued with power from on high.

Jn: 10:37: If I do not the works of my Father, believe me not. (This goes for us as His witnesses too.)

Jn: 10:38: But if I do, though ye believe not me, believe the works: that ye may know, and believe, that the Father is in me, and I in him. (Same here.)

Jn: 14:10: Believest thou not that I am in the Father, and the Father in me? The words that I speak unto you I speak not of myself: but the Father that dwelleth in me, he doeth the works. (Validation of who we are.)

Jn: 14:11: Believe me that I am in the Father, and the Father in me: or else believe me for the very works' sake.

Jn: 14:12: Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me, the works that I do shall he do also; and greater works than these shall he do; because I go unto my Father.

Jn: 15:24: If I had not done among them the works which none other man did, they had not had sin: but now have they both seen and hated both me and my Father.

Acts: 1:8: But ye shall receive power, after that the Holy Ghost is come upon you: and ye shall be witnesses unto me both in Jerusalem, and in all Judaea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth.

Acts: 4:29-33: And now, Lord, behold their threatenings: and grant unto thy servants, that with all boldness they may speak thy word, 30: By stretching forth thine hand to heal; and that signs and wonders may be done by the name of thy holy child Jesus. 31: And when they had prayed, the place was shaken where they were assembled together; and they were all filled with the Holy Ghost, and they spake the word of God with boldness. 32: And the multitude of them that believed were of one heart and of one soul: neither said any of them that ought of the things which he possessed was his own; but they had all things common. 33: And with great power gave the apostles witness of the resurrection of the Lord Jesus: and great grace was upon them all.

Rom: 15:18-19: For I will not dare to speak of any of those things which Christ hath not wrought by me, to make the Gentiles obedient, by word and deed, 19: Through mighty signs and wonders, by the power of the Spirit of God; so that from Jerusalem, and round about unto Illyricum, I have fully preached the gospel of Christ.

1Cor: 2:4-5: And my speech and my preaching was not with enticing words of man's wisdom, but in demonstration of the Spirit and of power: 5: That your faith should not stand in the wisdom of men, but in the power of God.

Eph: 1:19-23: And what is the exceeding greatness of his power to us-ward who believe, according to the working of his mighty power, 20: Which he wrought in Christ, when he raised him from the dead, and set him at his own right hand in the heavenly places, 21: Far above all principality, and power, and might, and dominion, and every name that is named, not only in this world, but also in that which is to come: 22: And hath put all things under his feet, and gave him to be the head over all things to the church, 23: Which is his body, the fullness of him that filleth all in all.

Col: 2:8-14: Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the rudiments of the world, and not after Christ. 9: For in him dwelleth all the fullness of the Godhead bodily. 10: And ye are complete in him, which is the head of all principality and power: 11: In whom also ye are circumcised with the circumcision made without hands, in putting off the body of the sins of the flesh by the circumcision of Christ: 12: Buried with him in baptism, wherein also ye are risen with him through the faith of the operation of God, who hath raised him from the dead. 13: And you, being dead in your sins and the uncircumcision of your flesh, hath he quickened together with him, having forgiven you all trespasses; 14: Blotting out the handwriting of ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nailing it to his cross; (If we lived in this reality, we would have the power.)

Heb: 2:3-4: How shall we escape, if we neglect so great salvation; which at the first began to be spoken by the Lord, and was confirmed unto us by them that heard him; 4: God also bearing them witness, both with signs and wonders, and with divers miracles, and gifts of the Holy Ghost, according to his own will?

How does God think or feel about us witnessing our way instead of His?

Isa: 9:6-11: For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given: and the government shall be upon his shoulder: and his name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, The mighty God, The everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace. 7: Of the increase of his government and peace there shall be no end, upon the throne of David, and upon his kingdom, to order it, and to establish it with judgment and with justice from henceforth even for ever. The zeal of the LORD of hosts will perform this. 8: The Lord sent a word into Jacob, and it hath lighted upon Israel. 9: And all the people shall know, even Ephraim and the inhabitant of Samaria, that say in the pride and stoutness of heart, 10: The bricks are fallen down, but we will build with hewn stones: the sycomores are cut down, but we will change them into cedars. 11: Therefore the LORD shall set up the adversaries of Rezin against him, and join his enemies together; 10: The bricks are fallen down, but we will build with hewn stones: the sycomores are cut down, but we will change them into cedars.

Isa: 30:1-3: Woe to the rebellious children, saith the LORD, that take counsel, but not of me; and that cover with a covering, but not of my spirit, that they may add sin to sin: 2: That walk to go down into Egypt, and have not asked at my mouth; to strengthen themselves in the strength of Pharaoh, and to trust in the shadow of Egypt! 3: Therefore shall the strength of Pharaoh be your shame, and the trust in the shadow of Egypt your confusion.

Isa: 30:15-18: For thus saith the Lord GOD, the Holy One of Israel; In returning and rest shall ye be saved; in quietness and in confidence shall be your strength: and ye would not. 16: But ye said, No; for we will flee upon horses; therefore shall ye flee: and, We will ride upon the swift; therefore shall they that pursue you be swift. 17: One thousand shall flee at the rebuke of one; at the rebuke of five shall ye flee: till ye be left as a beacon upon the top of a mountain, and as an ensign on an hill. 18: And therefore will the LORD wait, that he may be gracious unto you, and therefore will he be exalted, that he may have mercy upon you: for the LORD is a God of

judgment: blessed are all they that wait for him.

Jer: 2:13: For my people have committed two evils; they have forsaken me the fountain of living waters, and hewed them out cisterns, broken cisterns, that can hold no water.

How do we remedy this? What can we do?

Joel: 2:15-19: Blow the trumpet in Zion, sanctify a fast, call a solemn assembly: 16: Gather the people, sanctify the congregation, assemble the elders, gather the children, and those that suck the breasts: let the bridegroom go forth of his chamber, and the bride out of her closet. 17: Let the priests, the ministers of the LORD, weep between the porch and the altar, and let them say, Spare thy people, O LORD, and give not thine heritage to reproach, that the heathen should rule over them: wherefore should they say among the people, Where is their God? 18: Then will the LORD be jealous for his land, and pity his people. 19: Yea, the LORD will answer and say unto his people, Behold, I will send you corn, and wine, and oil, and ye shall be satisfied therewith: and I will no more make you a reproach among the heathen:

This is what we do at the solemn assembly:

Jas: 4:4-10: Ye adulterers and adulteresses, know ye not that the friendship of the world is enmity with God? Whosoever therefore will be a friend of the world is the enemy of God. 5: Do ye think that the scripture saith in vain, The spirit that dwelleth in us lusteth to envy? 6: But he giveth more grace. Wherefore he saith, God resisteth the proud, but giveth grace unto the humble. 7: Submit yourselves therefore to God. Resist the devil, and he will flee from you. 8: Draw nigh to God, and he will draw nigh to you. Cleanse your hands, ye sinners; and purify your hearts, ye double minded. 9: Be afflicted, and mourn, and weep: let your laughter be turned to mourning, and your joy to heaviness. 10: Humble yourselves in the sight of the Lord, and he shall lift you up.

Cancer! Cut it Out

There are, I am sure, many who think I ought to concentrate on proclaiming the good news rather than always pointing out what is wrong in the church and in individuals. But you see, that is what I'm doing. The good news is that Jesus came to save us from sin and death. The good news is that the kingdom of God is here and

available.

My take on this is that far too many preachers, speakers, and writers want to bandage the hurts, salve the burns, and administer medicine for the illness, **BUT WE ARE DEALING WITH CANCER**. It is cancer that has eaten away at the moral fiber of the church and the world. It has eaten away at the truths that were meant to set men free.

It's **CANCER!** Cut it out! Jesus did. His teachings were and are the double-edged sword needed to cut the cancer out. Get rid of it!

Rev: 2:12-17: And to the angel of the church in Pergamos write; These things saith he which hath the sharp sword with two edges; 13: I know thy works, and where thou dwellest, even where Satan's seat is: and thou holdest fast my name, and hast not denied my faith, even in those days wherein Antipas was my faithful martyr, who was slain among you, where Satan dwelleth. 14: But I have a few things against thee, because thou hast there them that hold the doctrine of Balaam, who taught Balac to cast a stumblingblock before the children of Israel, to eat things sacrificed unto idols, and to commit fornication. 15: So hast thou also them that hold the doctrine of the Nicolaitans, which thing I hate. 16: Repent; or else I will come unto thee quickly, and will fight against them with the sword of my mouth. 17: He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches; To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the hidden manna, and will give him a white stone, and in the stone a new name written, which no man knoweth saving he that receiveth it.

Matt: 5:13-16: Ye are the salt of the earth: but if the salt have lost his savour, wherewith shall it be salted? it is thenceforth good for nothing, but to be cast out, and to be trodden under foot of men. 14: Ye are the light of the world. A city that is set on an hill cannot be hid. 15: Neither do men light a candle, and put it under a bushel, but on a candlestick; and it giveth light unto all that are in the house. 16: Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father which is in heaven.

17-20: Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil. 18: For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled. 19: Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven: but whosoever shall do and teach them, the same shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven. 20: For I say unto you, That except your righteousness shall exceed the righteousness of the scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no case enter into the kingdom of heaven.

21-24: Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not kill; and whosoever shall kill shall be in danger of the judgment: 22: But I say unto you, That whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of the judgment: and whosoever shall say to his brother, Raca, shall be in danger of the

council: but whosoever shall say, Thou fool, shall be in danger of hell fire. 23: Therefore if thou bring thy gift to the altar, and there rememberest that thy brother hath ought against thee; 24: Leave there thy gift before the altar, and go thy way; first be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift.

25-26: Agree with thine adversary quickly, whiles thou art in the way with him; lest at any time the adversary deliver thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer, and thou be cast into prison. 26: Verily I say unto thee, Thou shalt by no means come out thence, till thou hast paid the uttermost farthing.

27-30: Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not commit adultery: 28: But I say unto you, That whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her hath committed adultery with her already in his heart. 29: And if thy right eye offend thee, pluck it out, and cast it from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not that thy whole body should be cast into hell. 30: And if thy right hand offend thee, cut it off, and cast it from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not that thy whole body should be cast into hell.

31-32: It hath been said, Whosoever shall put away his wife, let him give her a writing of divorcement: 32: But I say unto you, That whosoever shall put away his wife, saving for the cause of fornication, causeth her to commit adultery: and whosoever shall marry her that is divorced committeth adultery.

33-37: Again, ye have heard that it hath been said by them of old time, Thou shalt not forswear thyself, but shalt perform unto the Lord thine oaths: 34: But I say unto you, Swear not at all; neither by heaven; for it is God's throne: 35: Nor by the earth; for it is his footstool: neither by Jerusalem; for it is the city of the great King. 36: Neither shalt thou swear by thy head, because thou canst not make one hair white or black. 37: But let your communication be, Yea, yea; Nay, nay: for whatsoever is more than these cometh of evil.

38-42: Ye have heard that it hath been said, An eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth: 39: But I say unto you, That ye resist not evil: but whosoever shall smite thee on thy right cheek, turn to him the other also. 40: And if any man will sue thee at the law, and take away thy coat, let him have thy cloke also. 41: And whosoever shall compel thee to go a mile, go with him twain. 42: Give to him that asketh thee, and from him that would borrow of thee turn not thou away.

43-48: Ye have heard that it hath been said, Thou shalt love thy neighbour, and hate thine enemy. 44: But I say unto you, Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you, and persecute you; 45: That ye may be the children of your Father which is in heaven: for he maketh his sun to rise on the evil and on the good, and sendeth rain on the just and on the unjust. 46: For if ye love them which love you, what reward have ye? do not even the publicans the same? 47: And if ye salute your brethren only, what do ye more than others? do not even the publicans so? 48: Be ye therefore perfect, even as

your Father which is in heaven is perfect.

If Christians will just receive this much of Jesus' teaching, the cancer would be controllable. If Christians will make Jesus Lord in their lives and heed all of His teachings, the cancer would not be able to exist.

Who are Christians to Fellowship With?

Matt: 12:48-50: But he answered and said unto him that told him, Who is my mother? and who are my brethren? And he stretched forth his hand toward his disciples, and said, Behold my mother and my brethren! For whosoever shall do the will of my Father which is in heaven, the same is my brother, and sister, and mother.

Jn: 8:38-47: I speak that which I have seen with my Father: and ye do that which ye have seen with your father. They answered and said unto him, Abraham is our father. Jesus saith unto them, If ye were Abraham's children, ye would do the works of Abraham. But now ye seek to kill me, a man that hath told you the truth, which I have heard of God: this did not Abraham. Ye do the deeds of your father. Then said they to him, We be not born of fornication; we have one Father, even God. Jesus said unto them, If God were your Father, ye would love me: for I proceeded forth and came from God; neither came I of myself, but he sent me. Why do ye not understand my speech? even because ye cannot hear my word. Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it. And because I tell you the truth, ye believe me not. Which of you convinceth me of sin? And if I say the truth, why do ye not believe me? He that is of God heareth God's words: ye therefore hear them not, because ye are not of God.

Rom: 1:7: To all that be in Rome, beloved of God, called to be saints: Grace to you and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ. Amp. V. says: To [you then] all God's beloved ones in Rome, called to be saints and designated for a consecrated life: Grace and spiritual blessing and peace be yours from God our Father and from the Lord Jesus Christ.

Rom: 8:9-14: But ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his. And if Christ be in you, the body is dead because of sin; but the Spirit is life because of righteousness. But if the Spirit of him that raised up Jesus from the dead dwell in you, he that raised up Christ from the dead shall also quicken your mortal bodies by his Spirit that dwelleth in you. Therefore, brethren, we are debtors, not to the flesh, to live after the flesh. For if ye live after the flesh, ye

shall die: but if ye through the Spirit do mortify the deeds of the body, ye shall live. For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God.

1Corinth: 1:2-10: Unto the church of God which is at Corinth, to them that are sanctified in Christ Jesus, called to be saints, with all that in every place call upon the name of Jesus Christ our Lord, both theirs and ours: Grace be unto you, and peace, from God our Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ. I thank my God always on your behalf, for the grace of God which is given you by Jesus Christ; That in every thing ye are enriched by him, in all utterance, and in all knowledge; Even as the testimony of Christ was confirmed in you: So that ye come behind in no gift; waiting for the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ: Who shall also confirm you unto the end, that ye may be blameless in the day of our Lord Jesus Christ. God is faithful, by whom ye were called unto the fellowship of his Son Jesus Christ our Lord. Now I beseech you, brethren, by the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that ye all speak the same thing, and that there be no divisions among you; but that ye be perfectly joined together in the same mind and in the same judgment.

2Corinth: 6:14-18: Be ye not unequally yoked together with unbelievers: for what fellowship hath righteousness with unrighteousness? and what communion hath light with darkness? And what concord hath Christ with Belial? or what part hath he that believeth with an infidel? And what agreement hath the temple of God with idols? for ye are the temple of the living God; as God hath said, I will dwell in them, and walk in them; and I will be their God, and they shall be my people. Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you, And will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be my sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty.

Gal: 3:27: For as many of you as have been baptized into Christ have put on Christ.

Eph: 2:6: And hath raised us up together, and made us sit together in heavenly places in Christ Jesus:

Eph: 2:18-22: For through him we both have access by one Spirit unto the Father. Now therefore ye are no more strangers and foreigners, but fellow citizens with the saints, and of the household of God; And are built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ himself being the chief corner stone; In whom all the building fitly framed together groweth unto an holy temple in the Lord: In whom ye also are builded together for an habitation of God through the Spirit.

Eph: 6:24: Grace be with all them that love our Lord Jesus Christ in sincerity. Amen.

1Jn: 14:21: He that hath my commandments, and keepeth them, he it is that loveth me: and he that loveth me shall be loved of my Father, and I will love him, and will manifest myself to him.

Col: 3:1-4: If ye then be risen with Christ, seek those things which are above, where Christ sitteth on the right hand of God. Set your affection on things above, not on things on the earth. For ye are dead, and your life is hid with Christ in God. When Christ, who is our life, shall appear, then shall ye also appear with him in glory.

2Tim: 2:22: Nevertheless the foundation of God standeth sure, having this seal, The Lord knoweth them that are his. And, Let every one that nameth the name of Christ depart from iniquity. But in a great house there are not only vessels of gold and of silver, but also of wood and of earth; and some to honour, and some to dishonour. If a man therefore purge himself from these, he shall be a vessel unto honour, sanctified, and meet for the master's use, and prepared unto every good work. Flee also youthful lusts: but follow righteousness, faith, charity, peace, with them that call on the Lord out of a pure heart.

2Tim: 3:5: Having a form of godliness, but denying the power thereof: from such turn away.

2Thess: 3:6: Now we command you, brethren, in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that ye withdraw yourselves from every brother that walketh disorderly, and not after the tradition which he received of us. Vs. 14 And if any man obey not our word by this epistle, note that man, and have no company with him, that he may be ashamed.

1Pet: 1:1-2: Peter, an apostle of Jesus Christ, to the strangers scattered throughout Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia, and Bithynia, Elect according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, through sanctification of the Spirit, unto obedience and sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ: Grace unto you, and peace, be multiplied.

1Jn: 3:9-10: Whosoever is born of God doth not commit sin; for his seed remaineth in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of God. In this the children of God are manifest, and the children of the devil: whosoever doeth not righteousness is not of God, neither he that loveth not his brother.

1Jn: 5:12: He that hath the Son hath life; and he that hath not the Son of God hath not life.

I did not pick these scriptures to exclude anyone from the church, but rather to defend those whose conscience will not let them fellowship with the church members the way the leaders are insisting must be done.

They are preaching that this unity of the brethren is one of the most important things to be done, because God wants us to love one another and the body of Christ is not about individualism, but about unity. But I maintain that fellowshiping with the present mixed multitude will never bring true unity, nor true love, nor make manifest the real body of Christ. These scriptures define those we are to be fellowshiping with and I am hard

pressed to find a congregation with the above spirit.

Instead I see that the scriptures say avoid those who are unruly. What do you wear? What do you read? What do you watch? Who do you run with? What do you listen to? What do you think about? These things are of the utmost importance when choosing who you should fellowship with. Otherwise why does the Bible warn us that a little leaven with ferment the whole loaf, etc?

Do You Act Like a Christian?

This article is not about what most Christians would think by reading the title. I'm not addressing being nice to others. I'm talking about some other very important Christian activities.

A man asked, "Why doesn't my wife believe that I'm a Christian? I mean, she doesn't treat me as if she believes I'm a godly man."

I say, "I don't know. Let's try to get to the bottom of this. First, what kind of company do you keep?"

"Well..., I like to chat with the neighbors, but none of them are living for the Lord. And it's true that most of my hunting buddies are ungodly. The phone calls I get are from worldly people and we usually have quite a lot to talk about, but she should see that I'm not like them."

I ask him, "Why?"

"Because I'm a really nice guy, anybody will tell you that."

"Yeah, but she may be remembering what the Bible says about the company we keep. For instance, Ps: 1 describes how a man of God will act, do you fit?"

Ps: 1:1-6: "Blessed is the man that walketh not in the counsel of the ungodly, nor standeth in the way of sinners, nor sitteth in the seat of the scornful. 2: But his delight is in the law of the LORD; and in his law doth he meditate day and night. 3: And he shall be like a tree planted by the rivers of water, that bringeth forth his fruit in his season; his leaf also shall not wither; and whatsoever he doeth shall prosper. 4: The ungodly are not so: but

are like the chaff which the wind driveth away. 5: Therefore the ungodly shall not stand in the judgment, nor sinners in the congregation of the righteous. 6: For the LORD knoweth the way of the righteous: but the way of the ungodly shall perish.

The man appeared to be embarrassed.

Then I say, “And then there is Ps: 119:63 which tells you who you should be hanging out with. It says, “I am a companion of all them that fear thee, and of them that keep thy precepts.”

And there’s Prov: 13:20: He that walketh with wise men shall be wise: but a companion of fools shall be destroyed.

And Prov: 28:7: Whoso keepeth the law is a wise son: but he that is a companion of riotous men shameth his father.

How about 1Cor: 5:9-11: I wrote unto you in an epistle not to company with fornicators: 10: Yet not altogether with the fornicators of this world, or with the covetous, or extortioners, or with idolaters; for then must ye needs go out of the world. 11: But now I have written unto you not to keep company, if any man that is called a brother be a fornicator, or covetous, or an idolater, or a railer, or a drunkard, or an extortioner; with such an one no not to eat.

Jesus said, ‘You shall know them by their fruits.’

And Prov: 20:11 says, Even a child is known by his doings, whether his work be pure, and whether it be right.”

What do you watch on TV, etc.?”

“Well, I don’t watch the bad stuff. I watch sports, commercials, old movies, some other clean shows.

“Well, the scriptures say, Prov: 4:23: 3: Keep thy heart with all diligence; for out of it are the issues of life

Ezek: 4:1-3: teaches about what we feast our eyes on: Then came certain of the elders of Israel unto me, and sat before me. 2: And the word of the LORD came unto me, saying, 3: Son of man, these men have set up their idols

in their heart, and put the stumblingblock of their iniquity before their face: should I be enquired of at all by them?

And then there's Rom: 13:14: But put ye on the Lord Jesus Christ, and make not provision for the flesh, to fulfil the lusts thereof.

Gal: 6:7-9: Be not deceived; God is not mocked: for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap. 8: For he that soweth to his flesh shall of the flesh reap corruption; but he that soweth to the Spirit shall of the Spirit reap life everlasting. 9: And let us not be weary in well doing: for in due season we shall reap, if we faint not.

Eph: 5:11: And have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness, but rather reprove them.

Does she see you pursuing God?"

"No. I'm a private person."

"Does she see you praying?"

"No. Same reason – I'm a private person."

"You don't pray together?"

"No. She did suggest it once, but I wasn't comfortable with it."

"When you talk, does your talk tell her that you are concerned about pleasing God?"

"Probably not. What does a person say about that?"

"Does her talk give you the idea that she wants to please God and do right?"

“Yeah.”

“That’s what a person who is godly sounds like. What does she see and hear that should convince her of your devotion to God and godly things?”

“Well, I don’t take the Lord’s name in vain. And I don’t go drinking or running around with women. I help the neighbors and treat people good.”

“Well, all that is good, but it does not tell your wife that you belong to God, therefore, don’t fault her for wondering how saved you are when you don’t heed the word of God which can save your soul.

Jas: 1:21-27: Wherefore lay apart all filthiness and superfluity of naughtiness, and receive with meekness the engrafted word, which is able to save your souls. 22: But be ye doers of the word, and not hearers only, deceiving your own selves. 23: For if any be a hearer of the word, and not a doer, he is like unto a man beholding his natural face in a glass: 24: For he beholdeth himself, and goeth his way, and straightway forgetteth what manner of man he was. 25: But whoso looketh into the perfect law of liberty, and continueth therein, he being not a forgetful hearer, but a doer of the work, this man shall be blessed in his deed. 26: If any man among you seem to be religious, and bridleth not his tongue, but deceiveth his own heart, this man’s religion is vain. 27: Pure religion and undefiled before God and the Father is this, To visit the fatherless and widows in their affliction, and to keep himself unspotted from the world.

The world is a snare, Mr. And the Bible teaches us to protect ourselves from all its subtleties by putting on the full armor of God. One of those pieces of armor is to have your loins – vulnerable parts – girt about with the truth. God’s word is truth. It’s the truth that will protect you from the wisdom of the world. 1Cor: 3:19: For the wisdom of this world is foolishness with God.

Prov: 1:20-33 has this to say about God’s wisdom: Wisdom crieth without; she uttereth her voice in the streets: 21: She crieth in the chief place of concourse, in the openings of the gates: in the city she uttereth her words, saying, 22: How long, ye simple ones, will ye love simplicity? and the scorners delight in their scorning, and fools hate knowledge? 23: Turn you at my reproof: behold, I will pour out my spirit unto you, I will make known my words unto you. 24: Because I have called, and ye refused; I have stretched out my hand, and no man regarded; 25: But ye have set at nought all my counsel, and would none of my reproof: 26: I also will laugh at your calamity; I will mock when your fear cometh; 27: When your fear cometh as desolation, and your destruction cometh as a whirlwind; when distress and anguish cometh upon you. 28: Then shall they call upon me, but I will not answer; they shall seek me early, but they shall not find me: 29: For that they hated knowledge, and did not choose the fear of the LORD: 30: They would none of my counsel: they despised all my reproof. 31: Therefore shall they eat of the fruit of their own way, and be filled with their own devices. 32: For

the turning away of the simple shall slay them, and the prosperity of fools shall destroy them. 33: But whoso hearkeneth unto me shall dwell safely, and shall be quiet from fear of evil.”

“How did we get on wisdom? I was talking about my wife believing that I’m a godly man.”

“My guess is that she sees your enjoyment of worldly activities and people, but she does not see your involvement with God and she is unsure of your relationship with Him.”

Christian Witness

God needs and wants witnesses and He has called all those who receive His gift of salvation to be His witnesses. First, we are to witness to God’s goodness and faithfulness. Second, we are to witness to God’s power. The scriptures below show how God witnesses to the truth of the word spoken concerning salvation and how the same witness in turn witnesses to the power and goodness of God.

The scriptures below show that if God’s witnesses are not faithful and true, God’s name will be blasphemed. This means that Christians’ conduct is of the utmost importance. For their right conduct not only attracts people and makes them willing to hear the gospel, but also by their right conduct Christians become vessels of honor unto the Lord and He can manifest His power in and through them.

And the scriptures below show that God’s power is a witness for Him that people need. The Bible teaches us that He can only manifest this power in a church that is living life as His witnesses.

Isa: 43:10-12: Ye are my witnesses, saith the LORD, and my servant whom I have chosen: that ye may know and believe me, and understand that I am he: before me there was no God formed, neither shall there be after me. 11: I, even I, am the LORD; and beside me there is no saviour. 12: I have declared, and have saved, and I have shewed, when there was no strange god among you: therefore ye are my witnesses, saith the LORD, that I am God.

Isa: 44:2-8: Thus saith the LORD that made thee, and formed thee from the womb, which will help thee; Fear

not, O Jacob, my servant; and thou, Jesurun, whom I have chosen. 3: For I will pour water upon him that is thirsty, and floods upon the dry ground: I will pour my spirit upon thy seed, and my blessing upon thine offspring: 4: And they shall spring up as among the grass, as willows by the water courses. 5: One shall say, I am the LORD's; and another shall call himself by the name of Jacob; and another shall subscribe with his hand unto the LORD, and surname himself by the name of Israel. 6: Thus saith the LORD the King of Israel, and his redeemer the LORD of hosts; I am the first, and I am the last; and beside me there is no God. 7: And who, as I, shall call, and shall declare it, and set it in order for me, since I appointed the ancient people? and the things that are coming, and shall come, let them shew unto them. 8: Fear ye not, neither be afraid: have not I told thee from that time, and have declared it? ye are even my witnesses. Is there a God beside me? yea, there is no God; I know not any.

Mk: 16:15-20: And he said unto them, Go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature. 16: He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved; but he that believeth not shall be damned. 17: And these signs shall follow them that believe; In my name shall they cast out devils; they shall speak with new tongues; 18: They shall take up serpents; and if they drink any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them; they shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover. 19: So then after the Lord had spoken unto them, he was received up into heaven, and sat on the right hand of God. 20: And they went forth, and preached every where, the Lord working with them, and confirming the word with signs following. Amen.

Acts: 2:22: Ye men of Israel, hear these words; Jesus of Nazareth, a man approved of God among you by miracles and wonders and signs, which God did by him in the midst of you, as ye yourselves also know:

Acts 8:6: And the people with one accord gave heed unto those things which Philip spake, hearing and seeing the miracles which he did.

Acts: 9:34-35: And Peter said unto him, Aeneas, Jesus Christ maketh thee whole: arise, and make thy bed. And he arose immediately. 35: And all that dwelt at Lydda and Saron saw him, and turned to the Lord.

Acts: 9:40-43: But Peter put them all forth, and kneeled down, and prayed; and turning him to the body said, Tabitha, arise. And she opened her eyes: and when she saw Peter, she sat up. 41: And he gave her his hand, and lifted her up, and when he had called the saints and widows, presented her alive. 42: And it was known throughout all Joppa; and many believed in the Lord. 43: And it came to pass, that he tarried many days in Joppa with one Simon a tanner.

Acts: 11:21: And the hand of the Lord was with them: and a great number believed, and turned unto the Lord.

Acts: 14:3: Long time therefore abode they speaking boldly in the Lord, which gave testimony unto the word of his grace, and granted signs and wonders to be done by their hands.

Acts: 19:11-20: And God wrought special miracles by the hands of Paul: 12: So that from his body were brought unto the sick handkerchiefs or aprons, and the diseases departed from them, and the evil spirits went out of them. 13: Then certain of the vagabond Jews, exorcists, took upon them to call over them which had evil spirits the name of the Lord Jesus, saying, We adjure you by Jesus whom Paul preacheth. 14: And there were seven sons of one Sceva, a Jew, and chief of the priests, which did so. 15: And the evil spirit answered and said, Jesus I know, and Paul I know; but who are ye? 16: And the man in whom the evil spirit was leaped on them, and overcame them, and prevailed against them, so that they fled out of that house naked and wounded. 17: And this was known to all the Jews and Greeks also dwelling at Ephesus; and fear fell on them all, and the name of the Lord Jesus was magnified. 18: And many that believed came, and confessed, and shewed their deeds. 19: Many of them also which used curious arts brought their books together, and burned them before all men: and they counted the price of them, and found it fifty thousand pieces of silver. 20: So mightily grew the word of God and prevailed.

Rom: 2:23-24: Thou that makest thy boast of the law, through breaking the law dishonourest thou God? 24: For the name of God is blasphemed among the Gentiles through you, as it is written.

Rom: 15:18-19: For I will not dare to speak of any of those things which Christ hath not wrought by me, to make the Gentiles obedient, by word and deed, 19: Through mighty signs and wonders, by the power of the Spirit of God; so that from Jerusalem, and round about unto Illyricum, I have fully preached the gospel of Christ.

1Tim: 6:1: Let as many servants as are under the yoke count their own masters worthy of all honour, that the name of God and his doctrine be not blasphemed.

Titus: 2:5: To be discreet, chaste, keepers at home, good, obedient to their own husbands, that the word of God be not blasphemed.

Heb: 2:4: God also bearing them witness, both with signs and wonders, and with divers miracles, and gifts of the Holy Ghost, according to his own will?

Ps: 58:10: The righteous shall rejoice when he seeth the vengeance: he shall wash his feet in the blood of the wicked. 11: So that a man shall say, Verily there is a reward for the righteous: verily he is a God that judgeth in the earth.

Judging

This article is to show what Christians are to judge and what they are not to judge

We are not to judge:

Mt: 7:1-2: Judge not, that ye be not judged. For with what judgment ye judge, ye shall be judged: and with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you again.

Rom: 10:6-10: But the righteousness which is of faith speaketh on this wise, Say not in thine heart, Who shall ascend into heaven? (that is, to bring Christ down from above:) 7: Or, Who shall descend into the deep? (that is, to bring up Christ again from the dead.) 8: But what saith it? The word is nigh thee, even in thy mouth, and in thy heart: that is, the word of faith, which we preach; 9: That if thou shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and shalt believe in thine heart that God hath raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved. 10: For with the heart man believeth unto righteousness; and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation.

Rom: 14:3: Let not him that eateth despise him that eateth not; and let not him which eateth not judge him that eateth: for God hath received him.

Rom: 14:10: But why dost thou judge thy brother? or why dost thou set at nought thy brother? for we shall all stand before the judgment seat of Christ.

Rom: 14:13: Let us not therefore judge one another any more: but judge this rather, that no man put a stumblingblock or an occasion to fall in his brother's way.

1Cor: 4:5: Therefore judge nothing before the time, until the Lord come, who both will bring to light the hidden things of darkness, and will make manifest the counsels of the hearts: and then shall every man have praise of God.

Jas: 4:11: Speak not evil one of another, brethren. He that speaketh evil of his brother, and judgeth his brother,

speaketh evil of the law, and judgeth the law: but if thou judge the law, thou art not a doer of the law, but a judge.

1Pet: 1:17: And if ye call on the Father, who without respect of persons judgeth according to every man's work, pass the time of your sojourning here in fear:

1Pet: 2:23: Who, when he was reviled, reviled not again; when he suffered, he threatened not; but committed himself to him that judgeth righteously:

(These passages are talking about condemning a person. We are not to speak condemnation on anyone. God is the only qualified judge.)

Judgments we are to make:

Lk: 12:51-59: Suppose ye that I am come to give peace on earth? I tell you, Nay; but rather division: 52: For from henceforth there shall be five in one house divided, three against two, and two against three. 53: The father shall be divided against the son, and the son against the father; the mother against the daughter, and the daughter against the mother; the mother in law against her daughter in law, and the daughter in law against her mother in law. 54: And he said also to the people, When ye see a cloud rise out of the west, straightway ye say, There cometh a shower; and so it is. 55: And when ye see the south wind blow, ye say, There will be heat; and it cometh to pass. 56: Ye hypocrites, ye can discern the face of the sky and of the earth; but how is it that ye do not discern this time? 57: Yea, and why even of yourselves judge ye not what is right? 58: When thou goest with thine adversary to the magistrate, as thou art in the way, give diligence that thou mayest be delivered from him; lest he hale thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer, and the officer cast thee into prison. 59: I tell thee, thou shalt not depart thence, till thou hast paid the very last mite.

(In these verses Jesus is talking about discernment. (Webster's New World dictionary Thesaurus says these words go with discernment: awareness, culture, discovery, discretion, discrimination, distinction, feeling, genius, intelligence, niceness, notion, penetration, reason, sagacity, sense, tact, taste, vision) this information should help us understand what Jesus is saying here. He is teaching us to get all the facts and decided according to what is true and right in any given situation. The reason His coming brings contention instead of peace is because Christians should love the truth and defend the truth at all cost. At the same time they are to be loving, kind, and peaceable.)

Jn: 7:22-24: Moses therefore gave unto you circumcision; (not because it is of Moses, but of the fathers;) and ye on the sabbath day circumcise a man. 23: If a man on the sabbath day receive circumcision, that the law of

Moses should not be broken; are ye angry at me, because I have made a man every whit whole on the sabbath day? 24: Judge not according to the appearance, but judge righteous judgment.

1Cor: 4:5: Therefore judge nothing before the time, until the Lord come, who both will bring to light the hidden things of darkness, and will make manifest the counsels of the hearts: and then shall every man have praise of God.

1Cor: 2:15: But he that is spiritual judgeth (scrutinizes) all things, yet he himself is judged of no man.

1Cor: 6:2-7: Do ye not know that the saints shall judge the world? and if the world shall be judged by you, are ye unworthy to judge the smallest matters? 3: Know ye not that we shall judge angels? how much more things that pertain to this life? 4: If then ye have judgments of things pertaining to this life, set them to judge who are least esteemed in the church. 5: I speak to your shame. Is it so, that there is not a wise man among you? no, not one that shall be able to judge between his brethren? 6: But brother goeth to law with brother, and that before the unbelievers. 7: Now therefore there is utterly a fault among you, because ye go to law one with another. Why do ye not rather take wrong? why do ye not rather suffer yourselves to be defrauded?

1Cor: 10:1-15: Moreover, brethren, I would not that ye should be ignorant, how that all our fathers were under the cloud, and all passed through the sea; 2: And were all baptized unto Moses in the cloud and in the sea; 3: And did all eat the same spiritual meat; 4: And did all drink the same spiritual drink: for they drank of that spiritual Rock that followed them: and that Rock was Christ. 5: But with many of them God was not well pleased: for they were overthrown in the wilderness. 6: Now these things were our examples, to the intent we should not lust after evil things, as they also lusted. 7: Neither be ye idolaters, as were some of them; as it is written, The people sat down to eat and drink, and rose up to play. 8: Neither let us commit fornication, as some of them committed, and fell in one day three and twenty thousand. 9: Neither let us tempt Christ, as some of them also tempted, and were destroyed of serpents. 10: Neither murmur ye, as some of them also murmured, and were destroyed of the destroyer. 11: Now all these things happened unto them for ensamples: and they are written for our admonition, upon whom the ends of the world are come. 12: Wherefore let him that thinketh he standeth take heed lest he fall. 13: There hath no temptation taken you but such as is common to man: but God is faithful, who will not suffer you to be tempted above that ye are able; but will with the temptation also make a way to escape, that ye may be able to bear it. 14: Wherefore, my dearly beloved, flee from idolatry. 15: I speak as to wise men; judge ye what I say.

1Cor: 14:27-29: If any man speak in an unknown tongue, let it be by two, or at the most by three, and that by course; and let one interpret. 28: But if there be no interpreter, let him keep silence in the church; and let him speak to himself, and to God. 29: Let the prophets speak two or three, and let the other judge (discern).

The church is to judge some things:

(As Solomon says in Eccles: 3:1, there is a time and season for everything. There are places where we must judge ourselves and there is a place where each member of the church must judge whether he should report an incident or a person's behavior to the elders and there are places where the elders must judge whether the person is guilty and then follow biblical procedure in the case.)

1Cor: 5:1-13: It is reported commonly that there is fornication among you, and such fornication as is not so much as named among the Gentiles, that one should have his father's wife. 2: And ye are puffed up, and have not rather mourned, that he that hath done this deed might be taken away from among you. 3: For I verily, as absent in body, but present in spirit, have judged already, as though I were present, concerning him that hath so done this deed, 4: In the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, when ye are gathered together, and my spirit, with the power of our Lord Jesus Christ, 5: To deliver such an one unto Satan for the destruction of the flesh, that the spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord Jesus. 6: Your glorying is not good. Know ye not that a little leaven leaveneth the whole lump? 7: Purge out therefore the old leaven, that ye may be a new lump, as ye are unleavened. For even Christ our passover is sacrificed for us: 8: Therefore let us keep the feast, not with old leaven, neither with the leaven of malice and wickedness; but with the unleavened bread of sincerity and truth. 9: I wrote unto you in an epistle not to company with fornicators: 10: Yet not altogether with the fornicators of this world, or with the covetous, or extortioners, or with idolaters; for then must ye needs go out of the world. 11: But now I have written unto you not to keep company, if any man that is called a brother be a fornicator, or covetous, or an idolater, or a railer, or a drunkard, or an extortioner; with such an one no not to eat. 12: For what have I to do to judge them also that are without? do not ye judge them that are within? 13: But them that are without God judgeth. Therefore put away from among yourselves that wicked person.

1Cor: 11:26-31: For as often as ye eat this bread, and drink this cup, ye do shew the Lord's death till he come. 27: Wherefore whosoever shall eat this bread, and drink this cup of the Lord, unworthily, shall be guilty of the body and blood of the Lord. 28: But let a man examine himself, and so let him eat of that bread, and drink of that cup. 29: For he that eateth and drinketh unworthily, eateth and drinketh damnation to himself, not discerning the Lord's body. 30: For this cause many are weak and sickly among you, and many sleep. For if we would judge ourselves, we should not be judged.

Col: 2:10-17: And ye are complete in him, which is the head of all principality and power: 11: In whom also ye are circumcised with the circumcision made without hands, in putting off the body of the sins of the flesh by the circumcision of Christ: 12: Buried with him in baptism, wherein also ye are risen with him through the faith of the operation of God, who hath raised him from the dead. 13: And you, being dead in your sins and the uncircumcision of your flesh, hath he quickened together with him, having forgiven you all trespasses; 14: Blotting out the handwriting of ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nailing it to his cross; 15: And having spoiled principalities and powers, he made a shew of them openly, triumphing over them in it. 16: Let no man therefore judge you in meat, or in drink, or in respect of an holyday,

or of the new moon, or of the sabbath days: 17: Which are a shadow of things to come; but the body is of Christ.

2Tim: 4:1-4: This know also, that in the last days perilous times shall come. 2: For men shall be lovers of their own selves, covetous, boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy, 3: Without natural affection, trucebreakers, false accusers, incontinent, fierce, despisers of those that are good, 4: Traitors, heady, highminded, lovers of pleasures more than lovers of God; 5: Having a form of godliness, but denying the power thereof: from such turn away.

Our Light Affliction

In today's America there are many Christians who have not used the Word to train their thinking to fear not man, to endure tests and trials, and to be longsuffering.

Believers must do these things to overcome – especially in these end times when persecution against Christians can break out anywhere. In fact in most of the world there is more persecution of Christians today than ever before. BE READY!

With compiled scriptures I will endeavor to show believers when to stand against the enemy, how to stand against the enemy, and why they must stand against the enemy. And to show them what endurance is, where it is called for and what longsuffering is, and where it is necessary?

MINDSET:

Cor: 4:17-18: For our light affliction, which is but for a moment, worketh for us a far more exceeding and eternal weight of glory; While we look not at the things which are seen, but at the things which are not seen: for the things which are seen are temporal; but the things which are not seen are eternal.

Notice that the affliction works for you. How? Every time we choose to do things God's way and not our own, we gain ground in the battle to be conformed into Jesus' image. And every time we choose to take a lesser way, we lose ground and are weakened for the battle.

PERSECUTION:

Mt: 5:10-16: Blessed are they which are persecuted for righteousness' sake: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven. 11: Blessed are ye, when men shall revile you, and persecute you, and shall say all manner of evil against you falsely, for my sake. 12: Rejoice, and be exceeding glad: for great is your reward in heaven: for so persecuted they the prophets which were before you. 13: Ye are the salt of the earth: but if the salt have lost his savour, wherewith shall it be salted? it is thenceforth good for nothing, but to be cast out, and to be trodden under foot of men. 14: Ye are the light of the world. A city that is set on an hill cannot be hid. 15: Neither do men light a candle, and put it under a bushel, but on a candlestick; and it giveth light unto all that are in the house. 16: Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father which is in heaven.

Why must Christians stand for the truth?

- They are the salt of the earth.
- They are to let their light shine.

Mt: 10:16-21: Behold, I send you forth as sheep in the midst of wolves: be ye therefore wise as serpents, and harmless as doves. 17: But beware of men: for they will deliver you up to the councils, and they will scourge you in their synagogues; 18: And ye shall be brought before governors and kings for my sake, for a testimony against them and the Gentiles. 19: But when they deliver you up, take no thought how or what ye shall speak: for it shall be given you in that same hour what ye shall speak. 20: For it is not ye that speak, but the Spirit of your Father which speaketh in you. 21: And the brother shall deliver up the brother to death, and the father the child: and the children shall rise up against their parents, and cause them to be put to death.

22-25: And ye shall be hated of all men for my name's sake: but he that endureth to the end shall be saved. 23: But when they persecute you in this city, flee ye into another: for verily I say unto you, Ye shall not have gone over the cities of Israel, till the Son of man be come. 24: The disciple is not above his master, nor the servant above his lord. 25: It is enough for the disciple that he be as his master, and the servant as his lord. If they have called the master of the house Beelzebub, how much more shall they call them of his household?

- Their master (Jesus) did not fear man. He always did as His Father bid Him. Christians will get the same treatment Jesus gets.

26-31: Fear them not therefore: for there is nothing covered, that shall not be revealed; and hid, that shall not be

known. 27: What I tell you in darkness, that speak ye in light: and what ye hear in the ear, that preach ye upon the housetops. 28: And fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul: but rather fear him which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell. 29: Are not two sparrows sold for a farthing? and one of them shall not fall on the ground without your Father. 30: But the very hairs of your head are all numbered. 31: Fear ye not therefore, ye are of more value than many sparrows.

32-39: Whosoever therefore shall confess me before men, him will I confess also before my Father which is in heaven. 33: But whosoever shall deny me before men, him will I also deny before my Father which is in heaven. 34: Think not that I am come to send peace on earth: I came not to send peace, but a sword. 35: For I am come to set a man at variance against his father, and the daughter against her mother, and the daughter in law against her mother in law. 36: And a man's foes shall be they of his own household. 37: He that loveth father or mother more than me is not worthy of me: and he that loveth son or daughter more than me is not worthy of me. 38: And he that taketh not his cross, and followeth after me, is not worthy of me. 39: He that findeth his life shall lose it: and he that loseth his life for my sake shall find it.

Jn: 14:27: Peace I leave with you, my peace I give unto you: not as the world giveth, give I unto you. Let not your heart be troubled, neither let it be afraid.

First emphasis: Fear not man. This is necessary in an evil and adulterous generation or in a country where Jesus is not welcome. For many there is a real threat of being beaten up, thrown in jail or even killed. Jesus told us to stand for what He has taught us in the face of persecution.

- To stand means the truth is upheld. The truth is proclaimed and emphasized. The benefits are that some people will give heed and even eventually receive the Lord. Others will ponder it and be fore-warned.
- To stand also means we are pleasing the Father and the Son.
- It means you are doing your part for the cause of Christ, which is to proclaim truth in order to set men free and to save souls. Jesus paid a high price to make these things available. The least believers can do is be His body down here as He represents them as their High Priest up there.

How do you gain the courage and determination to stand?

- Develop a close personal love relationship with the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit.
- Remember that you are salt and light in a dark, tasteless world.
- Know that God cares for you and even the hairs of your head are important to Him.
- Remind yourself that man can only kill your body. God has power over all of you.

- Know that all of God's children confess Him.
- Let not your heart be afraid, put your trust in Him.

How to handle persecution:

Mt: 5:44: But I say unto you, Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you, and persecute you;

Who will be persecuted in these last days:

2Tim: 3:12: Yea, and all that will live godly in Christ Jesus shall suffer persecution.

PATIENCE:

Mt: 18:26: The servant therefore fell down, and worshipped him, saying, Lord, have patience with me, and I will pay thee all.

Christians need patience in order to show mercy:

Lk: 8:15: But that on the good ground are they, which in an honest and good heart, having heard the word, keep it, and bring forth fruit with patience.

Lk: 21:19: In your patience possess ye your souls.

Rom: 5:3-4: And not only so, but we glory in tribulations also: knowing that tribulation worketh patience; And patience, experience; and experience, hope:

Christians need patience to go through their tests and trials successfully. As they exercise patience during trials they become more skilled at being patient, thus it says here tribulation worketh patience.

Rom: 15:4: For whatsoever things were written aforetime were written for our learning, that we through patience and comfort of the scriptures might have hope.

2Cor: 12:12: Truly the signs of an apostle were wrought among you in all patience, in signs, and wonders, and mighty deeds.

Patience is listed as a sign of true Christianity:

Col: 1:11: Strengthened with all might, according to his glorious power, unto all patience and longsuffering with joyfulness;

2Thess: 1:4: So that we ourselves glory in you in the churches of God for your patience and faith in all your persecutions and tribulations that ye endure:

1Tim: 6:11: But thou, O man of God, flee these things; and follow after righteousness, godliness, faith, love, patience, meekness.

2Tim: 3:10: But thou hast fully known my doctrine, manner of life, purpose, faith, longsuffering, charity, patience,

Titus: 2:2: That the aged men be sober, grave, temperate, sound in faith, in charity, in patience.

Heb: 6:12: That ye be not slothful, but followers of them who through faith and patience inherit the promises.

Heb: 10:36: For ye have need of patience, that, after ye have done the will of God, ye might receive the promise.

Christians need to practice patience to receive the promises:

Heb: 12:1: Wherefore seeing we also are compassed about with so great a cloud of witnesses, let us lay aside every weight, and the sin which doth so easily beset us, and let us run with patience the race that is set before us,

Jas: 1:3-4: Knowing this, that the trying of your faith worketh patience. But let patience have her perfect work, that ye may be perfect and entire, wanting nothing.

Jas: 5:10-11: Take, my brethren, the prophets, who have spoken in the name of the Lord, for an example of suffering affliction, and of patience. Behold, we count them happy which endure. Ye have heard of the patience of Job, and have seen the end of the Lord; that the Lord is very pitiful, and of tender mercy.

Rev: 2:2: I know thy works, and thy labour, and thy patience, and how thou canst not bear them which are evil: and thou hast tried them which say they are apostles, and are not, and hast found them liars:

Rev: 3:10: Because thou hast kept the word of my patience, I also will keep thee from the hour of temptation, which shall come upon all the world, to try them that dwell upon the earth.

Rev: 13:10: He that leadeth into captivity shall go into captivity: he that killeth with the sword must be killed with the sword. Here is the patience and the faith of the saints.

ENDURANCE:

Mt: 10:22: And ye shall be hated of all men for my name's sake: but he that endureth to the end shall be saved.

Mt: 24:13: But he that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved.

Mk: 4:17: And have no root in themselves, and so endure but for a time: afterward, when affliction or persecution ariseth for the word's sake, immediately they are offended.

Mk: 13:13: And ye shall be hated of all men for my name's sake: but he that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved.

Mt: 13:21: Yet hath he not root in himself, but dureth for a while: for when tribulation or persecution ariseth because of the word, by and by he is offended.

1Cor: 13:4-8: Charity suffereth long, and is kind; charity envieth not; charity vaunteth not itself, is not puffed up, 5: Doth not behave itself unseemly, seeketh not her own, is not easily provoked, thinketh no evil; 6: Rejoiceth not in iniquity, but rejoiceth in the truth; 7: Beareth all things, believeth all things, hopeth all things, endureth all things. 8: Charity never faileth:

2Thes: 1:4: So that we ourselves glory in you in the churches of God for your patience and faith in all your persecutions and tribulations that ye endure:

Heb: 12:7: If ye endure chastening, God dealeth with you as with sons; for what son is he whom the father chasteneth not?

Jas: 1:12: Blessed is the man that endureth temptation: for when he is tried, he shall receive the crown of life, which the Lord hath promised to them that love him.

Jas: 5:11: Behold, we count them happy which endure. Ye have heard of the patience of Job, and have seen the end of the Lord; that the Lord is very pitiful, and of tender mercy.

1Pet: 2:19: For this is thankworthy, if a man for conscience toward God endure grief, suffering wrongfully.

1Pet: 4:12-14: Beloved, think it not strange concerning the fiery trial which is to try you, as though some strange thing happened unto you: But rejoice, inasmuch as ye are partakers of Christ's sufferings; that, when his glory shall be revealed, ye may be glad also with exceeding joy. If ye be reproached for the name of Christ, happy are ye; for the spirit of glory and of God resteth upon you: on their part he is evil spoken of, but on your part he is glorified.

LONGSUFFERING:

Gal: 5:22: But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith,

Eph: 4:2: With all lowliness and meekness, with longsuffering, forbearing one another in love;

Col: 1:11: Strengthened with all might, according to his glorious power, unto all patience and longsuffering with joyfulness;

Col: 3:12: Put on therefore, as the elect of God, holy and beloved, bowels of mercies, kindness, humbleness of mind, meekness, longsuffering;

1Tim: 1:16: Howbeit for this cause I obtained mercy, that in me first Jesus Christ might shew forth all

longsuffering, for a pattern to them which should hereafter believe on him to life everlasting.

2Pet: 3:15: And account that the longsuffering of our Lord is salvation; even as our beloved brother Paul also according to the wisdom given unto him hath written unto you;

Longsuffering is the state of enduring as one patiently waits for the desired result.

SUFFERING:

1Pet: 3:14: But and if ye suffer for righteousness' sake, happy are ye: and be not afraid of their terror, neither be troubled;

2Cor: 4:11-18: For we which live are always delivered unto death for Jesus' sake, that the life also of Jesus might be made manifest in our mortal flesh. 12 Cor:4:12-18: 12: So then death worketh in us, but life in you. 13: We having the same spirit of faith, according as it is written, I believed, and therefore have I spoken; we also believe, and therefore speak; 14: Knowing that he which raised up the Lord Jesus shall raise up us also by Jesus, and shall present us with you. 15: For all things are for your sakes, that the abundant grace might through the thanksgiving of many redound to the glory of God. 16: For which cause we faint not; but though our outward man perish, yet the inward man is renewed day by day. 17: For our light affliction, which is but for a moment, worketh for us a far more exceeding and eternal weight of glory; 18: While we look not at the things which are seen, but at the things which are not seen: for the things which are seen are temporal; but the things which are not seen are eternal.

This must be the believer's attitude in order to practice patience, endurance, longsuffering, and fearlessness.

Who Is Going to Win?

Of those who are going through tests and trials, who's going to win?

- Not all those who think they are going to heaven.
- Not all those who believe they have covenant with God.
- Not all those who are born again.
- Not all those who believe that Jesus is the Christ.
- Not all those who go to church every week.

Who's going to win? Those who trust and obey God will win.

- Obedience is not just, not committing adultery.
- It's not just, not taking the Lord's name in vain.
- It's not just being kind and forgiving.

Trusting and obeying God, in context of winning or as Jesus puts it in His letters in Rev: 2-3, overcoming is for those who follow all of God's instructions for winning.

- This means putting on the full armor of God. Eph: 6
- This means meditating on the Word. Prov: 3:20-27, Eph: 6:14
- This means protecting your heart. Prov: 4 esp. Vs: 23
- This means keeping the right company. Ps: 1, Prov: 13:19, Gal: 5:7-9
- This means staying in Jesus' camp, not the enemy's. (Avoid feeding the carnal nature and feed the spirit.) Jn: 15, Rom: 13:14
- This means confessing God's promises and avoiding speaking your fears brought on by the enemy attacking your mind.
- This means doing battle at all times. With every onslaught, you must make sure your armor is in place and use it.
- This means lifting your hands and praising the Lord for the victory before it is manifest.
- This means receiving and using God's gift spoken of in Isa: 61:1-3 – the anointing.
- This means praying always with all prayer and supplication. Eph: 6:18. Phil: 4:4-9
- This means having done all, to stand.

To Be Led By the Spirit

Gal: 5:1-6: Stand fast therefore in the liberty wherewith Christ hath made us free, and be not entangled again with the yoke of bondage. 2: Behold, I Paul say unto you, that if ye be circumcised, Christ shall profit you nothing. 3: For I testify again to every man that is circumcised, that he is a debtor to do the whole law. 4: Christ is become of no effect unto you, whosoever of you are justified by the law; ye are fallen from grace. 5: For we through the Spirit wait for the hope of righteousness by faith. 6: For in Jesus Christ neither circumcision availeth any thing, nor uncircumcision; but faith which worketh by love.

(So far we have learned that for someone to insist upon a male being circumcised in order to receive salvation is erroneous because it is just an outward sign that a person is under the law. And we learn that a person is justified by faith in Christ and no other way.)

7-15: Ye did run well; who did hinder you that ye should not obey the truth? 8: This persuasion cometh not of him that calleth you. 9: A little leaven leaveneth the whole lump. 10: I have confidence in you through the Lord, that ye will be none otherwise minded: but he that troubleth you shall bear his judgment, whosoever he be. 11: And I, brethren, if I yet preach circumcision, why do I yet suffer persecution? then is the offence of the cross ceased. 12: I would they were even cut off which trouble you. 13: For, brethren, ye have been called unto liberty; only use not liberty for an occasion to the flesh, but by love serve one another. 14: For all the law is fulfilled in one word, even in this; Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. 15: But if ye bite and devour one another, take heed that ye be not consumed one of another.

(This section mentions that we are in a race and must run it according to the rules. Paul also points out that erroneous teaching works as leaven and should be immediately purged. He reminds the Galatians that Christ has given us liberty from a legal written code and our rule of thumb is the summary of the law which is to love our neighbor as ourselves which does not include biting and devouring one another. Now he is going to tell us how to distinguish between the works of the flesh and the works of the spirit.)

5:16: This I say then, Walk in the Spirit, and ye shall not fulfil the lust of the flesh.

5:17-21: For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh: and these are contrary the one to the other: so that ye cannot do the things that ye would. 18: But if ye be led of the Spirit, ye are not under the law. 19: Now the works of the flesh are manifest, which are these; Adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness, 20: Idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies, 21: Envyings, murders, drunkenness, revellings, and such like: of the which I tell you before, as I have also told you in time past, that they which do such things shall not inherit the kingdom of God.

(Notice – take heed – when anyone does these things, he is operating out of his soul area and not out of his born again spirit.)

22-26: But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, 23: Meekness, temperance: against such there is no law. 24: And they that are Christ's have crucified the flesh with the affections and lusts. 25: If we live in the Spirit, let us also walk in the Spirit. 26: Let us not be desirous of vain glory, provoking one another, envying one another.

(Paul is saying that if you are being led by your born again spirit these fruits will manifest. One problem we have is that if we see a large amount of one or another of these fruits operating in one person, we have a tendency to expect all Christians to have the same amount and that is not necessarily true.

Each one who walks by the Spirit will manifest some fruits better than others because of our personal bents. One person may be very good at manifesting joy, another at manifesting love or caring, another at showing great meekness and so on. Some fruits will be immature in one Christian and fully matured in another. But all those walking by the Spirit will be exercising these qualities – the degree depends upon the person's personality, spiritual growth, and opportunities.)

Gal: 6:1: Brethren, if a man be overtaken in a fault, ye which are spiritual, restore such an one in the spirit of meekness; considering thyself, lest thou also be tempted.

(Notice, there is such a thing as one Christian being more spiritual than another. The amplified Bible says to be defined as spiritual, one must be responsive to and controlled by the Spirit.)

2-6: Bear ye one another's burdens, and so fulfil the law of Christ. 3: For if a man think himself to be something, when he is nothing, he deceiveth himself. 4: But let every man prove his own work, and then shall he have rejoicing in himself alone, and not in another. 5: For every man shall bear his own burden. 6: Let him that is taught in the word communicate unto him that teacheth in all good things.

(Paul is saying we all have faults, but we should be striving to overcome them. He says we should try to help one another in this matter. Notice, he did not say, ignore the faults and he did not say, excuse them, he said, let us help one another to overcome and let us give others space to grow. He says we should not compare our progress with other people's progress, but we should compare our fruits with the word of God. Verse 5 is not contradicting verse 2. Verse 5 is talking about our own personal striving to overcome our faults and he said it in context to verses 3 and 4.)

7-8: Be not deceived; God is not mocked: for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap. 8: For he that soweth to his flesh shall of the flesh reap corruption; but he that soweth to the Spirit shall of the Spirit reap life everlasting.

(All that Paul has admonished the church about in this article has to do with sowing and reaping. To walk by the Spirit and manifest the fruits of the Spirit one must be cultivating their heart. Preparing the ground is accomplished by repenting of erroneous and sinful thinking. Planting involves reading and meditating on God's Word. Keeping the weeds out consist of protecting your heart from the cares of this world, the deceitfulness of riches, and the lust for other things.)

9-10: And let us not be weary in well doing: for in due season we shall reap, if we faint not. 10: As we have therefore opportunity, let us do good unto all men, especially unto them who are of the household of faith.

(If you do these things in Galatians you will be able to resist fainting and can look forward to reaping a good harvest.)

When God Raises Up a Ruler

When God raises up a ruler, He has a purpose for them. Their choices will determine their purpose and their future.

Let's look at Ezek: 30:21-26: Son of man, I have broken the arm of Pharaoh king of Egypt; and, lo, it shall not be bound up to be healed, to put a roller to bind it, to make it strong to hold the sword. 22: Therefore thus saith the Lord GOD; Behold, I am against Pharaoh king of Egypt, and will break his arms, the strong, and that which

was broken; and I will cause the sword to fall out of his hand. 23: And I will scatter the Egyptians among the nations, and will disperse them through the countries. 24: And I will strengthen the arms of the king of Babylon, and put my sword in his hand: but I will break Pharaoh's arms, and he shall groan before him with the groanings of a deadly wounded man. 25: But I will strengthen the arms of the king of Babylon, and the arms of Pharaoh shall fall down; and they shall know that I am the LORD, when I shall put my sword into the hand of the king of Babylon, and he shall stretch it out upon the land of Egypt. 26: And I will scatter the Egyptians among the nations, and disperse them among the countries; and they shall know that I am the LORD.

(Why would God raise up the king of Egypt and why would He put him down and raise up the King of Babylon, after all, neither of these kings belonged to God? They were not one of His. That's what we are going to find out.)

Ezek: 31:1-14: And it came to pass in the eleventh year, in the third month, in the first day of the month, that the word of the LORD came unto me, saying, 2: Son of man, speak unto Pharaoh king of Egypt, and to his multitude; Whom art thou like in thy greatness? 3: Behold, the Assyrian was a cedar in Lebanon with fair branches, and with a shadowing shroud, and of an high stature; and his top was among the thick boughs. 4: The waters made him great, the deep set him up on high with her rivers running round about his plants, and sent out her little rivers unto all the trees of the field. 5: Therefore his height was exalted above all the trees of the field, and his boughs were multiplied, and his branches became long because of the multitude of waters, when he shot forth. 6: All the fowls of heaven made their nests in his boughs, and under his branches did all the beasts of the field bring forth their young, and under his shadow dwelt all great nations. 7: Thus was he fair in his greatness, in the length of his branches: for his root was by great waters. 8: The cedars in the garden of God could not hide him: the fir trees were not like his boughs, and the chestnut trees were not like his branches; nor any tree in the garden of God was like unto him in his beauty. 9: I have made him fair by the multitude of his branches: so that all the trees of Eden, that were in the garden of God, envied him. 10: Therefore thus saith the Lord GOD; Because thou hast lifted up thyself in height, and he hath shot up his top among the thick boughs, and his heart is lifted up in his height; 11: I have therefore delivered him into the hand of the mighty one of the heathen; he shall surely deal with him: I have driven him out for his wickedness. 12: And strangers, the terrible of the nations, have cut him off, and have left him: upon the mountains and in all the valleys his branches are fallen, and his boughs are broken by all the rivers of the land; and all the people of the earth are gone down from his shadow, and have left him. 13: Upon his ruin shall all the fowls of the heaven remain, and all the beasts of the field shall be upon his branches: 14: To the end that none of all the trees by the waters exalt themselves for their height, neither shoot up their top among the thick boughs, neither their trees stand up in their height, all that drink water: for they are all delivered unto death, to the nether parts of the earth, in the midst of the children of men, with them that go down to the pit.

(According to Ezekiel 31, God raised up the king of Egypt so that the oppressed and weak would have a place to go for refuge in their time of trouble. Israel went to Egypt different times. Abram, later Abraham went to Egypt, Isaac went to Egypt and Joseph, Jesus' father, went to Egypt to save Jesus' life.

Why Pharaoh? My guess is because he was in the right place at the right time for God to use him and God knew he would not oppress the people.

Why did God use him for a while and then judge him and take him out? It shows in these passages that Pharaoh got a big head. He got puffed up and according to what it says in verse 11, Pharaoh must have misused his power after he began to think more highly of himself than he ought. He apparently did what all corrupt rulers do, he concentrated on pleasing himself above all else, therefore he became an oppressor.

Why would God raise up the king of Babylon? Babylon has always been a bad influence on God's people. Because God deemed that a lesson needed to be taught to all and that is revealed in verse 14. He wants the world to know that He alone is God and no one should think more highly of himself than that which he know to be true, which is he or she is a mere man and without God they are as grass that is here today and gone tomorrow.

God is teaching this lesson again. This is why Babylon or Babylonian thinking is taking over the world today. It is for the purpose of teaching another lesson in hearkening unto God and no other. Any teaching that is not Biblical is Babylonian and will come to naught along with all those who do not repent of that way of thinking.

It's the Little Foxes that Spoil the Vine.

There are many small discrepancies (behaviors that don't match our image in the Word of God) that have crept into the body of Christ and soiled our garments.

There are many small issues that no one wants to deal with and they are the issues that have created the bigger problems. It's the little foxes that spoil the vine.

Because these issues were not dealt with by the church, the congregation has become vary lax in these matters.

- What should Christians wear?

- What should Christians watch, read, and listen to?
- Who should Christians hang out with?

The harm is...

- That all these things will weaken the person who is committing the error.
- These behaviors will also influence others to commit the same errors especially if the discrepancy is treated as though it is acceptable and normal.
- These erroneous behaviors are a bad witness.

For example: if people begin to dress in an immodest manner and it is not treated as unacceptable, more and more of them will do it. They will fall one by one until there is no difference between how the world dresses and how the church dresses. Is this so bad? Think about it. Many Christians are now dressing in a manner that in the past was looked upon as a harlot's attire. God is concerned about it. In Revelation he stresses white garments. Surely that means purity. He wants His people to emanate purity.

If the congregation is not as a whole taught and in agreement as to what to watch on TV and movies, etc, what to listen to, what to read, etc, then they will one by one two by two begin to watch, read, and listen to more and more ungodly stuff. If the matter is not dealt with then in time the people will no longer realize where the line is to be drawn. What can leadership do about it since it is evident that they must not dictate or meddle in things that are not their business? They can teach the people what the Bible says about these things.

If the people are not rightly taught about the company they keep, they will find themselves in the situation in Psalms one. They will be dragged down to a lower level.

These issues are terribly important and terribly neglected. Why are they so important?

- Because the church is God's witness on the earth.
- Because Christians are called to a higher life and called to overcome.

Phil: 2:15: That ye may be blameless and harmless, the sons of God, without rebuke . . .

1Pet: 1:15: But as he which hath called you is holy, so be ye holy in all manner of conversation;

1Jn: 2:6:6: He that saith he abideth in him ought himself also so to walk, even as he walked.

What must be the Christian's frame of mind in order to resist these things?

Rom: 12:1: I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, which is your reasonable service. And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God.

Rom: 8:8: So then they that are in the flesh (living the life of) cannot please God.

Rom: 8:13: For if ye live after the flesh, ye shall die: but if ye through the Spirit do mortify the deeds of the body, ye shall live.

Phil: 2:15-16: Wherefore, my beloved, as ye have always obeyed, not as in my presence only, but now much more in my absence, work out your own salvation with fear and trembling. [The amp. V. says, self-distrust, that is with serious caution, tenderness of conscience, watchfulness against temptation; timidly shrinking from whatever might offend God and discredit the name of Christ.]

Phil: 2:12: That ye may be blameless and harmless, the sons of God, without rebuke, in the midst of a crooked and perverse nation, among whom ye shine as lights in the world; Holding forth the word of life; . . .

Phil: 3:8: Yea doubtless, and I count all things but loss for the excellency of the knowledge of Christ Jesus my Lord: for whom I have suffered the loss of all things, and do count them but dung, that *I may win Christ*,

Col: 1:9-10: For this cause we also, since the day we heard it, do not cease to pray for you, and to desire that ye might be filled with the knowledge of his will in all wisdom and spiritual understanding; That ye might walk worthy of the Lord unto all pleasing, being fruitful in every good work, and increasing in the knowledge of God; Vs. 13 Who hath delivered us from the power of darkness, and hath translated us into the kingdom of his dear Son.

Col: 3:1-3: If ye then be risen with Christ, seek those things which are above, where Christ sitteth on the right hand of God. Set your affection on things above, not on things on the earth. For ye are dead, and your life is hid

with Christ in God.

What should Christians not watch, read, and listen to? Anything that feeds or strengthened your carnal nature and weakens your spiritual nature.

Zech: 5:1-4: Then I turned, and lifted up mine eyes, and looked, and behold a flying roll. (Amp. V. – scroll) And he said unto me, What seest thou? And I answered, I see a flying roll; the length thereof is twenty cubits, and the breadth thereof ten cubits. (movies, TV, computer, radio, music, CDs, magazines) Then said he unto me, This is the curse that goeth forth over the face of the whole earth: for every one that stealeth shall be cut off as on this side according to it; and every one that sweareth shall be cut off as on that side according to it. I will bring it forth, saith the LORD of hosts, and it shall enter into the house of the thief, and into the house of him that sweareth falsely by my name: and it shall remain in the midst of his house, and shall consume it with the timber thereof and the stones thereof.

Prov: 4:23: Keep thy heart with all diligence; for out of it are the issues of life.

Rom: 13:14: But put ye on the Lord Jesus Christ, and make not provision for the flesh, to fulfil the lusts thereof.

2Cor: 7:1: Having therefore these promises, dearly beloved, let us cleanse ourselves from all filthiness of the flesh and spirit, perfecting holiness in the fear of God.

2Cor: 11:2-3: For I am jealous over you with godly jealousy: for I have espoused you to one husband, that I may present you as a chaste virgin to Christ. But I fear, lest by any means, as the serpent beguiled Eve through his subtilty, so your minds should be corrupted from the simplicity [Amp. V. says that's wholehearted and sincere and pure devotion to Christ.] that is in Christ.

Gal: 6:7-8: Be not deceived; God is not mocked: for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap. For he that soweth to his flesh shall of the flesh reap corruption; but he that soweth to the Spirit shall of the Spirit reap life everlasting.

Eph: 2:2-6: Wherein in time past ye walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience: Among whom also we all had our conversation in times past in the lusts of our flesh, fulfilling the desires of the flesh and of the mind; and were by nature the children of wrath, even as others. But God, who is rich in mercy, for his great love wherewith he loved us, Even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved;) And hath raised us up together, and made us sit together in heavenly places in Christ Jesus:

Eph: 5:11: And have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness, but rather reprove them.

Phil: 1:10: That ye may approve things that are excellent; that ye may be sincere and without offence till the day of Christ;

Phil: 1:27-28: Only let your conversation [manner of life] be as it becometh the gospel of Christ: that whether I come and see you, or else be absent, I may hear of your affairs, that ye stand fast in one spirit, with one mind striving together for the faith of the gospel; And in nothing terrified by your adversaries: which is to them an evident token of perdition, but to you of salvation, and that of God.

Church Series

The Clear Call to Salvation

If the call to salvation were made clear, what God promises in Jer: 32 would be accomplished in the church.

Jer: 32:37-42: Behold, I will gather them out of all countries, whither I have driven them in mine anger, and in my fury, and in great wrath; and I will bring them again unto this place, and I will cause them to dwell safely: 38: And they shall be my people, and I will be their God: 39: And I will give them one heart, and one way, that they may fear me for ever, for the good of them, and of their children after them: 40: And I will make an everlasting covenant with them, that I will not turn away from them, to do them good; but I will put my fear in their hearts, that they shall not depart from me. 41: Yea, I will rejoice over them to do them good, and I will plant them in this land assuredly with my whole heart and with my whole soul. 42: For thus saith the LORD; Like as I have brought all this great evil upon this people, so will I bring upon them all the good that I have promised them.

Some might say that scripture is for the Jews, but I say, Heb: 8:10-13 shows that it is for all those who qualify for the covenant.

Heb: 8:10-13: For this is the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel after those days, saith the Lord; I will put my laws into their mind, and write them in their hearts: and I will be to them a God, and they shall be to me a people: 11: And they shall not teach every man his neighbour, and every man his brother, saying, Know the Lord: for all shall know me, from the least to the greatest. 12: For I will be merciful to their unrighteousness, and their sins and their iniquities will I remember no more. 13: In that he saith, A new covenant, he hath made the first old. Now that which decayeth and waxeth old is ready to vanish away.

This is a very valid and important point. Look what the church is supposed to have, be, and do. Preachers are forever preaching unity. Some preachers preach obedience. If Christians had heard and received a clear call to salvation, these things would be a given. The church would be in harmony with God and one another.

The clear call to salvation is a call to repent of doing things our way and is a call to turn to God's ways. God's

ways are laid out in the Bible.

In the call it should be clear that the person is answering God's call to be reconciled to Him and this means that He will be Father to them from then on and they will be His child. This relationship is built on love and trust.

This call changes everything. The recipient becomes a new creature. A new creation – old things are passed away and all becomes new.

Why? Because the person is born again of the Spirit of God. He or she has been given a new heart as spoken of above and is from that day forth to follow their new heart.

How? By reckoning their old nature to be crucified. They no longer do what their carnal nature dictates, but they do what God would have them do because they are born again and have His Spirit. Rom: 6-8

Some will say, "We've heard all this before. What is the purpose of this article?" The purpose is to proclaim that when one comes to Christ or gets saved or however you put it that they have been bought with a price and being an obedient child is not an option, it is a requirement.

I am not teaching that if one misses the mark that they lost their salvation, I am teaching that a child of God has covenanted to be taken care of by Him, and to be raised by Him, and to trust and obey Him, and to respond to His Word because they have a new heart.

The new heart does not want to obey the flesh and die. The new heart wants to learn from God, be led of the Lord, do righteousness and live forever.

Hebrews 10

Heb: 10:14-16: For by one offering he hath perfected for ever them that are sanctified. 15: Whereof the Holy

Ghost also is a witness to us: for after that he had said before, 16: This is the covenant that I will make with them after those days, saith the Lord, I will put my laws into their hearts, and in their minds will I write them;

(Who is perfected? Them that are sanctified – set apart for the Lord. How are they sanctified? God puts His laws in their heart. His laws – that’s right – He has not done away with the law. He has done away the legal written code. God’s laws are in the hearts of true believers because they have repented of their ways and turned to Him for guidance. Their heart has been made right with Him and now He will be able to teach them how to live and give.)

17-20: And their sins and iniquities will I remember no more. 18: Now where remission of these is, there is no more offering for sin. 19: Having therefore, brethren, boldness to enter into the holiest by the blood of Jesus, 20: By a new and living way, which he hath consecrated for us, through the veil, that is to say, his flesh;

(Those who meet the above criteria have been washed clean of all sin. They do not keep on confessing their acts of rebellion and disobedience – they are gone. They can enter into God’s presence with boldness. This means they are welcome to go to God about any and everything that they are concerned about. The blood of Jesus has provided this new and living way to approach God. The new way is a Father/child relationship with the Almighty.)

21-23: And having an high priest over the house of God; 22: Let us draw near with a true heart in full assurance of faith, having our hearts sprinkled from an evil conscience, and our bodies washed with pure water. 23: Let us hold fast the profession of our faith without wavering; (for he is faithful that promised;)

(Our profession or confession is that Jesus is our Lord and Savior and our sin is washed away and we have a Father/child relationship with God. For this plan of God’s to draw us close to Him, we must exercise faith. That is; we must steadily believe and be conscious of these truths.)

24-27: And let us consider one another to provoke unto love and to good works: 25: Not forsaking the assembling of ourselves together, as the manner of some is; but exhorting one another: and so much the more, as ye see the day approaching. 26: For if we sin wilfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remaineth no more sacrifice for sins, 27: But a certain fearful looking for of judgment and fiery indignation, which shall devour the adversaries.

(I don’t care what you may have been taught about salvation, this is the way it is. One reason we are to assemble is to encourage one another to trust and obey God because it is written right here if we sin willfully after receiving the sacrifice that Jesus made for us, there is no alternative sacrifice that can separate us from sin. Jesus

is the Way, the Truth, and the Life.

What I'm hearing in church these days is that it is none of our (the congregation's) business who's taking communion and how people dress, and so on. That is a far cry from this exhortation which tells us to care about each other's position in the Lord. We are one body – how is it that it is none of the body's business what the fingers do or the feet or whatever.)

Ezek: 13:5: Ye have not gone up into the gaps, neither made up the hedge for the house of Israel to stand in the battle in the day of the LORD.

In 'Christ' the Church is Built Together

The church has given place to or magnified our human side in order to explain our misbehavior and even excuse it. The church used to have a much higher calling. The standard was lowered to accommodate all the new people they had won into the church. They didn't come to learn how to live holy, they came to hear that they could believe in Jesus and make a few adjustments and be assured of a pleasant hereafter. Once the standard was lowered in order to keep the newcomers, they could no longer teach and preach the holiness message with any vigor and therefore the true converts were deprived of the holy influence and were surrounded with those living in unholy influences. Soon even the leaders were caught up in worldly living and the consequences of it. That's when the leaders decided that something had to be done. People were expecting too much of the clergy and other Christian witnesses, so they began to preach "the allow for our human side" message.

Yes, people used to have a high opinion of what a Christian should be, until the emphasis was taken off of the written word of God and put on human weaknesses. The intention was to relieve Christians of some of the pressure they were chaffing under. But something else happened too. Christians lost the power to live the higher life. The power lies in what one focuses on. When the focus was on looking into the mirror of the word of God and then remembering what we were to look like, Christians had to stretch. (Jas: 1:22-24) They had to reach higher. But now that the focus is on excusing everyone because of their human weakness, nobody believes they can live up to the Word. The result: no pressure, no force, no break through, and no power.

The Bible teaches that Christians are not to look at their limitations. They are to look to Christ's sufficiency. The Bible clearly calls us to a much higher level and I would like to go over some scriptures that do this.

Does this sound like the church message?

Matt: 5:27-30: Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not commit adultery: 28: But I say unto you, That whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her hath committed adultery with her already in his heart. 29: And if thy right eye offend thee, pluck it out, and cast it from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not that thy whole body should be cast into hell. 30: And if thy right hand offend thee, cut it off, and cast it from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not that thy whole body should be cast into hell.

Matt: 10:37-39: He that loveth father or mother more than me is not worthy of me: and he that loveth son or daughter more than me is not worthy of me. 38: And he that taketh not his cross, and followeth after me, is not worthy of me. 39: He that findeth his life shall lose it: and he that loseth his life for my sake shall find it.

Matt: 7:15-21: Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves. 16: Ye shall know them by their fruits. Do men gather grapes of thorns, or figs of thistles? 17: Even so every good tree bringeth forth good fruit; but a corrupt tree bringeth forth evil fruit. 18: A good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit, neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit. 19: Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire. 20: Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them. 21: Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven.

Matt: 16:24-26: Then said Jesus unto his disciples, If any man will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me. 25: For whosoever will save his life shall lose it: and whosoever will lose his life for my sake shall find it. 26: For what is a man profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul?

What about those going forth to witness and minister, what should their qualifications be?

Lk: 14:26: If any man come to me, and hate not his father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brethren, and sisters, yea, and his own life also, he cannot be my disciple.

Lk: 14:27: And whosoever doth not bear his cross, and come after me, cannot be my disciple.

Lk: 14:33: So likewise, whosoever he be of you that forsaketh not all that he hath, he cannot be my disciple.

Have you heard anything like this lately?

Rom: 6:3-8: Know ye not, that so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized into his death? 4: Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death: that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life. 5: For if we have been planted together in the likeness of his death, we shall be also in the likeness of his resurrection: 6: Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with him, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin. 7: For he that is dead is freed from sin. 8: Now if we be dead with Christ, we believe that we shall also live with him:

Rom: 8:1-9: There is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit. 2: For the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus hath made me free from the law of sin and death. 3: For what the law could not do, in that it was weak through the flesh, God sending his own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, and for sin, condemned sin in the flesh: 4: That the righteousness of the law might be fulfilled in us, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit. 5: For they that are after the flesh do mind the things of the flesh; but they that are after the Spirit the things of the Spirit. 6: For to be carnally minded is death; but to be spiritually minded is life and peace. 7: Because the carnal mind is enmity against God: for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be. 8: So then they that are in the flesh cannot please God. 9: But ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his.

Rom: 12:1-2: I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, which is your reasonable service. 2: And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God.

1Cor: 6:9-11: Know ye not that the unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdom of God? Be not deceived: neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselves with mankind, 10: Nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, shall inherit the kingdom of God. 11: And such were some of you: but ye are washed, but ye are sanctified, but ye are justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God.

2 Cor: 3:5: Not that we are sufficient of ourselves to think any thing as of ourselves; but our sufficiency is of

God;

2Cor: 5:15: And that he died for all, that they which live should not henceforth live unto themselves, but unto him which died for them, and rose again.

2Cor: 6:14-18: Be ye not unequally yoked together with unbelievers: for what fellowship hath righteousness with unrighteousness? and what communion hath light with darkness? 15: And what concord hath Christ with Belial? or what part hath he that believeth with an infidel? 16: And what agreement hath the temple of God with idols? for ye are the temple of the living God; as God hath said, I will dwell in them, and walk in them; and I will be their God, and they shall be my people. 17: Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you, 18: And will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be my sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty.

Gal: 2:20: I am crucified with Christ: nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me: and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himself for me.

Gal: 3:27: For as many of you as have been baptized into Christ have put on Christ.

Gal: 5:16-24: This I say then, Walk in the Spirit, and ye shall not fulfil the lust of the flesh. 17: For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh: and these are contrary the one to the other: so that ye cannot do the things that ye would. 18: But if ye be led of the Spirit, ye are not under the law. 19: Now the works of the flesh are manifest, which are these; Adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness, 20: Idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies, 21: Envyings, murders, drunkenness, revellings, and such like: of the which I tell you before, as I have also told you in time past, that they which do such things shall not inherit the kingdom of God. 22: But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, 23: Meekness, temperance: against such there is no law. 24: And they that are Christ's have crucified the flesh with the affections and lusts. 25: If we live in the Spirit, let us also walk in the Spirit.

Here's how it works:

Eph: 1:1-6: Paul, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, to the saints which are at Ephesus, and to the faithful in Christ Jesus: 2: Grace be to you, and peace, from God our Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ. 3: Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who hath blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places in Christ: 4: According as he hath chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love: 5: Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children

by Jesus Christ to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will, 6: To the praise of the glory of his grace, wherein he hath made us accepted in the beloved.

7-11: In whom we have redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of his grace; 8: Wherein he hath abounded toward us in all wisdom and prudence; 9: Having made known unto us the mystery of his will, according to his good pleasure which he hath purposed in himself: 10: That in the dispensation of the fulness of times he might gather together in one all things in Christ, both which are in heaven, and which are on earth; even in him: 11: In whom also we have obtained an inheritance, being predestinated according to the purpose of him who worketh all things after the counsel of his own will:

12-16: That we should be to the praise of his glory, who first trusted in Christ. 13: In whom ye also trusted, after that ye heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation: in whom also after that ye believed, ye were sealed with that holy Spirit of promise, 14: Which is the earnest of our inheritance until the redemption of the purchased possession, unto the praise of his glory. 15: Wherefore I also, after I heard of your faith in the Lord Jesus, and love unto all the saints, 16: Cease not to give thanks for you, making mention of you in my prayers;

17-23: That the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, may give unto you the spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of him: 18: The eyes of your understanding being enlightened; that ye may know what is the hope of his calling, and what the riches of the glory of his inheritance in the saints, 19: And what is the exceeding greatness of his power to us-ward who believe, according to the working of his mighty power, 20: Which he wrought in Christ, when he raised him from the dead, and set him at his own right hand in the heavenly places, 21: Far above all principality, and power, and might, and dominion, and every name that is named, not only in this world, but also in that which is to come: 22: And hath put all things under his feet, and gave him to be the head over all things to the church, 23: Which is his body, the fulness of him that filleth all in all.

Eph: 2:1-3: And you hath he quickened, who were dead in trespasses and sins; 2: Wherein in time past ye walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience: 3: Among whom also we all had our conversation in times past in the lusts of our flesh, fulfilling the desires of the flesh and of the mind; and were by nature the children of wrath, even as others.

4-7: But God, who is rich in mercy, for his great love wherewith he loved us, 5: Even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved;) 6: And hath raised us up together, and made us sit together in heavenly places in Christ Jesus: 7: That in the ages to come he might shew the exceeding riches of his grace in his kindness toward us through Christ Jesus.

8-13: For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: 9: Not of works, lest any man should boast. 10: For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them. 11: Wherefore remember, that ye being in time past Gentiles in the flesh, who are called Uncircumcision by that which is called the Circumcision in the flesh made by hands; 12: That at that time ye were without Christ, being aliens from the commonwealth of Israel, and strangers from the covenants of promise, having no hope, and without God in the world: 13: But now in Christ Jesus ye who sometimes were far off are made nigh by the blood of Christ.

14-22: For he is our peace, who hath made both one, and hath broken down the middle wall of partition between us; 15: Having abolished in his flesh the enmity, even the law of commandments contained in ordinances; for to make in himself of twain one new man, so making peace; 16: And that he might reconcile both unto God in one body by the cross, having slain the enmity thereby: 17: And came and preached peace to you which were afar off, and to them that were nigh. 18: For through him we both have access by one Spirit unto the Father. 19: Now therefore ye are no more strangers and foreigners, but fellowcitizens with the saints, and of the household of God; 20: And are built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ himself being the chief corner stone; 21: In whom all the building fitly framed together groweth unto an holy temple in the Lord: 22: In whom ye also are builded together for an habitation of God through the Spirit.

Eph: 4:10-24: He that descended is the same also that ascended up far above all heavens, that he might fill all things.) 11: And he gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers; 12: For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ: 13: Till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ: 14: That we henceforth be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men, and cunning craftiness, whereby they lie in wait to deceive; 15: But speaking the truth in love, may grow up into him in all things, which is the head, even Christ: 16: From whom the whole body fitly joined together and compacted by that which every joint supplieth, according to the effectual working in the measure of every part, maketh increase of the body unto the edifying of itself in love. 17: This I say therefore, and testify in the Lord, that ye henceforth walk not as other Gentiles walk, in the vanity of their mind, 18: Having the understanding darkened, being alienated from the life of God through the ignorance that is in them, because of the blindness of their heart: 19: Who being past feeling have given themselves over unto lasciviousness, to work all uncleanness with greediness. 20: But ye have not so learned Christ; 21: If so be that ye have heard him, and have been taught by him, as the truth is in Jesus: 22: That ye put off concerning the former conversation the old man, which is corrupt according to the deceitful lusts; 23: And be renewed in the spirit of your mind; 24: And that ye put on the new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness.

Phil: 3:14-20: I press toward the mark for the prize of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus. 15: Let us therefore, as many as be perfect, be thus minded: and if in any thing ye be otherwise minded, God shall reveal even this unto you. 16: Nevertheless, whereto we have already attained, let us walk by the same rule, let us mind the same thing. 17: Brethren, be followers together of me, and mark them which walk so as ye have us for an

ensample. 18: (For many walk, of whom I have told you often, and now tell you even weeping, that they are the enemies of the cross of Christ: 19: Whose end is destruction, whose God is their belly, and whose glory is in their shame, who mind earthly things.) 20: For our conversation is in heaven; from whence also we look for the Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ:

Phil: 4:13: I can do all things through Christ which strengtheneth me.

Col: 1:9-11: For this cause we also, since the day we heard it, do not cease to pray for you, and to desire that ye might be filled with the knowledge of his will in all wisdom and spiritual understanding; 10: That ye might walk worthy of the Lord unto all pleasing, being fruitful in every good work, and increasing in the knowledge of God; 11: Strengthened with all might, according to his glorious power, unto all patience and longsuffering with joyfulness;

Col: 2:6-13: As ye have therefore received Christ Jesus the Lord, so walk ye in him: 7: Rooted and built up in him, and stablished in the faith, as ye have been taught, abounding therein with thanksgiving. 8: Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the rudiments of the world, and not after Christ. 9: For in him dwelleth all the fulness of the Godhead bodily. 10: And ye are complete in him, which is the head of all principality and power: 11: In whom also ye are circumcised with the circumcision made without hands, in putting off the body of the sins of the flesh by the circumcision of Christ: 12: Buried with him in baptism, wherein also ye are risen with him through the faith of the operation of God, who hath raised him from the dead. 13: And you, being dead in your sins and the uncircumcision of your flesh, hath he quickened together with him, having forgiven you all trespasses;

1Pet: 2:9: But ye are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, a peculiar people; that ye should shew forth the praises of him who hath called you out of darkness into his marvellous light:

1Pet: 4:1-2: Forasmuch then as Christ hath suffered for us in the flesh, arm yourselves likewise with the same mind: for he that hath suffered in the flesh hath ceased from sin; 2: That he no longer should live the rest of his time in the flesh to the lusts of men, but to the will of God.

2Pet: 1:3-4: According as his divine power hath given unto us all things that pertain unto life and godliness, through the knowledge of him that hath called us to glory and virtue: 4: Whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious promises: that by these ye might be partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust.

1Jn: 2:6: He that saith he abideth in him ought himself also so to walk, even as he walked.

1Jn: 3:9: Whosoever is born of God doth not commit sin; for his seed remaineth in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of God.

1Jn: 3:24: And he that keepeth his commandments dwelleth in him, and he in him. And hereby we know that he abideth in us, by the Spirit which he hath given us.

1Jn: 4:13: Hereby know we that we dwell in him, and he in us, because he hath given us of his Spirit.

Rev: 2:17: He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches; To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the hidden manna, and will give him a white stone, and in the stone a new name written, which no man knoweth saving he that receiveth it.

Rev: 2:26: And he that overcometh, and keepeth my works unto the end, to him will I give power over the nations:

In order to mature as the body of Christ, the church, in unison, must focus on becoming what the word of God says it is.

It's Time to Be the Church

Eph: 4:1-3: I therefore, the prisoner of the Lord, beseech you that ye walk worthy of the vocation wherewith ye are called, 2: With all lowliness and meekness, with longsuffering, forbearing one another in love; 3: Endeavoring to keep the unity of the Spirit in the bond of peace.

4-6: There is one body, and one Spirit, even as ye are called in one hope of your calling; 5: One Lord, one faith, one baptism, 6: One God and Father of all, who is above all, and through all, and in you all.

7-10: But unto every one of us is given grace according to the measure of the gift of Christ. 8: Wherefore he saith, When he ascended up on high, he led captivity captive, and gave gifts unto men. 9: (Now that he ascended, what is it but that he also descended first into the lower parts of the earth? 10: He that descended is the same also that ascended up far above all heavens, that he might fill all things.) 11: And he gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers;

12-16: For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ: 13: Till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ: 14: That we henceforth be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men, and cunning craftiness, whereby they lie in wait to deceive; 15: But speaking the truth in love, may grow up into him in all things, which is the head, even Christ: 16: From whom the whole body fitly joined together and compacted by that which every joint supplieth, according to the effectual working in the measure of every part, maketh increase of the body unto the edifying of itself in love.

(Paul says there is one body, one faith, one hope of our calling, and one baptism. One thing I see about how churches are run is that they have given place to individuals. That's right. Everyone does their own thing. I do not want to put down or criticize any ministries. That would be a wrong thing to do and besides, I have never been in their shoes. I'm just trying to magnify what the Bible says because I think the Bible is the place to find out how the church should be and what it should do.

So first, I see that the church does not appear to be one body. It looks to me like the leaders have been trying to keep unity and a bond of peace by shutting up those who desire the church to be as describe in this chapter and they have appeased those who are out of line. How can this be remedied? By adhering to the Bible in all of church functions. The Spirit of the church – I mean all those who confess that Jesus is their Lord – is supposed to be a holy spirit. This means all the members are endeavoring to walk by the spirit and not by the flesh. The New Testament reveals the mind and spirit of Christ which is to be the church's spirit. But before I share the root cause of the missed mark let's see what else Paul has said about the church.

Next, Paul admonishes us to walk worthy of our calling. What calling? The call to be His witnesses. How are we to walk worthy? With all meekness, long-suffering, forbearing one another in love.

So it's the five-fold ministry's job to perfect the saints. It's been over 2000 years – where the fruit? What went wrong? For too long churches have claimed to be the place to go in order to grow spiritually, yet the facts are in and they declare that most Christians don't know very much about the Bible or how to be a Christian. That makes a statement. Something is wrong with the way things are being handled. Let's read on and see if we can discover what could be done better.)

17-19: This I say therefore, and testify in the Lord, that ye henceforth walk not as other Gentiles walk, in the vanity of their mind, 18: Having the understanding darkened, being alienated from the life of God through the ignorance that is in them, because of the blindness of their heart: 19: Who being past feeling have given themselves over unto lasciviousness, to work all uncleanness with greediness.

20-24: But ye have not so learned Christ; 21: If so be that ye have heard him, and have been taught by him, as the truth is in Jesus: 22: That ye put off concerning the former conversation the old man, which is corrupt according to the deceitful lusts; 23: And be renewed in the spirit of your mind; 24: And that ye put on the new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness.

(Notice that Paul does not say try not to walk as the Gentiles do. He did not say a mature Christian does not walk in the vanity of his mind. He says henceforth do not walk that way. To sum it up in my words – you have confessed that Jesus is Lord, now live like it.

How did he say one accomplishes this task? By learning Christ and putting off your carnal man and putting on your spiritual man. YOU have to put off your old clothes and YOU have to put on your new clothes. The FIVE-FOLD MINISTRY is responsible for making sure you know what belongs to the old man and what belongs to the new man.)

25-29: Wherefore putting away lying, speak every man truth with his neighbour: for we are members one of another. 26: Be ye angry, and sin not: let not the sun go down upon your wrath: 27: Neither give place to the devil. 28: Let him that stole steal no more: but rather let him labour, working with his hands the thing which is good, that he may have to give to him that needeth. 29: Let no corrupt communication proceed out of your mouth, but that which is good to the use of edifying, that it may minister grace unto the hearers.

30-31: And grieve not the holy Spirit of God, whereby ye are sealed unto the day of redemption. 31: Let all bitterness, and wrath, and anger, and clamour, and evil speaking, be put away from you, with all malice: 32: And be ye kind one to another, tenderhearted, forgiving one another, even as God for Christ's sake hath forgiven you.

(So Paul lists the things we need to do to interact on a godly level, but there's more to the Christian life than what goes on at church. The Bible teaches us how to conduct our affairs so that we will be able to live godly and holy lives – thus be effective witnesses.

That includes who you hang out with, what you listen to, what you watch, and so on. These important exercises are not addressed on the level that they need to be and that is why a lot of people who chose to be Christians have not gotten rid of their carnal ways.

I am going to address it. You cannot partake of carnal music, movies, magazines, friends, etc and still have the power to exercise godliness and holiness in every area and relation. [Check out 1Jn: 2:16, Ps: 1, Prov: 4:23, Rom: 13:14, to name a few.] Since many Christians are not exercising this very important teaching, they are still living and thinking carnal and they, along with those who come to church and haven't made a commitment to Christ, have brought this worldly junk into the church.

It was supposed to be saints gathering at church to learn how to live godly and holy lives so they could be effective witnesses and so that they would become a part of the answer instead of being a part of the problem.

So I hope I have made my point that the church was expected to be the center of Christians' spiritual life for the purpose of living as one body – the body of Christ – and growing into His fullness in order to carry on His ministry in this earth.

Today's church is little more than a nursery for baby quote unquote Christians. I said I wanted to share the root cause of this dilemma. It is that the gospel itself has mutated. It started out to be a way to be reconciled to God – be His child again – Adam and Eve were His children created in His image and then they hearkened unto the liar and died spiritually. Satan became their spiritual leader and they were lost. Jesus came and did all that needed to be done in order for man to be born again of the Spirit of God and be His children. It's the gospel of the kingdom of God, not the good news of a way for sinners to go to heaven.

The good news mutated into a plan God came up with to have a relationship with man even though they do miss the mark so often. This is why Christians have a form of godliness buy deny [cannot access or display] the power of it.)

Washing One Another's Feet

Jn: 13:6-15: Then cometh he to Simon Peter: and Peter saith unto him, Lord, dost thou wash my feet? 7: Jesus answered and said unto him, What I do thou knowest not now; but thou shalt know hereafter. 8: Peter saith unto him, Thou shalt never wash my feet. Jesus answered him, If I wash thee not, thou hast no part with me. 9: Simon Peter saith unto him, Lord, not my feet only, but also my hands and my head. 10: Jesus saith to him, He that is washed needeth not save to wash his feet, but is clean every whit: and ye are clean, but not all. 11: For he knew

who should betray him; therefore said he, Ye are not all clean. 12: So after he had washed their feet, and had taken his garments, and was set down again, he said unto them, Know ye what I have done to you? 13: Ye call me Master and Lord: and ye say well; for so I am. 14: If I then, your Lord and Master, have washed your feet; ye also ought to wash one another's feet. 15: For I have given you an example that ye should do as I have done to you.

(Notice that Jesus said if He doesn't wash us we have no part with Him. So this article is for and about all those whom Jesus has washed. This is the group we should fellowship with. We are not required to fellowship with someone just because they say they are Christians. There is no benefit in fellowshiping with unwashed people in fact it could be a foolish act.

Notice what Jesus said in verses 15 and 16. Those who are washed and have a part with Him ought to wash one another's feet. How? Was He just talking about our physical feet? No. How could He have been when He said Peter was washed and only needed his feet washed. And physical washing does not make you a part of Him.

He was really talking about those in fellowship washing each other's spiritual feet. Getting around out there in the world gets our feet dirty and we are to look out for one another and use the water of the Word to wash the traveler's feet.

I found this important because it goes along with sharing psalms, hymns, and spiritual songs with one another, praying for one another, and urging one another on to love and good works.)

Col: 3:16: Let the word of Christ dwell in you richly in all wisdom; teaching and admonishing one another in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, singing with grace in your hearts to the Lord.

Heb: 10:25: Not forsaking the assembling of ourselves together, as the manner of some is; but exhorting one another: and so much the more, as ye see the day approaching.

My point is that we are to do more than pray for one another. We are to speak the truth to one another in love as needed.

The Spotless Bride of Christ

Eph: 5:1-5: Be ye therefore followers of God, as dear children; 2: And walk in love, as Christ also hath loved us, and hath given himself for us an offering and a sacrifice to God for a sweetsmelling savour. 3: But fornication, and all uncleanness, or covetousness, let it not be once named among you, as becometh saints; 4: Neither filthiness, nor foolish talking, nor jesting, which are not convenient: but rather giving of thanks. 5: For this ye know, that no whoremonger, nor unclean person, nor covetous man, who is an idolater, hath any inheritance in the kingdom of Christ and of God.

6-10: Let no man deceive you with vain words: for because of these things cometh the wrath of God upon the children of disobedience. 7: Be not ye therefore partakers with them. 8: For ye were sometimes darkness, but now are ye light in the Lord: walk as children of light: 9: (For the fruit of the Spirit is in all goodness and righteousness and truth;) 10: Proving what is acceptable unto the Lord.

11-16: And have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness, but rather reprove them. 12: For it is a shame even to speak of those things which are done of them in secret. 13: But all things that are reprov'd are made manifest by the light: for whatsoever doth make manifest is light. 14: Wherefore he saith, Awake thou that sleepest, and arise from the dead, and Christ shall give thee light. 15: See then that ye walk circumspectly, not as fools, but as wise, 16: Redeeming the time, because the days are evil.

17-21: Wherefore be ye not unwise, but understanding what the will of the Lord is. 18: And be not drunk with wine, wherein is excess; but be filled with the Spirit; 19: Speaking to yourselves in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, singing and making melody in your heart to the Lord; 20: Giving thanks always for all things unto God and the Father in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ; 21: Submitting yourselves one to another in the fear of God.

22-24: Wives, submit yourselves unto your own husbands, as unto the Lord. 23: For the husband is the head of the wife, even as Christ is the head of the church: and he is the saviour of the body. 24: Therefore as the church is subject unto Christ, so let the wives be to their own husbands in every thing.

25-33: Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the church, and gave himself for it; 26: That he might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the word, 27: That he might present it to himself a glorious church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish. 28: So ought men to love their wives as their own bodies. He that loveth his wife loveth himself. 29: For no man ever yet hated his own flesh; but nourisheth and cherisheth it, even as the Lord the church: 30: For we are members of his body, of his flesh, and of his bones. 31: For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother,

and shall be joined unto his wife, and they two shall be one flesh. 32: This is a great mystery: but I speak concerning Christ and the church. 33: Nevertheless let every one of you in particular so love his wife even as himself; and the wife see that she reverence her husband.

(I included the whole chapter because it pretty much sums up the spotless bride, but it is verse 27 that I am writing this article about: That he might present it to himself a glorious church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish. I will give you a few other passages to establish the kind of bride Christ will marry and then I'll show you the meticulous preparation involved in getting ready for the groom.)

2Cor: 11:2: For I am jealous over you with godly jealousy: for I have espoused you to one husband, that I may present you as a chaste virgin to Christ.

Jn: 13:8: Peter saith unto him, Thou shalt never wash my feet. Jesus answered him, If I wash thee not, thou hast no part with me.

Jn: 17:19: And for their sakes I sanctify myself, that they also might be sanctified through the truth. (Sanctified means set apart – you are set apart from the world and betrothed unto Christ.)

1Tim: 6:14: That thou keep this commandment without spot, unrebukeable, until the appearing of our Lord Jesus Christ:

2Pt: 3:14: Wherefore, beloved, seeing that ye look for such things, be diligent that ye may be found of him in peace, without spot, and blameless.

This is how the bride is made ready for the king:

Esther: 2:12: Now when every maid's turn was come to go in to king Ahasuerus, after that she had been twelve months, according to the manner of the women, (for so were the days of their purifications accomplished, to wit, six months with oil of myrrh, and six months with sweet odours, and with other things for the purifying of the women;

(The first thing the bride of the king goes through to be sanctified for him is six months of intensive and expensive conditioning. Then she goes through another six months of perfume treatments and other purifying treatments.

We can compare this intensive conditioning to what the Holy spirit and the written word of God do for Christ's bride. Then the true bride of Christ goes through a period of intensive training that she might offer up to God a sweet smelling fragrance. That would be her testimony or lifestyle and her prayers.)

13-14: Then thus came every maiden unto the king; whatsoever she desired was given her to go with her out of the house of the women unto the king's house. 14: In the evening she went, and on the morrow she returned into the second house of the women, to the custody of Shaashgaz, the king's chamberlain, which kept the concubines: she came in unto the king no more, except the king delighted in her, and that she were called by name.

(After all that, you are ready to please the king. Have you gone through God's beauty treatments? Is your spirit beautiful?)

15-17: Now when the turn of Esther, the daughter of Abihail the uncle of Mordecai, who had taken her for his daughter, was come to go in unto the king, she required nothing but what Hegai the king's chamberlain, the keeper of the women, appointed. And Esther obtained favour in the sight of all them that looked upon her. 16: So Esther was taken unto king Ahasuerus into his house royal in the tenth month, which is the month Tebeth, in the seventh year of his reign. 17: And the king loved Esther above all the women, and she obtained grace and favour in his sight more than all the virgins; so that he set the royal crown upon her head, and made her queen instead of Vashti.

(Esther was examined and found completely ready to be presented to the king. The king loved her. In Prov: 4:6, 8:17, Jn: 10:17, and 14:21, we see that Wisdom and Jesus said they would love those that pleased them – those who listen to them – so to say the king loved the bride relating to Christ and the church it means He is able to bestow His love upon her.)

18: Then the king made a great feast unto all his princes and his servants, even Esther's feast; and he made a release to the provinces, and gave gifts, according to the state of the king.

(It is God's desire and plan for the redeemed to gather together and go through the beauty treatments and get ready to be Christ's bride. The spotless bride will enjoy the wedding supper with her groom while the world is experiencing the wrath.

Have oil in your lamps and keep them burning. The Holy Spirit is the oil. He is your teacher and He is the one who leads you in daily life decisions. He is the one who anoints you to witness and minister to others. He is the

one who empowers you to walk the walk and talk the talk.)

Mt: 25:1-13: Then shall the kingdom of heaven be likened unto ten virgins, which took their lamps, and went forth to meet the bridegroom. 2: And five of them were wise, and five were foolish. 3: They that were foolish took their lamps, and took no oil with them: 4: But the wise took oil in their vessels with their lamps. 5: While the bridegroom tarried, they all slumbered and slept. 6: And at midnight there was a cry made, Behold, the bridegroom cometh; go ye out to meet him. 7: Then all those virgins arose, and trimmed their lamps. 8: And the foolish said unto the wise, Give us of your oil; for our lamps are gone out. 9: But the wise answered, saying, Not so; lest there be not enough for us and you: but go ye rather to them that sell, and buy for yourselves. 10: And while they went to buy, the bridegroom came; and they that were ready went in with him to the marriage: and the door was shut. 11: Afterward came also the other virgins, saying, Lord, Lord, open to us. 12: But he answered and said, Verily I say unto you, I know you not. 13: Watch therefore, for ye know neither the day nor the hour wherein the Son of man cometh.

A Message for the Church

Deut: 32:1-4: Give ear, O ye heavens, and I will speak; and hear, O earth, the words of my mouth. 2: My doctrine shall drop as the rain, my speech shall distil as the dew, as the small rain upon the tender herb, and as the showers upon the grass: 3: Because I will publish the name of the LORD: ascribe ye greatness unto our God. 4: He is the Rock, his work is perfect: for all his ways are judgment: a God of truth and without iniquity, just and right is he.

(We start with what God had Moses proclaim: that God is the church's Rock. The church, in order to become the church, was supposed to repent of her ways and turn to God's ways, because His ways are perfect. All of God's ways are true judgment. In other words, He and He alone, knows how to deal with people and situations in order to bring out righteous judgments – righteous results. The doctrines in the Bible that some make light of, work as rain and dew, causing the tender plants to grow – causing the Word planted in a Christian heart to grow and causing the Christian to grow more like Jesus. For some, these days, it may be news, but the Christian's goal is to grow to be like Jesus.)

5-8: They have corrupted themselves, their spot is not the spot of his children: they are a perverse and crooked

generation. 6: Do ye thus requite the LORD, O foolish people and unwise? is not he thy father that hath bought thee? hath he not made thee, and established thee? 7: Remember the days of old, consider the years of many generations: ask thy father, and he will shew thee; thy elders, and they will tell thee. 8: When the most High divided to the nations their inheritance, when he separated the sons of Adam, he set the bounds of the people according to the number of the children of Israel.

(This admonishment is to be applied to the church because she fits the description of waywardness that Moses ascribes to Jacob. The church doesn't look like His children anymore. Is not God the one who begat you, both physically and spiritually? Remember the days of old. For the church this means, remember the New Testament teachings. It is Jesus who separates the sons of Adam from the sons of God – when you choose to follow Jesus, you give up following Adam. God set boundaries, they are established in the Holy Bible.)

9-14: For the LORD's portion is his people; Jacob is the lot of his inheritance. 10: He found him in a desert land, and in the waste howling wilderness; he led him about, he instructed him, he kept him as the apple of his eye. 11: As an eagle stirreth up her nest, fluttereth over her young, spreadeth abroad her wings, taketh them, beareth them on her wings: 12: So the LORD alone did lead him, and there was no strange god with him. 13: He made him ride on the high places of the earth, that he might eat the increase of the fields; and he made him to suck honey out of the rock, and oil out of the flinty rock; 14: Butter of kine, and milk of sheep, with fat of lambs, and rams of the breed of Bashan, and goats, with the fat of kidneys of wheat; and thou didst drink the pure blood of the grape.

(The church needs to apply this spiritually. The church is the Lord's portion. We are not our own, we've been bought with a price. God is the one who brought us out of our spiritual desert. He is the one who carried us upon His wings while He was teaching us how to fly. He made the church ride on the high places and fed them with the finest of wheat, etc. (Ps 81) The high places are describes in the book of Acts. It's a church endowed with power from on high.)

15-18: But Jeshurun waxed fat, and kicked: thou art waxen fat, thou art grown thick, thou art covered with fatness; then he forsook God which made him, and lightly esteemed the Rock of his salvation. 16: They provoked him to jealousy with strange gods, with abominations provoked they him to anger. 17: They sacrificed unto devils, not to God; to gods whom they knew not, to new gods that came newly up, whom your fathers feared not. 18: Of the Rock that begat thee thou art unmindful, and hast forgotten God that formed thee.

(The church waxed fat and got lazy and distracted. She began to go after other gods such as, money, things, and pleasure. Unintentionally, she forsook God's ways and has lightly esteemed her Rock. God is provoked to jealousy. Now with God that is not a weakness. It means that He is grieved because He knows we will get hurt and we will hurt others when we stray from Him – He is the rock.)

19-21: And when the LORD saw it, he abhorred them, because of the provoking of his sons, and of his daughters. 20: And he said, I will hide my face from them, I will see what their end shall be: for they are a very froward generation, children in whom is no faith. 21: They have moved me to jealousy with that which is not God; they have provoked me to anger with their vanities: and I will move them to jealousy with those which are not a people; I will provoke them to anger with a foolish nation.

(God says when His people come into such a condition, He cannot correct them – they are too far gone. They are involved in their own interpretation of Christianity – they are cut off from His help. They become prey to the enemy – in this case, the world's system.)

22-26: For a fire is kindled in mine anger, and shall burn unto the lowest hell, and shall consume the earth with her increase, and set on fire the foundations of the mountains. 23: I will heap mischiefs upon them; I will spend mine arrows upon them. 24: They shall be burnt with hunger, and devoured with burning heat, and with bitter destruction: I will also send the teeth of beasts upon them, with the poison of serpents of the dust. 25: The sword without, and terror within, shall destroy both the young man and the virgin, the suckling also with the man of gray hairs. 26: I said, I would scatter them into corners, I would make the remembrance of them to cease from among men:

(The passage above describes the inevitable result of straying too far from God. In the case of today's church, it is the Babylonians who will destroy a wayward Christian's life. The world is into Babylonian thinking and that is what she is spewing out. All who do not love the Truth will fall prey to her beguiling ways. (2Thess: 3-17) Those who listen to the whore will go through some of the above catastrophes – mostly, they should be applied spiritually. The beasts devour. The fire is false theology. The enemy's sword inflicts and severs, etc.)

27-31: Were it not that I feared the wrath of the enemy, lest their adversaries should behave themselves strangely, and lest they should say, Our hand is high, and the LORD hath not done all this. 28: For they are a nation void of counsel, neither is there any understanding in them. 29: O that they were wise, that they understood this, that they would consider their latter end! 30: How should one chase a thousand, and two put ten thousand to flight, except their Rock had sold them, and the LORD had shut them up? 31: For their rock is not as our Rock, even our enemies themselves being judges.

(God says that He is going to show His hand lest the enemy convince the world that he is more powerful than God. For the sake of the ignorant, God will manifest His glory. The early church was empowered so that one could chase a thousand, but today because of a void of proper counsel and a lack of understanding, most of the time she is the one running and hiding. Consider the latter end – if God is your Rock and you are not safely cleaving to it, you will be swept downstream in the mighty torrent.

The next set of instructions will be for those who take this message seriously and want to get back to God and move on with God – into the Promise Land. That will be the land where God’s promises are greatly manifested and the church will be glorious – she will have the answers for those who come to her.)

Deut: 31:6-8: Be strong and of a good courage, fear not, nor be afraid of them: for the LORD thy God, he it is that doth go with thee; he will not fail thee, nor forsake thee. 7: And Moses called unto Joshua, and said unto him in the sight of all Israel, Be strong and of a good courage: for thou must go with this people unto the land which the LORD hath sworn unto their fathers to give them; and thou shalt cause them to inherit it. 8: And the LORD, he it is that doth go before thee; he will be with thee, he will not fail thee, neither forsake thee: fear not, neither be dismayed.

9-13: And Moses wrote this law, and delivered it unto the priests the sons of Levi, which bare the Ark of the Covenant of the LORD, and unto all the elders of Israel. 10: And Moses commanded them, saying, At the end of every seven years, in the solemnity of the year of release, in the feast of tabernacles, 11: When all Israel is come to appear before the LORD thy God in the place which he shall choose, thou shalt read this law before all Israel in their hearing. 12: Gather the people together, men, and women, and children, and thy stranger that is within thy gates, that they may hear, and that they may learn, and fear the LORD your God, and observe to do all the words of this law: 13: And that their children, which have not known any thing, may hear, and learn to fear the LORD your God, as long as ye live in the land whither ye go over Jordan to possess it.

(The church must get back to basics. She must apply all of God’s teaching. She must live by every Word of God. So the way to be in a safe place and the way to be part of God’s glorious church is to assemble together, repent of your idolatries, feed on the Word, and cry out in earnest for God’s visitation.)

14-16: And the LORD said unto Moses, Behold, thy days approach that thou must die: call Joshua, and present yourselves in the tabernacle of the congregation, that I may give him a charge. And Moses and Joshua went, and presented themselves in the tabernacle of the congregation. 15: And the LORD appeared in the tabernacle in a pillar of a cloud: and the pillar of the cloud stood over the door of the tabernacle. 16: And the LORD said unto Moses, Behold, thou shalt sleep with thy fathers; and this people will rise up, and go a whoring after the gods of the strangers of the land, whither they go to be among them, and will forsake me, and break my covenant which I have made with them.

(Jesus ascended into heaven and He gave . . . :)

Eph: 4:11-24: He gave some to be apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers; 12: For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ: 13: Till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, unto

the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ: 14: That we henceforth be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men, and cunning craftiness, whereby they lie in wait to deceive; 15: But speaking the truth in love, may grow up into him in all things, which is the head, even Christ: 16: From whom the whole body fitly joined together and compacted by that which every joint supplieth, according to the effectual working in the measure of every part, maketh increase of the body unto the edifying of itself in love. 17: This I say therefore, and testify in the Lord, that ye henceforth walk not as other Gentiles walk, in the vanity of their mind, 18: Having the understanding darkened, being alienated from the life of God through the ignorance that is in them, because of the blindness of their heart: 19: Who being past feeling have given themselves over unto lasciviousness, to work all uncleanness with greediness. 20: But ye have not so learned Christ; 21: If so be that ye have heard him, and have been taught by him, as the truth is in Jesus: 22: That ye put off concerning the former conversation the old man, which is corrupt according to the deceitful lusts; 23: And be renewed in the spirit of your mind; 24: And that ye put on the new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness.

If They Had Stood in My Council

Jer: 23:16-17: Thus saith the LORD of hosts, Hearken not unto the words of the prophets that prophesy unto you: they make you vain: they speak a vision of their own heart, and not out of the mouth of the LORD. 17: They say still unto them that despise me, The LORD hath said, Ye shall have peace; and they say unto every one that walketh after the imagination of his own heart, No evil shall come upon you.

(This article is not meant to criticize or condemn, but I need to address the issue that God had Jeremiah address in Jeremiah 23 and 24. I believe the church needs to hear and heed this message.

How has the church told those that despise God that they shall have peace and that no evil that is harm will befall them? Well, first let us establish who this group is that despises God. They are church-goers who walk after the imaginations of their own heart. This is done by handling situations the way they feel like doing or the way they think they should handle them instead of heeding the written word on how to handle things.

Another way this group of people tell God they despise Him is to go on living as they did before or as the world does when the Bible clearly tells Christians to come out of the world and it also tell them how they should be

different from the world.

Another way they walk after their own stubborn hearts or imaginations is to deliberately be ignorant of biblical instructions such as protecting their hearts and/or putting on the full armor of God so that they can withstand the wiles of the devil. Do they have their loins girt about with the Truth – what the Bible teaches? Do they use the sword of the Spirit against the enemy of their souls when he attacks their thought life? Do they use the shield of faith to combat temptation to believe what they see instead of what God has promised? I think these questions should be enough for you to get the point. This group, that God says despise Him, are the majority of church-goers. Let's go on and see why the leaders are to blame.)

18-22: For who hath stood in the counsel of the LORD, and hath perceived and heard his word? who hath marked his word, and heard it? 19: Behold, a whirlwind of the LORD is gone forth in fury, even a grievous whirlwind: it shall fall grievously upon the head of the wicked. 20: The anger of the LORD shall not return, until he have executed, and till he have performed the thoughts of his heart: in the latter days ye shall consider it perfectly. 21: I have not sent these prophets, yet they ran: I have not spoken to them, yet they prophesied. 22: But if they had stood in my counsel, and had caused my people to hear my words, then they should have turned them from their evil way, and from the evil of their doings.

(God says here that any preacher or teacher whose teaching makes the general congregation feel safe and secure when they are not following His instructions is preaching or teaching falsely. He goes on to say that if they had stood in His council, they would have taught and preached His message and the people would repent and do right.

What is the difference between the false teaching and the true teaching? The things that I am pointing out in this article are God's council. Thus, God's preachers are teaching and admonishing and cautioning people to follow the instruction in the Bible and are warning them of the consequences of not being a doer of the word. They elaborate on how to put on the full armor of God. They are not afraid of man. They do not worry about losing parishioners they are too busy worrying about losing souls to the enemy due to their neglect.)

23-28: Am I a God at hand, saith the LORD, and not a God afar off? 24: Can any hide himself in secret places that I shall not see him? saith the LORD. Do not I fill heaven and earth? saith the LORD. 25: I have heard what the prophets said, that prophesy lies in my name, saying, I have dreamed, I have dreamed. 26: How long shall this be in the heart of the prophets that prophesy lies? yea, they are prophets of the deceit of their own heart; 27: Which think to cause my people to forget my name by their dreams which they tell every man to his neighbour, as their fathers have forgotten my name for Baal. 28: The prophet that hath a dream, let him tell a dream; and he that hath my word, let him speak my word faithfully. What is the chaff to the wheat? saith the LORD.

(This segment talks about the prophet or teacher or preacher sharing his own take on things – his own perception of how the church is doing and what God is putting up with because of the blood, etc. I pray that these leaders will soon learn that God has already said in His word what he wants and how He feels about things. The passage I am elaborating on here is one of many passages that God intended to use to instruct the leaders and the people.)

29-30: Is not my word like as a fire? saith the LORD; and like a hammer that breaketh the rock in pieces? 30: Therefore, behold, I am against the prophets, saith the LORD, that steal my words every one from his neighbour.

(Yes, God's words are like a fire, like a hammer, like a two-edged sword. God's words are full of power to do whatever the passage is meant to do, whether that be to comfort, to encourage, to assure, or to rebuke. God's words will do the job. Man's words produce very little good fruit. God says here that He is against the leaders who speak out of their own understanding rather than to declare God's word.)

Earlier in Jer: 23, God describes what the true shepherds do.

Jer: 23:1-4: Woe be unto the pastors that destroy and scatter the sheep of my pasture! saith the LORD.2: Therefore thus saith the LORD God of Israel against the pastors that feed my people; Ye have scattered my flock, and driven them away, and have not visited them: behold, I will visit upon you the evil of your doings, saith the LORD.3: And I will gather the remnant of my flock out of all countries whither I have driven them, and will bring them again to their folds; and they shall be fruitful and increase.4: And I will set up shepherds over them which shall feed them: and they shall fear no more, nor be dismayed, neither shall they be lacking, saith the LORD.

(What do true shepherds do? They feed and nurture his people. They feed them rich green grass, they root out the thistles and poisonous plants, they keep the wild animals away from the flock, they minister the oil of the Holy Spirit to the sheep's wounds, they pull them back from the edge of the cliff or pit, they guard the sheep. This is all done with God's equipment, not theirs.)

Jer: 24:1-7: The LORD shewed me, and, behold, two baskets of figs were set before the temple of the LORD, after that Nebuchadrezzar king of Babylon had carried away captive Jeconiah the son of Jehoiakim king of Judah, and the princes of Judah, with the carpenters and smiths, from Jerusalem, and had brought them to Babylon. 2: One basket had very good figs, even like the figs that are first ripe: and the other basket had very naughty figs, which could not be eaten, they were so bad. 3: Then said the LORD unto me, What seest thou, Jeremiah? And I said, Figs; the good figs, very good; and the evil, very evil, that cannot be eaten, they are so evil. 4: Again the word of the LORD came unto me, saying, 5: Thus saith the LORD, the God of Israel; Like these good figs, so will I acknowledge them that are carried away captive of Judah, whom I have sent out of this place into the land of the Chaldeans for their good. 6: For I will set mine eyes upon them for good, and I will

bring them again to this land: and I will build them, and not pull them down; and I will plant them, and not pluck them up. 7: And I will give them an heart to know me, that I am the LORD: and they shall be my people, and I will be their God: for they shall return unto me with their whole heart.

(This is part of what God was doing when He gave us Jesus. The call to salvation includes a call to repent and be reconciled to God. When one responds to that call he or she is given a heart to please God. The new believers must be taught to follow their new heart rather than their old man or carnal nature. THIS IS A GIFT FROM GOD that He says right here will help the people walk in righteousness.)

8-10: And as the evil figs, which cannot be eaten, they are so evil; surely thus saith the LORD, So will I give Zedekiah the king of Judah, and his princes, and the residue of Jerusalem, that remain in this land, and them that dwell in the land of Egypt: 9: And I will deliver them to be removed into all the kingdoms of the earth for their hurt, to be a reproach and a proverb, a taunt and a curse, in all places whither I shall drive them. 10: And I will send the sword, the famine, and the pestilence, among them, till they be consumed from off the land that I gave unto them and to their fathers.

(These verses 8-10 tell us what happens to people who have a form of godliness but deny the power thereof--that group that despises God by continuing to do their own thing after they have promised to be His children.)

Strangers in the Sanctuary

Ezek: 44:1-3: Then he brought me back the way of the gate of the outward sanctuary which looketh toward the east; and it was shut. 2: Then said the LORD unto me; This gate shall be shut, it shall not be opened, and no man shall enter in by it; because the LORD, the God of Israel, hath entered in by it, therefore it shall be shut. 3: It is for the prince; the prince, he shall sit in it to eat bread before the LORD; he shall enter by the way of the porch of that gate, and shall go out by the way of the same.

4-6: Then brought he me the way of the north gate before the house: and I looked, and, behold, the glory of the LORD filled the house of the LORD: and I fell upon my face. 5: And the LORD said unto me, Son of man, mark well, and behold with thine eyes, and hear with thine ears all that I say unto thee concerning all the ordinances of

the house of the LORD, and all the laws thereof; and mark well the entering in of the house, with every going forth of the sanctuary. 6: And thou shalt say to the rebellious, even to the house of Israel, Thus saith the Lord GOD; O ye house of Israel, let it suffice you of all your abominations,

7-8: In that ye have brought into my sanctuary strangers, uncircumcised in heart, and uncircumcised in flesh, to be in my sanctuary, to pollute it, even my house, when ye offer my bread, the fat and the blood, and they have broken my covenant because of all your abominations. 8: And ye have not kept the charge of mine holy things: but ye have set keepers of my charge in my sanctuary for yourselves.

(I think this scripture can be applied to the church today, because all scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness: (2 Tim: 3:16) How has the church brought the uncircumcised into the sanctuary? Jesus established the church as a place for believers to meet and worship their God together. It was to be a place where they gathered together in His Name.

Then in Acts: 5:12-14 we read: And by the hands of the apostles were many signs and wonders wrought among the people; (and they were all with one accord in Solomon's porch. 13: And of the rest durst no man join himself to them: but the people magnified them. 14: And believers were the more added to the Lord, multitudes both of men and women.)

And in Eph: 4:1-16: I therefore, the prisoner of the Lord, beseech you that ye walk worthy of the vocation wherewith ye are called, 2: With all lowliness and meekness, with longsuffering, forbearing one another in love; 3: Endeavouring to keep the unity of the Spirit in the bond of peace. 4: There is one body, and one Spirit, even as ye are called in one hope of your calling; 5: One Lord, one faith, one baptism, 6: One God and Father of all, who is above all, and through all, and in you all. 7: But unto every one of us is given grace according to the measure of the gift of Christ. 8: Wherefore he saith, When he ascended up on high, he led captivity captive, and gave gifts unto men. 9: (Now that he ascended, what is it but that he also descended first into the lower parts of the earth? 10: He that descended is the same also that ascended up far above all heavens, that he might fill all things.) 11: And he gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers; 12: For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ: 13: Till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ: 14: That we henceforth be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men, and cunning craftiness, whereby they lie in wait to deceive; 15: But speaking the truth in love, may grow up into him in all things, which is the head, even Christ: 16: From whom the whole body fitly joined together and compacted by that which every joint supplieth, according to the effectual working in the measure of every part, maketh increase of the body unto the edifying of itself in love.

Eph: 5:19: Speaking to yourselves in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, singing and making melody in your

heart to the Lord; (I picture a place where believers can share and grow without fear of offending the heathen.)

Col: 3:16: Let the word of Christ dwell in you richly in all wisdom; teaching and admonishing one another in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, singing with grace in your hearts to the Lord.

Heb: 10:24-26: And let us consider one another to provoke unto love and to good works: 25: Not forsaking the assembling of ourselves together, as the manner of some is; but exhorting one another: and so much the more, as ye see the day approaching. 26: For if we sin wilfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remaineth no more sacrifice for sins,

(These verses are not conclusive, but I do believe that God provided a sanctuary for believers where they can come together in unity of faith and purpose to build one another up in the faith.

A sanctuary is: 1. a holy place, as a building set aside for worship of the divinity or of one or more deities; 2. a place of refuge or protection; asylum: orig., fugitives from justice were immune from arrest in churches or other sacred places *b*) immunity from punishment or the law, as by taking refuge in a church, etc.

Notice it started out as a holy place. To me that means a place where everyone is conscientious about doing things God's way. The church is the pillar of truth – a place where Christians are strengthened and encouraged by being among those who believe as they do.

Pertaining to sanctuary – it is a place where believers can rest from dealing with the pressures of the world and enjoy the kingdom of God together. There is no place in church for ungodly behavior, speech, or dress. I'm not talking about rules here; I'm talking about one body and one Spirit.

Today church has a dual purpose – to do the above and to be used as an evangelistic center. To have the church be an evangelistic center is to take away the sanctuary part. There may be a little strength in knowing that others in the building believe as you do, but because of the way things are handled today, the true believer must be very careful what he or she says for fear of offending the disobedient and unbelieving. The result of this dual purpose is a mixed multitude which causes confusion of doctrine.

God doesn't want heathens in the sanctuary, for the above reason. He does not want pollution. Not only are Christians now taught to wear blinders as far as offenses go, they are also taught not to discern between the righteous and the wicked. The teachers thought they were teaching the Word, but the Word was talking about true believers overlooking one another's faults. God wants us to discern between the righteous and the wicked.)

Mal: 3:13-18: Your words have been stout against me, saith the LORD. Yet ye say, What have we spoken so much against thee? 14: Ye have said, It is vain to serve God: and what profit is it that we have kept his ordinance, and that we have walked mournfully before the LORD of hosts? 15: And now we call the proud happy; yea, they that work wickedness are set up; yea, they that tempt God are even delivered. 16: Then they that feared the LORD spake often one to another: and the LORD hearkened, and heard it, and a book of remembrance was written before him for them that feared the LORD, and that thought upon his name. 17: And they shall be mine, saith the LORD of hosts, in that day when I make up my jewels; and I will spare them, as a man spareth his own son that serveth him. 18: Then shall ye return, and discern between the righteous and the wicked, between him that serveth God and him that serveth him not.

God has instruction for how to handle those who come in among us:

Num: 15:14-16 it says: And if a stranger sojourn with you, or whosoever be among you in your generations, and will offer an offering made by fire, of a sweet savour unto the LORD; as ye do, so he shall do. 15: One ordinance shall be both for you of the congregation, and also for the stranger that sojourneth with you, an ordinance for ever in your generations: as ye are, so shall the stranger be before the LORD. 16: One law and one manner shall be for you, and for the stranger that sojourneth with you.

Ezek: 44:9-14: Thus saith the Lord GOD; No stranger, uncircumcised in heart, nor uncircumcised in flesh, shall enter into my sanctuary, of any stranger that is among the children of Israel. 10: And the Levites that are gone away far from me, when Israel went astray, which went astray away from me after their idols; they shall even bear their iniquity. 11: Yet they shall be ministers in my sanctuary, having charge at the gates of the house, and ministering to the house: they shall slay the burnt offering and the sacrifice for the people, and they shall stand before them to minister unto them. 12: Because they ministered unto them before their idols, and caused the house of Israel to fall into iniquity; therefore have I lifted up mine hand against them, saith the Lord GOD, and they shall bear their iniquity. 13: And they shall not come near unto me, to do the office of a priest unto me, nor to come near to any of my holy things, in the most holy place: but they shall bear their shame, and their abominations which they have committed. 14: But I will make them keepers of the charge of the house, for all the service thereof, and for all that shall be done therein.

(God wants there to be a clear distinction between the circumcised in heart and the uncircumcised in heart. God only wants those who have entered into the crucifixion and resurrection to take communion and or to call themselves Christians. If this were so, then the leaders could insist upon certain things such as everyone dressing modestly, and everyone living a sanctified life, and everyone doing all for the glory of God, etc. Meddling comes in when the leaders dictate precisely how these things must be done.)

Notice how God feels toward those who are zealous for His precepts:

15-22: But the priests the Levites, the sons of Zadok, that kept the charge of my sanctuary when the children of Israel went astray from me, they shall come near to me to minister unto me, and they shall stand before me to offer unto me the fat and the blood, saith the Lord GOD: 16: They shall enter into my sanctuary, and they shall come near to my table, to minister unto me, and they shall keep my charge. 17: And it shall come to pass, that when they enter in at the gates of the inner court, they shall be clothed with linen garments; and no wool shall come upon them, whiles they minister in the gates of the inner court, and within. 18: They shall have linen bonnets upon their heads, and shall have linen breeches upon their loins; they shall not gird themselves with any thing that causeth sweat. 19: And when they go forth into the utter court, even into the utter court to the people, they shall put off their garments wherein they ministered, and lay them in the holy chambers, and they shall put on other garments; and they shall not sanctify the people with their garments. 20: Neither shall they shave their heads, nor suffer their locks to grow long; they shall only poll their heads. 21: Neither shall any priest drink wine, when they enter into the inner court. 22: Neither shall they take for their wives a widow, nor her that is put away: but they shall take maidens of the seed of the house of Israel, or a widow that had a priest before.

(God condones those who are zealous for the truth. He has called some in the church to be prophets. They are to show where the church is going to the left or the right off of the written Word of God. Read the last two verses.)

23-24: And they shall teach my people the difference between the holy and profane, and cause them to discern between the unclean and the clean. 24: And in controversy they shall stand in judgment; and they shall judge it according to my judgments: and they shall keep my laws and my statutes in all mine assemblies; and they shall hallow my sabbaths.

Call the Solemn Assembly

Joel: 1:1-4: The word of the LORD that came to Joel the son of Pethuel. 2: Hear this, ye old men, and give ear, all ye inhabitants of the land. Hath this been in your days, or even in the days of your fathers? 3: Tell ye your children of it, and let your children tell their children, and their children another generation. 4: That which the palmerworm hath left hath the locust eaten; and that which the locust hath left hath the cankerworm eaten; and that which the cankerworm hath left hath the caterpillar eaten.

(I liken this to the post-modern church of today. The churches could take up this lament: Isa: 26:18: We have been with child, we have been in pain, we have as it were brought forth wind; we have not wrought any deliverance in the earth; neither have the inhabitants of the world fallen.

I am not trying to ridicule or put down the church. My intent is to convince her that it is time to call the solemn assembly. In chapter two I will show just what needs done. I believe that the churches' crops have been destroyed as described above.

When God sent Jesus and called us to repentance he had in mind what is written in Jer: 24:7: And I will give them an heart to know me, that I am the LORD: and they shall be my people, and I will be their God: for they shall return unto me with their whole heart.

But instead it seems to me to be as in Jer: 51:51: We are confounded, because we have heard reproach: shame hath covered our faces: for strangers are come into the sanctuaries of the LORD's house.

Below is what God says must be done to get back on tract. A little dab will not do you. We need to do this God's way. We cannot make a few adjustments. We cannot try new ways. We must do this God's way.)

5-8: Awake, ye drunkards, and weep; and howl, all ye drinkers of wine, because of the new wine; for it is cut off from your mouth. 6: For a nation is come up upon my land, strong, and without number, whose teeth are the teeth of a lion, and he hath the cheek teeth of a great lion. 7: He hath laid my vine waste, and barked my fig tree: he hath made it clean bare, and cast it away; the branches thereof are made white. 8: Lament like a virgin girded with sackcloth for the husband of her youth.

(Why does he call us drunkards? It is because we have drunk fermented wine in abundance, but we have not feasted on God's new wine – Eph: 5:18: And be not drunk with wine, wherein is excess; but be filled with the Spirit;

A nation has attacked God's church. Who is it? Babylon. All the post-modern beliefs and teachings that take away from the written Word of God or from the truth that Christ has come in the flesh are Babylonian and anti-Christ. The world should not influence the church. In the church, the church should be living and acting like the church. Strangers to the gospel should not feel at home there. They may be made to feel like welcomed strangers, but they should not fit in until they receive Jesus – the Jesus in the Bible. The one who says: You cannot serve God and mammon. The one who says: Why do you call me Lord and do not the things that I say? The one who says: You must forsake all to be my disciple.)

9-11: The meat offering and the drink offering is cut off from the house of the LORD; the priests, the LORD's ministers, mourn. 10: The field is wasted, the land mourneth; for the corn is wasted: the new wine is dried up, the oil languisheth. 11: Be ye ashamed, O ye husbandmen; howl, O ye vinedressers, for the wheat and for the barley; because the harvest of the field is perished.

12-13: The vine is dried up, and the fig tree languisheth; the pomegranate tree, the palm tree also, and the apple tree, even all the trees of the field, are withered: because joy is withered away from the sons of men. 13: Gird yourselves, and lament, ye priests: howl, ye ministers of the altar: come, lie all night in sackcloth, ye ministers of my God: for the meat offering and the drink offering is withholden from the house of your God.

14-15: Sanctify ye a fast, call a solemn assembly, gather the elders and all the inhabitants of the land into the house of the LORD your God, and cry unto the LORD, 15: Alas for the day! for the day of the LORD is at hand, and as a destruction from the Almighty shall it come.

(That's what we are going to talk about in chapter two. The things described above and below sound to me like the baroness of the church. Some may look at the works of some churches and say: "See how much they do. At least they are trying." But there is more to this than getting people to come to church. They must be given the Spirit and the Word of the Lord. They must be brought into a condition of holiness – set apart for the Lord – and they must be taught how to live.)

16-20: Is not the meat cut off before our eyes, yea, joy and gladness from the house of our God? 17: The seed is rotten under their clods, the garners are laid desolate, the barns are broken down; for the corn is withered. 18: How do the beasts groan! the herds of cattle are perplexed, because they have no pasture; yea, the flocks of sheep are made desolate. 19: O LORD, to thee will I cry: for the fire hath devoured the pastures of the wilderness, and the flame hath burned all the trees of the field. 20: The beasts of the field cry also unto thee: for the rivers of waters are dried up, and the fire hath devoured the pastures of the wilderness.

Joel: 2:1-11: Blow ye the trumpet in Zion, and sound an alarm in my holy mountain: let all the inhabitants of the land tremble: for the day of the LORD cometh, for it is nigh at hand; 2: A day of darkness and of gloominess, a day of clouds and of thick darkness, as the morning spread upon the mountains: a great people and a strong; there hath not been ever the like, neither shall be any more after it, even to the years of many generations. 3: A fire devoureth before them; and behind them a flame burneth: the land is as the garden of Eden before them, and behind them a desolate wilderness; yea, and nothing shall escape them. 4: The appearance of them is as the appearance of horses; and as horsemen, so shall they run. 5: Like the noise of chariots on the tops of mountains shall they leap, like the noise of a flame of fire that devoureth the stubble, as a strong people set in battle array. 6: Before their face the people shall be much pained: all faces shall gather blackness. 7: They shall run like mighty men; they shall climb the wall like men of war; and they shall march every one on his ways, and they shall not break their ranks: 8: Neither shall one thrust another; they shall walk every one in his path: and when

they fall upon the sword, they shall not be wounded. 9: They shall run to and fro in the city; they shall run upon the wall, they shall climb up upon the houses; they shall enter in at the windows like a thief. 10: The earth shall quake before them; the heavens shall tremble: the sun and the moon shall be dark, and the stars shall withdraw their shining: 11: And the LORD shall utter his voice before his army: for his camp is very great: for he is strong that executeth his word: for the day of the LORD is great and very terrible; and who can abide it?

(Everyone thinks this mighty army is the church, but it is not. It says in verse eleven that it is God's army, but it is His army to execute His wrath. Look at verse 20. It is Babylon – New Age – Gnosticism – Post-modern thinking. It has crept into every venue of life on planet earth.)

12-14: Therefore also now, saith the LORD, turn ye even to me with all your heart, and with fasting, and with weeping, and with mourning: 13: And rend your heart, and not your garments, and turn unto the LORD your God: for he is gracious and merciful, slow to anger, and of great kindness, and repenteth him of the evil. 14: Who knoweth if he will return and repent, and leave a blessing behind him; even a meat offering and a drink offering unto the LORD your God?

15-17: Blow the trumpet in Zion, sanctify a fast, call a solemn assembly: 16: Gather the people, sanctify the congregation, assemble the elders, gather the children, and those that suck the breasts: let the bridegroom go forth of his chamber, and the bride out of her closet. 17: Let the priests, the ministers of the LORD, weep between the porch and the altar, and let them say, Spare thy people, O LORD, and give not thine heritage to reproach, that the heathen should rule over them: wherefore should they say among the people, Where is their God?

(What God wants us to do – what has to be done to gain the restoration we need is to call all those who love God – all those who care about the church – all those who want God to manifest Himself in a mighty way – to the house of prayer. They are to drop everything. Don't worry about meals. Don't worry about duties. Get to the house of God and fall on your face and cry out for God to restore all that has been taken away. Below, God tells us what He will do for us when we do this.)

18-20: Then will the LORD be jealous for his land, and pity his people. 19: Yea, the LORD will answer and say unto his people, Behold, I will send you corn, and wine, and oil, and ye shall be satisfied therewith: and I will no more make you a reproach among the heathen: 20: But I will remove far off from you the northern army, and will drive him into a land barren and desolate, with his face toward the east sea, and his hinder part toward the utmost sea, and his stink shall come up, and his ill savour shall come up, because he hath done great things.

21-27: Fear not, O land; be glad and rejoice: for the LORD will do great things. 22: Be not afraid, ye beasts of the field: for the pastures of the wilderness do spring, for the tree beareth her fruit, the fig tree and the vine do

yield their strength. 23: Be glad then, ye children of Zion, and rejoice in the LORD your God: for he hath given you the former rain moderately, and he will cause to come down for you the rain, the former rain, and the latter rain in the first month. 24: And the floors shall be full of wheat, and the fats shall overflow with wine and oil. 25: And I will restore to you the years that the locust hath eaten, the cankerworm, and the caterpillar, and the palmerworm, my great army which I sent among you. 26: And ye shall eat in plenty, and be satisfied, and praise the name of the LORD your God, that hath dealt wondrously with you: and my people shall never be ashamed. 27: And ye shall know that I am in the midst of Israel, and that I am the LORD your God, and none else: and my people shall never be ashamed.

(He will send His teachers and preachers and they will teach all – the full council of God. Afterwards He will pour out His Spirit upon all flesh.)

28-32: And it shall come to pass afterward, that I will pour out my spirit upon all flesh; and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, your old men shall dream dreams, your young men shall see visions: 29: And also upon the servants and upon the handmaids in those days will I pour out my spirit. 30: And I will shew wonders in the heavens and in the earth, blood, and fire, and pillars of smoke. 31: The sun shall be turned into darkness, and the moon into blood, before the great and the terrible day of the LORD come. 32: And it shall come to pass, that whosoever shall call on the name of the LORD shall be delivered: for in mount Zion and in Jerusalem shall be deliverance, as the LORD hath said, and in the remnant whom the LORD shall call.

(As the song says: These are the days of Elijah... This is the end of the age. The war is between Christ and the anti-Christ spirit in the world. God wants to pour out His Spirit. God wants people to call on His name and be saved. Let's do it! Call the solemn assembly.)

God's Plan of Salvation

Ezek: 13:1-16: And the word of the LORD came unto me, saying, 2: Son of man, prophesy against the prophets of Israel that prophesy, and say thou unto them that prophesy out of their own hearts, Hear ye the word of the LORD; 3: Thus saith the Lord GOD; Woe unto the foolish prophets, that follow their own spirit, and have seen nothing! 4: O Israel, thy prophets are like the foxes in the deserts. 5: Ye have not gone up into the gaps, neither made up the hedge for the house of Israel to stand in the battle in the day of the LORD. 6: They have seen vanity

and lying divination, saying, The LORD saith: and the LORD hath not sent them: and they have made others to hope that they would confirm the word. 7: Have ye not seen a vain vision, and have ye not spoken a lying divination, whereas ye say, The LORD saith it; albeit I have not spoken? 8: Therefore thus saith the Lord GOD; Because ye have spoken vanity, and seen lies, therefore, behold, I am against you, saith the Lord GOD. 9: And mine hand shall be upon the prophets that see vanity, and that divine lies: they shall not be in the assembly of my people, neither shall they be written in the writing of the house of Israel, neither shall they enter into the land of Israel; and ye shall know that I am the Lord GOD 10: Because, even because they have seduced my people, saying, Peace; and there was no peace; and one built up a wall, and, lo, others daubed it with untempered mortar: 11: Say unto them which daub it with untempered mortar, that it shall fall: there shall be an overflowing shower; and ye, O great hailstones, shall fall; and a stormy wind shall rend it. 12: Lo, when the wall is fallen, shall it not be said unto you, Where is the daubing wherewith ye have daubed it? 13: Therefore thus saith the Lord GOD; I will even rend it with a stormy wind in my fury; and there shall be an overflowing shower in mine anger, and great hailstones in my fury to consume it. 14: So will I break down the wall that ye have daubed with untempered mortar, and bring it down to the ground, so that the foundation thereof shall be discovered, and it shall fall, and ye shall be consumed in the midst thereof: and ye shall know that I am the LORD. 15: Thus will I accomplish *my wrath* upon the wall, and upon them that have daubed it with untempered mortar, and will say unto you, The wall is no more, neither they that daubed it; 16: To wit, the prophets of Israel which prophesy concerning Jerusalem, and which see visions of peace for her, and there is no peace, saith the Lord GOD.

17-23: Likewise, thou son of man, set thy face against the daughters of thy people, which prophesy out of their own heart; and prophesy thou against them, 18: And say, Thus saith the Lord GOD; Woe to the women that sew pillows to all armholes, and make kerchiefs upon the head of every stature to hunt souls! Will ye hunt the souls of my people, and will ye save the souls alive that come unto you? 19: And will ye pollute me among my people for handfuls of barley and for pieces of bread, to slay the souls that should not die, and to save the souls alive that should not live, by your lying to my people that hear your lies? 20: Wherefore thus saith the Lord GOD; Behold, I am against your pillows, wherewith ye there hunt the souls to make them fly, and I will tear them from your arms, and will let the souls go, even the souls that ye hunt to make them fly. 21: Your kerchiefs also will I tear, and deliver my people out of your hand, and they shall be no more in your hand to be hunted; and ye shall know that I am the LORD. 22: Because with lies ye have made the heart of the righteous sad, whom I have not made sad; and strengthened the hands of the wicked, that he should not return from his wicked way, by promising him life: 23: Therefore ye shall see no more vanity, nor divine divinations: for I will deliver my people out of your hand: and ye shall know that I am the LORD.

I believe this can be applied to these times. I believe that the gospel has been grossly mishandled. And the above scriptures apply – God would address much of the church today in this manner.

How have they mishandled the gospel?

Many believe and understand the gospel to be about Jesus shedding his blood so that sinners don't have to go to

hell because God is love and he had to make a way to heaven even though people sin.

You may say, “So, isn’t that just what he did?”

It looks right, but let me reveal the subtlety of the way it is put and understood. Jesus came and walked the walk and talked the talk and suffered and died on the cross and rose the third day to restore those who choose him to eternal life – to spiritual life. That’s the truth.

You may ask how that differs from modern thought. When you choose to repent of your ways (that’s the repentance we are suppose to do – not just repenting of actual sin, but repenting of handling things the way you want to instead of the way God said to) and receive Jesus as your Lord and Savior (that also is in the plan of redemption) you are born again of God’s Spirit. I say, again, because Adam and Eve were spiritually alive *i.e.* born of God’s Spirit before the fall. They were therefore the children of God. When you get born again, you are readopted back to God and are his child. Rom: 8:15, Eph: 1:5

You may ask what that has to do with my saying the gospel is misunderstood today. It has this to do with it: God was reconciling us to himself. He was restoring us to eternal life. Eternal life is for those who have and give life. Those who walk by the spirit and not by the flesh are walking in life.

The truth is that Jesus did what he did to save us from sin and death.

The truth is you are going to spend eternity with your father whether that be God or the devil. Jn: 8:44

The truth is that you must enter into spiritual life to be saved from sin and death. Rom: 8:1-14, Jas: 1:21-22, 1Jn: 5:11-12

The subtlety is that we are saved from sin and death, not that we are saved from hell, though if you receive salvation from sin and death, you will be saved from hell.

The subtlety is that God loves us and that is why he sent his Son, but he loves everyone and that is why he had to restore spiritual life. The wages of sin is death. Rom: 6:23 Love is eternal. Sin is selfish. Selfishness caused death. Gen: 3:21 records the first bloodshed. Matt: 27:4 Jesus sheds his innocent blood. All the bloodshed on the earth can be blamed on selfishness. Jesus came to restore righteousness. A righteous person will do what is right. A selfish person will do what they choose to do whether it is right or wrong.

The scriptures below prophesy of the Savior – savior from darkness, from sin, and from death.

Isa: 9:2-7: The people that walked in darkness have seen a great light: they that dwell in the land of the shadow of death, upon them hath the light shined. 3: Thou hast multiplied the nation, and not increased the joy: they joy before thee according to the joy in harvest, and as men rejoice when they divide the spoil. 4: For thou hast broken the yoke of his burden, and the staff of his shoulder, the rod of his oppressor, as in the day of Midian. 5: For every battle of the warrior is with confused noise, and garments rolled in blood; but this shall be with burning and fuel of fire. 6: For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given: and the government shall be upon his shoulder: and his name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, The mighty God, The ever-lasting Father, The Prince of Peace. 7: Of the increase of his government and peace there shall be no end, upon the throne of David, and upon his kingdom, to order it, and to establish it with judgment and with justice from henceforth even for ever. The zeal of the LORD of hosts will perform this.

Isa: 11:1-10: And there shall come forth a rod out of the stem of Jesse, and a Branch shall grow out of his roots: 2: And the spirit of the LORD shall rest upon him, the spirit of wisdom and understanding, the spirit of counsel and might, the spirit of knowledge and of the fear of the LORD; 3: And shall make him of quick understanding in the fear of the LORD: and he shall not judge after the sight of his eyes, neither reprove after the hearing of his ears: 4: But with righteousness shall he judge the poor, and reprove with equity for the meek of the earth: and he shall smite the earth with the rod of his mouth, and with the breath of his lips shall he slay the wicked. 5: And righteousness shall be the girdle of his loins, and faithfulness the girdle of his reins. 6: The wolf also shall dwell with the lamb, and the leopard shall lie down with the kid; and the calf and the young lion and the fatling together; and a little child shall lead them. 7: And the cow and the bear shall feed; their young ones shall lie down together: and the lion shall eat straw like the ox. 8: And the sucking child shall play on the hole of the asp, and the weaned child shall put his hand on the cockatrice' den. 9: They shall not hurt nor destroy in all my holy mountain: for the earth shall be full of the knowledge of the LORD, as the waters cover the sea. 10: And in that day there shall be a root of Jesse, which shall stand for an ensign of the people; to it shall the Gentiles seek: and his rest shall be glorious.

Isa: 29:8-24: It shall even be as when an hungry man dreameth, and, behold, he eateth; but he awaketh, and his soul is empty: or as when a thirsty man dreameth, and, behold, he drinketh; but he awaketh, and, behold, he is faint, and his soul hath appetite: so shall the multitude of all the nations be, that fight against mount Zion. 9: Stay yourselves, and wonder; cry ye out, and cry: they are drunken, but not with wine; they stagger, but not with strong drink. 10: For the LORD hath poured out upon you the spirit of deep sleep, and hath closed your eyes: the prophets and your rulers, the seers hath he covered. 11: And the vision of all is become unto you as the words of a book that is sealed, which men deliver to one that is learned, saying, Read this, I pray thee: and he saith, I cannot; for it is sealed: 12: And the book is delivered to him that is not learned, saying, Read this, I pray thee: and he saith, I am not learned. 13: Wherefore the Lord said, Forasmuch as this people draw near me with their mouth, and with their lips do honour me, but have removed their heart far from me, and their fear toward me is

taught by the precept of men: 14: Therefore, behold, I will proceed to do a marvellous work among this people, even a marvellous work and a wonder: for the wisdom of their wise men shall perish, and the understanding of their prudent men shall be hid. 15: Woe unto them that seek deep to hide their counsel from the LORD, and their works are in the dark, and they say, Who seeth us? and who knoweth us? 16: Surely your turning of things upside down shall be esteemed as the potter's clay: for shall the work say of him that made it, He made me not? or shall the thing framed say of him that framed it, He had no understanding? 17: Is it not yet a very little while, and Lebanon shall be turned into a fruitful field, and the fruitful field shall be esteemed as a forest? 18: And in that day shall the deaf hear the words of the book, and the eyes of the blind shall see out of obscurity, and out of darkness. 19: The meek also shall increase their joy in the LORD, and the poor among men shall rejoice in the Holy One of Israel. 20: For the terrible one is brought to nought, and the scorner is consumed, and all that watch for iniquity are cut off: 21: That make a man an offender for a word, and lay a snare for him that reproveth in the gate, and turn aside the just for a thing of nought. 22: Therefore thus saith the LORD, who redeemed Abraham, concerning the house of Jacob, Jacob shall not now be ashamed, neither shall his face now wax pale. 23: But when he seeth his children, the work of mine hands, in the midst of him, they shall sanctify my name, and sanctify the Holy One of Jacob, and shall fear the God of Israel. 24: They also that erred in spirit shall come to understanding, and they that murmured shall learn doctrine.

Isa: 50:1-11: Thus saith the LORD, Where is the bill of your mother's divorcement, whom I have put away? or which of my creditors is it to whom I have sold you? Behold, for your iniquities have ye sold yourselves, and for your transgressions is your mother put away. 2: Wherefore, when I came, was there no man? when I called, was there none to answer? Is my hand shortened at all, that it cannot redeem? or have I no power to deliver? behold, at my rebuke I dry up the sea, I make the rivers a wilderness: their fish stinketh, because there is no water, and dieth for thirst. 3: I clothe the heavens with blackness, and I make sackcloth their covering. 4: The Lord GOD hath given me the tongue of the learned, that I should know how to speak a word in season to him that is weary: he wakeneth morning by morning, he wakeneth mine ear to hear as the learned. 5: The Lord GOD hath opened mine ear, and I was not rebellious, neither turned away back. 6: I gave my back to the smiters, and my cheeks to them that plucked off the hair: I hid not my face from shame and spitting. 7: For the Lord GOD will help me; therefore shall I not be confounded: therefore have I set my face like a flint, and I know that I shall not be ashamed. 8: He is near that justifieth me; who will contend with me? let us stand together: who is mine adversary? let him come near to me. 9: Behold, the Lord GOD will help me; who is he that shall condemn me? lo, they all shall wax old as a garment; the moth shall eat them up. 10: Who is among you that feareth the LORD, that obeyeth the voice of his servant, that walketh in darkness, and hath no light? let him trust in the name of the LORD, and stay upon his God. 11: Behold, all ye that kindle a fire, that compass yourselves about with sparks: walk in the light of your fire, and in the sparks that ye have kindled. This shall ye have of mine hand; ye shall lie down in sorrow.

Isa: 53:1-12: Who hath believed our report? and to whom is the arm of the LORD revealed? 2: For he shall grow up before him as a tender plant, and as a root out of a dry ground: he hath no form nor comeliness; and when we shall see him, there is no beauty that we should desire him. 3: He is despised and rejected of men; a man of sorrows, and acquainted with grief: and we hid as it were our faces from him; he was despised, and we esteemed him not. 4: Surely he hath borne our griefs, and carried our sorrows: yet we did esteem him stricken, smitten of

God, and afflicted. 5: But he was wounded for our transgressions, he was bruised for our iniquities: the chastisement of our peace was upon him; and with his stripes we are healed. 6: All we like sheep have gone astray; we have turned every one to his own way; and the LORD hath laid on him the iniquity of us all. 7: He was oppressed, and he was afflicted, yet he opened not his mouth: he is brought as a lamb to the slaughter, and as a sheep before her shearers is dumb, so he openeth not his mouth. 8: He was taken from prison and from judgment: and who shall declare his generation? for he was cut off out of the land of the living: for the transgression of my people was he stricken. 9: And he made his grave with the wicked, and with the rich in his death; because he had done no violence, neither was any deceit in his mouth. 10: Yet it pleased the LORD to bruise him; he hath put him to grief: when thou shalt make his soul an offering for sin, he shall see his seed, he shall prolong his days, and the pleasure of the LORD shall prosper in his hand. 11: He shall see of the travail of his soul, and shall be satisfied: by his knowledge shall my righteous servant justify many; for he shall bear their iniquities. 12: Therefore will I divide him a portion with the great, and he shall divide the spoil with the strong; because he hath poured out his soul unto death: and he was numbered with the transgressors; and he bare the sin of many, and made intercession for the transgressors.

Isa: 55:1-11: Ho, every one that thirsteth, come ye to the waters, and he that hath no money; come ye, buy, and eat; yea, come, buy wine and milk without money and without price. 2: Wherefore do ye spend money for that which is not bread? and your labour for that which satisfieth not? hearken diligently unto me, and eat ye that which is good, and let your soul delight itself in fatness. 3: Incline your ear, and come unto me: hear, and your soul shall live; and I will make an everlasting covenant with you, even the sure mercies of David. 4: Behold, I have given him for a witness to the people, a leader and commander to the people. 5: Behold, thou shalt call a nation that thou knowest not, and nations that knew not thee shall run unto thee because of the LORD thy God, and for the Holy One of Israel; for he hath glorified thee. 6: Seek ye the LORD while he may be found, call ye upon him while he is near: 7: Let the wicked forsake his way, and the unrighteous man his thoughts: and let him return unto the LORD, and he will have mercy upon him; and to our God, for he will abundantly pardon. 8: For my thoughts are not your thoughts, neither are your ways my ways, saith the LORD. 9: For as the heavens are higher than the earth, so are my ways higher than your ways, and my thoughts than your thoughts. 10: For as the rain cometh down, and the snow from heaven, and returneth not thither, but watereth the earth, and maketh it bring forth and bud, that it may give seed to the sower, and bread to the eater: 11: So shall my word be that goeth forth out of my mouth: it shall not return unto me void, but it shall accomplish that which I please, and it shall prosper in the thing whereto I sent it.

Jer: 5:1-31: Run ye to and fro through the streets of Jerusalem, and see now, and know, and seek in the broad places thereof, if ye can find a man, if there be any that executeth judgment, that seeketh the truth; and I will pardon it. 2: And though they say, The LORD liveth; surely they swear falsely. 3: O LORD, are not thine eyes upon the truth? thou hast stricken them, but they have not grieved; thou hast consumed them, but they have refused to receive correction: they have made their faces harder than a rock; they have refused to return. 4: Therefore I said, Surely these are poor; they are foolish: for they know not the way of the LORD, nor the judgment of their God. 5: I will get me unto the great men, and will speak unto them; for they have known the way of the LORD, and the judgment of their God: but these have altogether broken the yoke, and burst the bonds. 6: Wherefore a lion out of the forest shall slay them, and a wolf of the evenings shall spoil them, a

leopard shall watch over their cities: every one that goeth out thence shall be torn in pieces: because their transgressions are many, and their backslidings are increased. 7: How shall I pardon thee for this? thy children have forsaken me, and sworn by them that are no gods: when I had fed them to the full, they then committed adultery, and assembled themselves by troops in the harlots' houses. 8: They were as fed horses in the morning: every one neighed after his neighbour's wife. 9: Shall I not visit for these things? saith the LORD: and shall not my soul be avenged on such a nation as this? 10: Go ye up upon her walls, and destroy; but make not a full end: take away her battlements; for they are not the LORD's. 11: For the house of Israel and the house of Judah have dealt very treacherously against me, saith the LORD. 12: They have belied the LORD, and said, It is not he; neither shall evil come upon us; neither shall we see sword nor famine: 13: And the prophets shall become wind, and the word is not in them: thus shall it be done unto them. 14: Wherefore thus saith the LORD God of hosts, Because ye speak this word, behold, I will make my words in thy mouth fire, and this people wood, and it shall devour them. 15: Lo, I will bring a nation upon you from far, O house of Israel, saith the LORD: it is a mighty nation, it is an ancient nation, a nation whose language thou knowest not, neither understandest what they say. 16: Their quiver is as an open sepulchre, they are all mighty men. 17: And they shall eat up thine harvest, and thy bread, which thy sons and thy daughters should eat: they shall eat up thy flocks and thine herds: they shall eat up thy vines and thy fig trees: they shall impoverish thy fenced cities, wherein thou trustedst, with the sword. 18: Nevertheless in those days, saith the LORD, I will not make a full end with you. 19: And it shall come to pass, when ye shall say, Wherefore doeth the LORD our God all these things unto us? then shalt thou answer them, Like as ye have forsaken me, and served strange gods in your land, so shall ye serve strangers in a land that is not yours. 20: Declare this in the house of Jacob, and publish it in Judah, saying, 21: Hear now this, O foolish people, and without understanding; which have eyes, and see not; which have ears, and hear not: 22: Fear ye not me? saith the LORD: will ye not tremble at my presence, which have placed the sand for the bound of the sea by a perpetual decree, that it cannot pass it: and though the waves thereof toss themselves, yet can they not prevail; though they roar, yet can they not pass over it? 23: But this people hath a revolting and a rebellious heart; they are revolted and gone. 24: Neither say they in their heart, Let us now fear the LORD our God, that giveth rain, both the former and the latter, in his season: he reserveth unto us the appointed weeks of the harvest. 25: Your iniquities have turned away these things, and your sins have withholden good things from you. 26: For among my people are found wicked men: they lay wait, as he that setteth snares; they set a trap, they catch men. 27: As a cage is full of birds, so are their houses full of deceit: therefore they are become great, and waxen rich. 28: They are waxen fat, they shine: yea, they overpass the deeds of the wicked: they judge not the cause, the cause of the fatherless, yet they prosper; and the right of the needy do they not judge. 29: Shall I not visit for these things? saith the LORD: shall not my soul be avenged on such a nation as this? 30: A wonderful and horrible thing is committed in the land; 31: The prophets prophesy falsely, and the priests bear rule by their means; and my people love to have it so: and what will ye do in the end thereof?

Jer: 31:9: They shall come with weeping, and with supplications will I lead them: I will cause them to walk by the rivers of waters in a straight way, wherein they shall not stumble: for I am a father to Israel, and Ephraim is my firstborn.

Jer: 31:31-35: Behold, the days come, saith the LORD, that I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel, and with the house of Judah: 32: Not according to the covenant that I made with their fathers in the day that I

took them by the hand to bring them out of the land of Egypt; which my covenant they brake, although I was an husband unto them, saith the LORD: 33: But this shall be the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel; After those days, saith the LORD, I will put my law in their inward parts, and write it in their hearts; and will be their God, and they shall be my people. 34: And they shall teach no more every man his neighbour, and every man his brother, saying, Know the LORD: for they shall all know me, from the least of them unto the greatest of them, saith the LORD; for I will forgive their iniquity, and I will remember their sin no more. 35: Thus saith the LORD, which giveth the sun for a light by day, and the ordinances of the moon and of the stars for a light by night, which divideth the sea when the waves thereof roar; The LORD of hosts is his name: Heb: 10:10-13

Dan: 9:24-26: Seventy weeks are determined upon thy people and upon thy holy city, to finish the transgression, and to make an end of sins, and to make reconciliation for iniquity, and to bring in everlasting righteousness, and to seal up the vision and prophecy, and to anoint the most Holy. 25: Know therefore and understand, that from the going forth of the commandment to restore and to build Jerusalem unto the Messiah the Prince shall be seven weeks, and threescore and two weeks: the street shall be built again, and the wall, even in troublous times. 26: And after threescore and two weeks shall Messiah be cut off, but not for himself: and the people of the prince that shall come shall destroy the city and the sanctuary; and the end thereof shall be with a flood, and unto the end of the war desolations are determined.

Ezek: 11:19-20: And I will give them one heart, and I will put a new spirit within you; and I will take the stony heart out of their flesh, and will give them an heart of flesh: 20: That they may walk in my statutes, and keep mine ordinances, and do them: and they shall be my people, and I will be their God.

Jesus' role as the Good Shepherd:

Ezek: 22:24-31: Son of man, say unto her, Thou art the land that is not cleansed, nor rained upon in the day of indignation. 25: There is a conspiracy of her prophets in the midst thereof, like a roaring lion ravening the prey; they have devoured souls; they have taken the treasure and precious things; they have made her many widows in the midst thereof. 26: Her priests have violated my law, and have profaned mine holy things: they have put no difference between the holy and profane, neither have they shewed difference between the unclean and the clean, and have hid their eyes from my sabbaths, and I am profaned among them. 27: Her princes in the midst thereof are like wolves ravening the prey, to shed blood, and to destroy souls, to get dishonest gain. 28: And her prophets have daubed them with untempered mortar, seeing vanity, and divining lies unto them, saying, Thus saith the Lord GOD, when the LORD hath not spoken. 29: The people of the land have used oppression, and exercised robbery, and have vexed the poor and needy: yea, they have oppressed the stranger wrongfully. 30: And I sought for a man among them, that should make up the hedge, and stand in the gap before me for the land, that I should not destroy it: but I found none. 31: Therefore have I poured out mine indignation upon them; I have consumed them with the fire of my wrath: their own way have I recompensed upon their heads, saith the Lord GOD.

Ezek: 34:1-31: And the word of the LORD came unto me, saying, 2: Son of man, prophesy against the shepherds of Israel, prophesy, and say unto them, Thus saith the Lord GOD unto the shepherds; Woe be to the shepherds of Israel that do feed themselves! should not the shepherds feed the flocks? 3: Ye eat the fat, and ye clothe you with the wool, ye kill them that are fed: but ye feed not the flock. 4: The diseased have ye not strengthened, neither have ye healed that which was sick, neither have ye bound up that which was broken, neither have ye brought again that which was driven away, neither have ye sought that which was lost; but with force and with cruelty have ye ruled them. 5: And they were scattered, because there is no shepherd: and they became meat to all the beasts of the field, when they were scattered. 6: My sheep wandered through all the mountains, and upon every high hill: yea, my flock was scattered upon all the face of the earth, and none did search or seek after them. 7: Therefore, ye shepherds, hear the word of the LORD; 8: As I live, saith the Lord GOD, surely because my flock became a prey, and my flock became meat to every beast of the field, because there was no shepherd, neither did my shepherds search for my flock, but the shepherds fed themselves, and fed not my flock; 9: Therefore, O ye shepherds, hear the word of the LORD; 10: Thus saith the Lord GOD; Behold, I am against the shepherds; and I will require my flock at their hand, and cause them to cease from feeding the flock; neither shall the shepherds feed themselves any more; for I will deliver my flock from their mouth, that they may not be meat for them. 11: For thus saith the Lord GOD; Behold, I, even I, will both search my sheep, and seek them out. 12: As a shepherd seeketh out his flock in the day that he is among his sheep that are scattered; so will I seek out my sheep, and will deliver them out of all places where they have been scattered in the cloudy and dark day. 13: And I will bring them out from the people, and gather them from the countries, and will bring them to their own land, and feed them upon the mountains of Israel by the rivers, and in all the inhabited places of the country. 14: I will feed them in a good pasture, and upon the high mountains of Israel shall their fold be: there shall they lie in a good fold, and in a fat pasture shall they feed upon the mountains of Israel. 15: I will feed my flock, and I will cause them to lie down, saith the Lord GOD. 16: I will seek that which was lost, and bring again that which was driven away, and will bind up that which was broken, and will strengthen that which was sick: but I will destroy the fat and the strong; I will feed them with judgment. 17: And as for you, O my flock, thus saith the Lord GOD; Behold, I judge between cattle and cattle, between the rams and the he goats. 18: Seemeth it a small thing unto you to have eaten up the good pasture, but ye must tread down with your feet the residue of your pastures? and to have drunk of the deep waters, but ye must foul the residue with your feet? 19: And as for my flock, they eat that which ye have trodden with your feet; and they drink that which ye have fouled with your feet. 20: Therefore thus saith the Lord GOD unto them; Behold, I, even I, will judge between the fat cattle and between the lean cattle. 21: Because ye have thrust with side and with shoulder, and pushed all the diseased with your horns, till ye have scattered them abroad; 22: Therefore will I save my flock, and they shall no more be a prey; and I will judge between cattle and cattle. 23: And I will set up one shepherd over them, and he shall feed them, even my servant David; he shall feed them, and he shall be their shepherd. 24: And I the LORD will be their God, and my servant David a prince among them; I the LORD have spoken it. 25: And I will make with them a covenant of peace, and will cause the evil beasts to cease out of the land: and they shall dwell safely in the wilderness, and sleep in the woods. 26: And I will make them and the places round about my hill a blessing; and I will cause the shower to come down in his season; there shall be showers of blessing. 27: And the tree of the field shall yield her fruit, and the earth shall yield her increase, and they shall be safe in their land, and shall know that I am the LORD, when I have broken the bands of their yoke, and delivered them out of the hand of those that served themselves of them. 28: And they shall no more be a prey to the heathen, neither shall the beast

of the land devour them; but they shall dwell safely, and none shall make them afraid. 29: And I will raise up for them a plant of renown, and they shall be no more consumed with hunger in the land, neither bear the shame of the heathen any more. 30: Thus shall they know that I the LORD their God am with them, and that they, even the house of Israel, are my people, saith the Lord GOD. 31: And ye my flock, the flock of my pasture, are men, and I am your God, saith the Lord GOD.

Ezek: 37:21-28: And say unto them, Thus saith the Lord GOD; Behold, I will take the children of Israel from among the heathen, whither they be gone, and will gather them on every side, and bring them into their own land: 22: And I will make them one nation in the land upon the mountains of Israel; and one king shall be king to them all: and they shall be no more two nations, neither shall they be divided into two kingdoms any more at all: 23: Neither shall they defile themselves any more with their idols, nor with their detestable things, nor with any of their transgressions: but I will save them out of all their dwellingplaces, wherein they have sinned, and will cleanse them: so shall they be my people, and I will be their God. 24: And David my servant shall be king over them; and they all shall have one shepherd: they shall also walk in my judgments, and observe my statutes, and do them. 25: And they shall dwell in the land that I have given unto Jacob my servant, wherein your fathers have dwelt; and they shall dwell therein, even they, and their children, and their children's children for ever: and my servant David shall be their prince for ever. 26: Moreover I will make a covenant of peace with them; it shall be an everlasting covenant with them: and I will place them, and multiply them, and will set my sanctuary in the midst of them for evermore. 27: My tabernacle also shall be with them: yea, I will be their God, and they shall be my people. 28: And the heathen shall know that I the LORD do sanctify Israel, when my sanctuary shall be in the midst of them for evermore.

Ezek: 44:5-16: And the LORD said unto me, Son of man, mark well, and behold with thine eyes, and hear with thine ears all that I say unto thee concerning all the ordinances of the house of the LORD, and all the laws thereof; and mark well the entering in of the house, with every going forth of the sanctuary. 6: And thou shalt say to the rebellious, even to the house of Israel, Thus saith the Lord GOD; O ye house of Israel, let it suffice you of all your abominations, 7: In that ye have brought into my sanctuary strangers, uncircumcised in heart, and uncircumcised in flesh, to be in my sanctuary, to pollute it, even my house, when ye offer my bread, the fat and the blood, and they have broken my covenant because of all your abominations. 8: And ye have not kept the charge of mine holy things: but ye have set keepers of my charge in my sanctuary for yourselves. 9: Thus saith the Lord GOD; No stranger, uncircumcised in heart, nor uncircumcised in flesh, shall enter into my sanctuary, of any stranger that is among the children of Israel 10: And the Levites that are gone away far from me, when Israel went astray, which went astray away from me after their idols; they shall even bear their iniquity. 11: Yet they shall be ministers in my sanctuary, having charge at the gates of the house, and ministering to the house: they shall slay the burnt offering and the sacrifice for the people, and they shall stand before them to minister unto them. 12: Because they ministered unto them before their idols, and caused the house of Israel to fall into iniquity; therefore have I lifted up mine hand against them, saith the Lord GOD, and they shall bear their iniquity. 13: And they shall not come near unto me, to do the office of a priest unto me, nor to come near to any of my holy things, in the most holy place: but they shall bear their shame, and their abominations which they have committed. 14: But I will make them keepers of the charge of the house, for all the service thereof, and for all that shall be done therein. 15: But the priests the Levites, the sons of Zadok, that kept the charge of my

sanctuary when the children of Israel went astray from me, they shall come near to me to minister unto me, and they shall stand before me to offer unto me the fat and the blood, saith the Lord GOD: 16: They shall enter into my sanctuary, and they shall come near to my table, to minister unto me, and they shall keep my charge.

What Church is All About

I heard a song that said something about if one soul is saved, isn't that what it's all about. I think it was about going to church – if one soul is saved then church is worth it because that is what it's all about. But this article is to declare that that is not what church is all about.

Church is about Eph: 4:11-16: And he gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers; 12: For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ: 13: Till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ: 14: That we henceforth be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men, and cunning craftiness, whereby they lie in wait to deceive; 15: But speaking the truth in love, may grow up into him in all things, which is the head, even Christ: 16: From whom the whole body fitly joined together and compacted by that which every joint supplieth, according to the effectual working in the measure of every part, maketh increase of the body unto the edifying of itself in love.

It's about: Eph: 5:19: Speaking to yourselves in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, singing and making melody in your heart to the Lord;

Col: 3:16: Let the word of Christ dwell in you richly in all wisdom; teaching and admonishing one another in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, singing with grace in your hearts to the Lord.

It's about: Eph: 2:22: In whom ye also are builded together for an habitation of God through the Spirit.

It's about: Heb: 10:19-27: Having therefore, brethren, boldness to enter into the holiest by the blood of Jesus, 20: By a new and living way, which he hath consecrated for us, through the veil, that is to say, his flesh; 21: And

having an high priest over the house of God; 22: Let us draw near with a true heart in full assurance of faith, having our hearts sprinkled from an evil conscience, and our bodies washed with pure water. 23: Let us hold fast the profession of our faith without wavering; (for he is faithful that promised;) 24: And let us consider one another to provoke unto love and to good works: 25: Not forsaking the assembling of ourselves together, as the manner of some is; but exhorting one another: and so much the more, as ye see the day approaching. 26: For if we sin wilfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remaineth no more sacrifice for sins, 27: But a certain fearful looking for of judgment and fiery indignation, which shall devour the adversaries.

Some go to church to be petted and pampered.

Some go to be ministered to.

Some go to sing praise and worship songs together.

Some go to hear a message.

God wants us to go to church to interact with one another and to be built together and to urge one another on to love and good works. He wants us to come in the unity of the faith and the knowledge of the Son of God unto one perfected man or body. This talks about training. This talks about sharing experiences. This talks about a fellowship of believers. This is what God is doing with church, any thing else that's being done there is secondary.

Someone will say, "Well, isn't it a Christian's first priority to win souls." It is a Christian priority to win souls, but first things first. First a Christian must be trained to walk the walk and talk the talk. Then they must learn to work as a body in unity of spirit in agreement that this is all about Jesus' ministry. Church is about learning to function as Christ's body.

The Writer's Ink

Ezek: 9:1-4: He cried also in mine ears with a loud voice, saying, Cause them that have charge over the city to draw near, even every man with his destroying weapon in his hand. 2: And, behold, six men came from the way of the higher gate, which lieth toward the north, and every man a slaughter weapon in his hand; and one man among them was clothed with linen, with a writer's inkhorn by his side: and they went in, and stood beside the brasen altar. 3: And the glory of the God of Israel was gone up from the cherub, whereupon he was, to the threshold of the house. And he called to the man clothed with linen, which had the writer's inkhorn by his side; 4: And the LORD said unto him, Go through the midst of the city, through the midst of Jerusalem, and set a mark upon the foreheads of the men that sigh and that cry for all the abominations that be done in the midst thereof.

(I believe the destroying weapons are the media, in this case especially magazines and text books, etc.)

5-7: And to the others he said in mine hearing, Go ye after him through the city, and smite: let not your eye spare, neither have ye pity: 6: Slay utterly old and young, both maids, and little children, and women: but come not near any man upon whom is the mark; and begin at my sanctuary. Then they began at the ancient men which were before the house. 7: And he said unto them, Defile the house, and fill the courts with the slain: go ye forth. And they went forth, and slew in the city.

(I believe this has to do with the same thing we are warned about in Gal: 6:7-8: Be not deceived; God is not mocked: for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap. 8: For he that soweth to his flesh shall of the flesh reap corruption; but he that soweth to the Spirit shall of the Spirit reap life everlasting.

These verses tell us that if we sow to the flesh we will reap corruption. Apparently most people think this means if you sow corruption you will reap corruption, but it does not say that. It says, if you sow to the flesh, you will reap corruption. It does not say you might reap corruption – it says you will reap corruption.

Many who call themselves Christians are watching things and reading things that Jesus suffered on the cross and died to save us from. This ought not be. Jesus paid the ultimate price to free people from degrading things and from lower life thinking and it is imperative for Christians to stop wallowing in the filth and the mud and to come up higher – renewing their minds with the Word of God.

They aren't the only ones going to be slain by the five men with the destroying weapons – all those who continue to sow to the flesh – entertain the flesh and neglect the spirit – will be slaughtered because they will not be able to discern between the lethal lies being sown and the Truth. I do not know why the teachers have not grasp the truth and taught the truth that Christians must have on the full armor of God in order to stand in the evil day. To be carnally-minded is death.

What I'm saying is a lot of people spend their reading, watching TV, and/or playing on the computer time, feeding their carnal minds. They are often bewildered about why they never seem to get more spiritual – why they stay at the same place or seem to be going backward, after all, they go to church at least twice a week.

This class of people is vulnerable not because they didn't mean it when they chose to be one of God's children, but because they cannot recognize danger when it presents itself to them in the guise of clean entertainment or of further wisdom.

The man in linen with the writer's ink represents Christian writer's inspired by the Spirit of Christ. Those who are sowing to the spirit read their Bibles and these articles and it is as if a mark were placed on their forehead so that when the one who roams around like a roaring lion, the one who masquerades as an angel of light spouts his lies, his subtleties, his theories, and imaginings they are not affected by it. They have on the full armor of God.)

Ezek: 9:8-11: And it came to pass, while they were slaying them, and I was left, that I fell upon my face, and cried, and said, Ah Lord GOD! wilt thou destroy all the residue of Israel in thy pouring out of thy fury upon Jerusalem? 9: Then said he unto me, The iniquity of the house of Israel and Judah is exceeding great, and the land is full of blood, and the city full of perverseness: for they say, The LORD hath forsaken the earth, and the LORD seeth not. 10: And as for me also, mine eye shall not spare, neither will I have pity, but I will recompense their way upon their head. 11: And, behold, the man clothed with linen, which had the inkhorn by his side, reported the matter, saying, I have done as thou hast commanded me.

(I think the biggest perversity of Christians in general is that they do not believe the Bible. They do not believe that they must seek the kingdom of God with all diligence. They do not believe that they must protect their spirit for out of it are the issues of life. They do not believe they must put on and keep on the full armor of God. And they do not believe that if they sow to the flesh they will reap corruption.)

The Love of the Great Body

Matt: 24:11-13: And many false prophets shall rise, and shall deceive many. 12: And because iniquity shall abound, the love of many shall wax cold. 13: But he that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved.

The general understanding of this passage is that those who get caught up in iniquity will not love the brethren as they should, but it could also mean that because iniquity abounds even among those who call themselves Christians, it is hard to do the loving things Jesus wants us to do for one another.

For example, the Christian Spirit wants to be hospitable with those in the church – invite them for a visit, but because Christian identity is so undefined these days, experience teaches that the effort will not accomplish anything, but for the giver to be taken from.

You may say, “So, at least the person gets a chance to give.”

But the point of this article is that though the true Christian spirit is a giving spirit, the recipient merely takes it all for granted that the giver will give. He or she has no true gratitude. The New Testament exalts gratitude because the one who has gratitude will be in a humble state of mind whereby he or she will be able to receive more than material things. They will be open to good teaching. The humble state is a teachable state.

But where iniquity abounds and the gospel is too broad, the giver has no opportunity to really help with good advice or sharing a testimony because the recipient does not have an ear to hear or a heart to understand. They are still caught up in the mentality of expecting Christians to bail them out of their difficulty. It does not dawn on them that they may be able to avoid trouble by making better choices. Because of the way things are handled, they just want to do their own thing and get a helping hand when they need it.

What’s wrong here is that the person claims to be a brother or sister in the Lord and yet they have not repented of their sins or willfulness. This is wrong. This is due to a mishandling of the gospel.

In this day and age the gospel is mishandled, misrepresented, shortchanged, and adulterated. This is why iniquity abounds so that the true Christians cannot be the helper or witness that they so desire to be.

This is why they can’t call or visit those who have quit coming to church because they will get an earful of accusations, gossip, and self pity. The well intentioned person leaves feeling as if their ears have been assaulted and wondering what they should have done that they didn’t do and what they shouldn’t have done that they did do. The selfish Christian only had in mind to tell tales and recruit malcontents. The giver is robbed of the reward of knowing they were making a difference in the person’s life.

This may sound like a bitter writer to some, but I believe that it is important to point out to people the inevitable results of mishandling the gospel. This is the main reason for Christian burnout.

God had in mind for Christians to help one another in a Spirit of Christian love. The church is built on Christian love. All who profess Christ are to live by this Spirit. It is a Spirit of humility, unselfishness, and genuinely caring for the other party.

What's missing in this accepting everyone as a Christian who says they are one is the beneficial interacting that Jesus had in mind when He set up His church.

Jesus had guidelines for believers and Paul also shared some:

Lk: 9:23-26: And he said to them all, If any man will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross daily, and follow me. 24: For whosoever will save his life shall lose it: but whosoever will lose his life for my sake, the same shall save it. 25: For what is a man advantaged, if he gain the whole world, and lose himself, or be cast away? 26: For whosoever shall be ashamed of me and of my words, of him shall the Son of man be ashamed, when he shall come in his own glory, and in his Father's, and of the holy angels.

Lk: 14:26-27: If any man come to me, and hate not his father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brethren, and sisters, yea, and his own life also, he cannot be my disciple. 27: And whosoever doth not bear his cross, and come after me, cannot be my disciple.

Jn: 10:27-28: My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me: 28: And I give unto them eternal life; and they shall never perish, neither shall any man pluck them out of my hand.

Jn: 15:1-2: I am the true vine, and my Father is the husbandman. 2: Every branch in me that beareth not fruit he taketh away: and every branch that beareth fruit, he purgeth it, that it may bring forth more fruit.

1Cor: 5:9-13: I wrote unto you in an epistle not to company with fornicators: 10: Yet not altogether with the fornicators of this world, or with the covetous, or extortioners, or with idolaters; for then must ye needs go out of the world. 11: But now I have written unto you not to keep company, if any man that is called a brother be a fornicator, or covetous, or an idolater, or a railer, or a drunkard, or an extortioner; with such an one no not to eat. 12: For what have I to do to judge them also that are without? do not ye judge them that are within? 13: But them that are without God judgeth. Therefore put away from among yourselves that wicked person.

Rom: 16:17: Now I beseech you, brethren, mark them which cause divisions and offences contrary to the doctrine which ye have learned; and avoid them.

2Thess: 3:14: And if any man obey not our word by this epistle, note that man, and have no company with him, that he may be ashamed.

The Way is Straight and Narrow

Matt: 7:13-14: Enter ye in at the strait gate: for wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many there be which go in thereat: 14: Because strait is the gate, and narrow is the way, which leadeth unto life, and few there be that find it.

(I am here to proclaim that the way to eternal life is straight and narrow. Why would I want to do that when it seems that everyone is happy to proclaim God's love, grace, and mercy? Because Jesus thought it was important and I see a need for it. Jesus not only said the way was straight and narrow, He also was the one who said, in Matt: 16:24-25: If any man will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me. 25: For whosoever will save his life shall lose it: and whosoever will lose his life for my sake shall find it. In the Amplified Bible it says, whoever is bent on saving his temporal life – his comfort and security here, shall lose eternal life . . .

That is profound and not at all how the church talks. What I mean by that is that the church has definitely conveyed the message that if you say you are a Christian and they don't know of any dark sins in your life, they are content to count you as one of them.

This is so common that almost everyone who reads this will be perplexed as to what I am trying to say. I am saying that Jesus is responsible for the gospel. He provided the way to salvation and it is in applying His teachings that one walks out their salvation.

I am saying that Jesus is the whole nine yards here. It's His plan. He executed it and He is the overseer to its getting done. I am saying that the plan the church is using right now is not His. The next verses will tell you how to judge if what I'm saying is true or not.)

15-20: Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves. 16: Ye shall know them by their fruits. Do men gather grapes of thorns, or figs of thistles? 17: Even so every good tree bringeth forth good fruit; but a corrupt tree bringeth forth evil fruit. 18: A good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit, neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit. 19: Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire 20: Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them.

(The fruit that the church should be producing is Christians who look and act like the New Testament image of them. What God says in Ezekiel 43 is instruction that we need to heed today. Ezek: 43:10-11: Thou son of man, shew the house to the house of Israel, that they may be ashamed of their iniquities: and let them measure the pattern. 11: And if they be ashamed of all that they have done, shew them the form of the house, and the fashion thereof, and the goings out thereof, and the comings in thereof, and all the forms thereof, and all the ordinances thereof, and all the forms thereof, and all the laws thereof: and write it in their sight, that they may keep the whole form thereof, and all the ordinances thereof, and do them.

God had Ezekiel measure the temple and everything of it and everything in it, then He said the verses above. God is saying, He laid out the whole form of the transformed life in Christ and He expects it to be followed fervently.

If we don't heed God's instructions now, many will have to go through the fire spoken of in verse 19 of Matthew 7. The fire that will consume many is spoken of in Isaiah 50: 10-11: Who is among you that feareth the LORD, that obeyeth the voice of his servant, that walketh in darkness, and hath no light? let him trust in the name of the LORD, and stay upon his God. 11: Behold, all ye that kindle a fire, that compass yourselves about with sparks: walk in the light of your fire, and in the sparks that ye have kindled. This shall ye have of mine hand; ye shall lie down in sorrow. In the Amplified Bible it says that the fire is teaching man's plan of salvation instead of God's)

21-23: Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven. 22: Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderful works? 23: And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity.

(This statement of Jesus' is pretty much being ignored now, but it is clear and it will not be obscured on judgment day. It will not be all those who say they are Christians that will enter the kingdom of Heaven, but those who do His will. Most of us know that there are some who swear by His name falsely, but I say according

to Jesus' teachings many are going to say, "Lord, lord, have we not attended church regularly and even put nice sums in the collection plate?" and He will say, "I never knew you.")

24-27: Therefore whosoever heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them, I will liken him unto a wise man, which built his house upon a rock: 25: And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell not: for it was founded upon a rock. 26: And every one that heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them not, shall be likened unto a foolish man, which built his house upon the sand: 27: And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell: and great was the fall of it.

(These verses explain the difference. Many go to church and many say they are Christians, but it will be the ones who practice what Jesus and the whole New Testament teach who will make it. But I am writing this article about the church. It is the church that must know and understand what I am emphasizing here. And it is the church who must convey the truth to the congregation.

The Prophet of the Five-fold Ministry

Eph: 4:11-16: And he gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers; 12: For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ: 13: Till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ: 14: That we henceforth be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men, and cunning craftiness, whereby they lie in wait to deceive; 15: But speaking the truth in love, may grow up into him in all things, which is the head, even Christ: 16: From whom the whole body fitly joined together and compacted by that which every joint supplieth, according to the effectual working in the measure of every part, maketh increase of the body unto the edifying of itself in love.

Paul likened the body of Christ to a human body. He mentioned body parts such as eyes, ears, unmentionable parts. He did not mention the kidney, but all human bodies have to have at least one of them.

Kidneys are glands which separate water and waste products. The kidneys are sophisticated reprocessing machines. Every day, your kidneys process about 200 quarts of blood to sift out about 2 quarts of waste products and extra water. Your kidneys measure out chemicals like sodium, phosphorus, and potassium and release them back to the blood to return to the body. In this way, your kidneys regulate the body's level of these substances. The right balance is necessary for life, but excess levels can be harmful.] Taken from *Modern Biology* by Henry Holt and Company, Inc. Copyright 1956

There should be at least one kidney in the local body of Christ. I think prophets are kidneys. Sometimes prophesy comes by tongues and interpretation, but I'm talking about a gift certain people have whereby they care greatly about the condition of the body and are motivated to see that it is cleaned up and kept clean. They get their information and inspiration from God – the Holy Spirit and the Holy Bible.

Their purpose is to discern where the church is missing it and what needs to be done about it. They function in the body as God designed kidneys to function – doing what they were created to do to help the body be healthy, prosperous, and productive. They are not dangerous because they do not operate apart from the body – they are subject to the body just as the body must cooperate with them and be responsive to them.

I do not think today's churches have kidneys. I think they were rejected by the immune system which interpreted them as foreign matter or as the enemy. This happened because the immune system could not discern their real function and thought they were accusers of the brethren or members who had a critical spirit.

To show you what I'm mean I will use an illustration. In that earthquake in San Francisco in October of 1989 the Bay Bridge collapsed and many people were seriously hurt some even crushed and some decapitated.

There are faultfinders for bridges. Their job is to thoroughly inspect bridges on a regular basis and determine where there might be weaknesses and to recommend measures to be taken to reinforce the weak areas. They are faultfinders and yet they are doing a good service. They are not the bad guy. They are needed. What happened in the case of the Bay Bridge, I don't know whether their warnings were ignored, or whether the city was trying to dig up the money, or whether they neglected to consult a faultfinder. The results of not heeding a faultfinder were devastating.

Therefore in the body of Christ, I maintain that faultfinders are necessary, but they must have Christ's Spirit and they must work as a team with the other body members. Their function must be understood and appreciated and their input must be heeded by the body.

What would be different?

The church would not get off the written Word of God to the left nor to the right.

Rev: 22:18-19: For I testify unto every man that heareth the words of the prophecy of this book, If any man shall add unto these things, God shall add unto him the plagues that are written in this book: 19: And if any man shall take away from the words of the book of this prophecy, God shall take away his part out of the book of life, and out of the holy city, and from the things which are written in this book.

Ezek: 44:5-7: And the LORD said unto me, Son of man, mark well, and behold with thine eyes, and hear with thine ears all that I say unto thee concerning all the ordinances of the house of the LORD, and all the laws thereof; and mark well the entering in of the house, with every going forth of the sanctuary. 6: And thou shalt say to the rebellious, even to the house of Israel, Thus saith the Lord GOD; O ye house of Israel, let it suffice you of all your abominations, 7: In that ye have brought into my sanctuary strangers, uncircumcised in heart, and uncircumcised in flesh, to be in my sanctuary, to pollute it, even my house, when ye offer my bread, the fat and the blood, and they have broken my covenant because of all your abominations.

8-14: And ye have not kept the charge of mine holy things: but ye have set keepers of my charge in my sanctuary for yourselves. 9: Thus saith the Lord GOD; No stranger, uncircumcised in heart, nor uncircumcised in flesh, shall enter into my sanctuary, of any stranger that is among the children of Israel. 10: And the Levites that are gone away far from me, when Israel went astray, which went astray away from me after their idols; they shall even bear their iniquity. 11: Yet they shall be ministers in my sanctuary, having charge at the gates of the house, and ministering to the house: they shall slay the burnt offering and the sacrifice for the people, and they shall stand before them to minister unto them. 12: Because they ministered unto them before their idols, and caused the house of Israel to fall into iniquity; therefore have I lifted up mine hand against them, saith the Lord GOD, and they shall bear their iniquity. 13: And they shall not come near unto me, to do the office of a priest unto me, nor to come near to any of my holy things, in the most holy place: but they shall bear their shame, and their abominations which they have committed. 14: But I will make them keepers of the charge of the house, for all the service thereof, and for all that shall be done therein.

15-18: But the priests the Levites, the sons of Zadok, that kept the charge of my sanctuary when the children of Israel went astray from me, they shall come near to me to minister unto me, and they shall stand before me to offer unto me the fat and the blood, saith the Lord GOD: 16: They shall enter into my sanctuary, and they shall come near to my table, to minister unto me, and they shall keep my charge. 17: And it shall come to pass, that when they enter in at the gates of the inner court, they shall be clothed with linen garments; and no wool shall come upon them, whiles they minister in the gates of the inner court, and within. 18: They shall have linen bonnets upon their heads, and shall have linen breeches upon their loins; they shall not gird themselves with any thing that

The Spirit of Co-operation in Operation

I have learned that even when one does find Christians that truly rely on the Lord, that have God at the center of their lives that they still can't unite in mind and purpose. After pondering the matter, I think I have some understanding of it. Of course the missing ingredient is the Spirit of harmony. To me, this does not mean we have to give up our own visions to go along with the leader's visions.

The problem appears to be that each one of us has grown close to God through our own experiences with Him and our beliefs and goals have emerged from those experiences. Therefore we are single-minded on those goals and beliefs, thinking that they have to be the most important ones.

What can we do? What must we do?

We must be made aware of and understand the problem. Then we must work hard to communicate and understand where each one who has an obvious relationship with the Lord and has a vision is coming from and then we must work hard to find common ground (negotiate), seeking to implement each person's godly vision, training and knowledge. It would take time, patience, love and many serious meetings covered by prayer.

If this is the answer, it seems impossible because almost everyone who has visions for church work thinks that they should do the leading. That's where the praying comes in. Through sincere prayer as a group, God will enhance Christ's Spirit within each of us, empowering us with a spirit of co-operation!

It is well to remember that this problem could have been avoided if the church had been built together as God designed. The church works best when it is "built together" as each member of the body exercises the Spirit of Christ within them and cooperates with the rest of the body precisely as the human body works. No wonder God calls us the body of Christ. But that is not the case now, so we use plan B above.

To implement plan B one of the group must be the leader – one who understands that a good leader often follows, a good leader is a good listener, a good leader is the servant of all and a good leader respects and honors each person's point of view. (I have not forgotten that the pastor is the leader in church, but in implementing this

plan to work together to birth our godly visions, the pastor would have to be part of the above mentioned group. If he is a part of the group then he must recognize that he may not be the right one to lead the group, if you follow my thinking.)

Following God's blueprint, there would have to be two or three others with authority to back up the leader or back down the leader – counsel with the leader – the balance and check operation.

Then the above round table discussion can begin and we would surely succeed in working together in Jesus to do the greater works.

What Not To Wear

Point #1: Parallels are a true test. If it is true that we need a spiritual covering – secret place of the most high – Ps: 91, would it not be true that we need a soul covering – the full armor of God – Ephesians 6, and a body covering also – Gen: 3:21? – Unto Adam also and to his wife did the LORD God make coats of skins, and clothed them. [The Amplified Bible says the coats of skins were long robes.]

Point #2: Clothes make a statement. Most people when they are going out in public dress to make a statement. The rich wear clothes that tells that they are rich. The hippie wears clothes that say they will not conform. The skateboarder wears baggie clothes to identify with other skateboarders. The prostitute wears clothes that advertise her wares.

Scripture References:

1Tim: 2:9-10: In like manner also, that women adorn themselves in modest apparel, with shamefacedness and sobriety; not with broided hair, or gold, or pearls, or costly array; but (which becometh women professing godliness) with good works.

Spiritual parallel: Job: 29:14: I put on righteousness, and it clothed me: my judgment was as a robe and a diadem.

Rom: 13:12: The night is far spent, the day is at hand: let us therefore cast off the works of darkness, and let us put on the armour of light.

Isa: 52:1: Awake, awake; put on thy strength, O Zion; put on thy beautiful garments, O Jerusalem, the holy city: for henceforth there shall no more come into thee the uncircumcised and the unclean.

Zeph: 1:8: And it shall come to pass in the day of the LORD's sacrifice, that I will punish the princes, and the king's children, and all such as are clothed with strange apparel.

Rom: 13:12-14: The night is far spent, the day is at hand: let us therefore cast off the works of darkness, and let us put on the armour of light. Let us walk honestly, as in the day; not in rioting and drunkenness, not in chambering and wantonness, not in strife and envying. But put ye on the Lord Jesus Christ, and make not provision for the flesh, to fulfil the lusts thereof.

Eph: 4:22-24: That ye put off concerning the former conversation the old man, which is corrupt according to the deceitful lusts; And be renewed in the spirit of your mind; And that ye put on the new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness.

Gal: 3:27: For as many of you as have been baptized into Christ have put on Christ.

Eph: 6:11-13: Put on the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil. For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places. Wherefore take unto you the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to withstand in the evil day, and having done all, to stand.

Point #3: The Christian way is to dress with consideration for others. The pious-[having or showing religious devotion; zealous in the performance of religious obligations – Webster's] wear very conservative clothes because they do not want to draw attention to or advertise their bodies, they do not want to cause men and boys to lust after them nor do they want to excite a male who may then take it out on someone else. [Cleavage entices! Belly buttons showing entices! Legs showing up to buttocks entices! Christian husbands will be tempted to lust. The loins of innocent males will be incited to crave. Wives and girlfriends will not want their men around you. You will be causing them torment when they see their men looking at you the way you intended when you put on that skimpy outfit.]

Scripture References:

Rom: 14:13: Let us not therefore judge one another any more: but judge this rather, that no man put a stumblingblock or an occasion to fall in his brother's way.

Rom: 14:21-22: It is good neither to eat flesh, nor to drink wine, nor any thing whereby thy brother stumbleth, or is offended, or is made weak. Hast thou faith? have it to thyself before God. Happy is he that condemneth not himself in that thing which he alloweth.

Rom: 15:2: Let every one of us please his neighbour for his good to edification.

1Pet: 1:14-16: As obedient children, not fashioning yourselves according to the former lusts in your ignorance: But as he which hath called you is holy, so be ye holy in all manner of conversation; Because it is written, Be ye holy; for I am holy.

Scriptures for how a Christian must think in order to conform to the Word and not the World:

2Cor: 10:4-5: (For the weapons of our warfare are not carnal, but mighty through God to the pulling down of strong holds;) Casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth itself against the knowledge of God, and bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ;

Rom: 6:11-13: Likewise reckon ye also yourselves to be dead indeed unto sin, but alive unto God through Jesus Christ our Lord. Let not sin therefore reign in your mortal body, that ye should obey it in the lusts thereof. Neither yield ye your members as instruments of unrighteousness unto sin: but yield yourselves unto God, as those that are alive from the dead, and your members as instruments of righteousness unto God.

Rom: 8:12: Therefore, brethren, we are debtors, not to the flesh, to live after the flesh. For if ye live after the flesh, ye shall die: but if ye through the Spirit do mortify the deeds of the body, ye shall live.

Col: 1:9-10: For this cause we also, since the day we heard it, do not cease to pray for you, and to desire that ye might be filled with the knowledge of his will in all wisdom and spiritual understanding; That ye might walk worthy of the Lord unto all pleasing, being fruitful in every good work, and increasing in the knowledge of God;

1Jn: 5:15-17: Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world. If any man love the world, the love of

the Father is not in him. For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, and the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world. And the world passeth away, and the lust thereof: but he that doeth the will of God abideth for ever.

Point #4: So that you might be a good witness for Jesus.

Scripture References:

Hos: 8:7-9: For they have sown the wind, and they shall reap the whirlwind: it hath no stalk: the bud shall yield no meal: if so be it yield, the strangers shall swallow it up. Israel is swallowed up: now shall they be among the Gentiles as a vessel wherein is no pleasure. For they are gone up to Assyria, a wild ass alone by himself: Ephraim hath hired lovers.

Rom: 2:24: For the name of God is blasphemed among the Gentiles through you, as it is written. (This scripture is taken out of context and used only to show that our behavior can demean our witness.)

1Tim: 6:1: Let as many servants as are under the yoke count their own masters worthy of all honour, that the name of God and his doctrine be not blasphemed.

Ti: 2:4-5: That they may teach the young women to be sober, to love their husbands, to love their children, To be discreet, chaste, keepers at home, good, obedient to their own husbands, that the word of God be not blasphemed.

1Pet: 2:9-12: But ye are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, a peculiar people; that ye should shew forth the praises of him who hath called you out of darkness into his marvellous light: Which in time past were not a people, but are now the people of God: which had not obtained mercy, but now have obtained mercy. Dearly beloved, I beseech you as strangers and pilgrims, abstain from fleshly lusts, which war against the soul; Having your conversation honest among the Gentiles: that, whereas they speak against you as evildoers, they may by your good works, which they shall behold, glorify God in the day of visitation.

Isa: 4:2-4: In that day shall the branch of the LORD be beautiful and glorious, and the fruit of the earth shall be excellent and comely for them that are escaped of Israel. And it shall come to pass, that he that is left in Zion, and he that remaineth in Jerusalem, shall be called holy, even every one that is written among the living in Jerusalem: When the Lord shall have washed away the filth of the daughters of Zion, and shall have purged the blood of Jerusalem from the midst thereof by the spirit of judgment, and by the spirit of burning.

Point #5: God associates uncovering with ungodliness.

Scripture References:

Isa: 3:16-23: Moreover the LORD saith, Because the daughters of Zion are haughty, and walk with stretched forth necks and wanton eyes, walking and mincing as they go, and making a tinkling with their feet: Therefore the LORD will smite with a scab the crown of the head of the daughters of Zion, and the LORD will discover their secret parts. In that day the Lord will take away the bravery of their tinkling ornaments about their feet, and their cauls, and their round tires like the moon, The chains, and the bracelets, and the mufflers, The bonnets, and the ornaments of the legs, and the headbands, and the tablets, and the earrings, The rings, and nose jewels, The changeable suits of apparel, and the mantles, and the wimples, and the crisping pins, The glasses, and the fine linen, and the hoods, and the veils.

Isa: 47:1-3: Come down, and sit in the dust, O virgin daughter of Babylon, sit on the ground: there is no throne, O daughter of the Chaldeans: for thou shalt no more be called tender and delicate. Take the millstones, and grind meal: uncover thy locks, make bare the leg, uncover the thigh, pass over the rivers. Thy nakedness shall be uncovered, yea, thy shame shall be seen: I will take vengeance, and I will not meet thee as a man.

Jer: 13:22: And if thou say in thine heart, Wherefore come these things upon me? For the greatness of thine iniquity are thy skirts discovered, and thy heels made bare.

Ezek: 16:39: And I will also give thee into their hand, and they shall throw down thine eminent place, and shall break down thy high places: they shall strip thee also of thy clothes, and shall take thy fair jewels, and leave thee naked and bare.

End-Times Series

The Flying Scroll

It is time for the watch dogs of the church to warn the people when the enemy approaches or is already in the camp. One such enemy is the worldly and evil influences all around us. The way to combat this enemy is by feeding on spiritual food and not feeding on carnal stuff.

This very important issue needs to be addressed in the body of Christ. It may well be the reason the church does not look like our mirror – the Word of God. This issue plus the proper presentation of the Gospel could make a world of difference.

We'll start with the flying scroll in Zech: 5:1-4: Then I turned, and lifted up mine eyes, and looked, and behold a flying roll. And he said unto me, What seest thou? And I answered, I see a flying roll; the length thereof is twenty cubits, and the breadth thereof ten cubits. Then said he unto me, This is the curse that goeth forth over the face of the whole earth: for every one that stealeth shall be cut off as on this side according to it; and every one that sweareth shall be cut off as on that side according to it. I will bring it forth, saith the LORD of hosts, and it shall enter into the house of the thief, and into the house of him that sweareth falsely by my name: and it shall remain in the midst of his house, and shall consume it with the timber thereof and the stones thereof.

I believe the flying scroll is referring to pictures and sound flying through the air waves. That would have started with radio and then the cinema and now TV and computers. The scroll comes into people's houses and for those who do not truly worship God it will become a curse.

It becomes a curse because it starts out not too bad, but gradually the content has become more and more ungodly. Those who are not doers of the Word will not listen to God's admonitions and will therefore feed on this folly and be destroyed. The purpose of this warning is to make all those who confess to be worshippers of God more aware of their daily choices in this evil world.

5-11: Then the angel that talked with me went forth, and said unto me, Lift up now thine eyes, and see what is this that goeth forth. And I said, What is it? And he said, This is an ephah that goeth forth. He said moreover,

This is their resemblance through all the earth. And, behold, there was lifted up a talent of lead: and this is a woman that sitteth in the midst of the ephah. And he said, This is wickedness. And he cast it into the midst of the ephah; and he cast the weight of lead upon the mouth thereof. Then lifted I up mine eyes, and looked, and, behold, there came out two women, and the wind was in their wings; for they had wings like the wings of a stork: and they lifted up the ephah between the earth and the heaven. Then said I to the angel that talked with me, Whither do these bear the ephah? And he said unto me, to build it an house in the land of Shinar: and it shall be established, and set there upon her own base.

So according to this dialogue, the flying scroll will be the devil's means of corrupting the whole world and soon or eventually wickedness will come to its fullness and the end will be the wedding feast for those who are ready and the wrath of God for those who participate in wickedness.

The true Gospel is about Jesus fixing everything that Adam and Eve messed up. They made a wrong choice that opened the door to a ton of negative influences and experiences. Jesus always made right choices and He has opened the door to a positive future and has shut the door to the negative forces for those who make the right choice – to believe in and follow Him.

Adam and Eve gave power to the devil and their carnal nature by listening or hearkening to them. Jesus put the flesh and the devil in their place by listening only to God. God told Adam and Eve to choose righteousness, but they chose their own selfish desires instead, thus bringing selfishness into the world. Selfishness is behind all the suffering and bloodshed that goes on here. Jesus denied self and chose to commit the supreme act of agape love in that He shed his own innocent blood for the world – thus making atonement.

Salvation works for those who repent of their ways and receive God as their Father – caregiver and authority figure – and Jesus as their Lord and Savior – providing them with wisdom, power, and grace.

God's ultimate purpose in saving man was to restore him to spiritual life. Love is eternal. Selfishness is deadly. To be spiritually alive is to have God (love) in your spirit. To have eternal life is to receive Jesus (love) and walk by His Spirit and not by the spirit that Adam and Eve chose. Rom: 8:19: For the earnest expectation of the creature waiteth for the manifestation of the sons of God.

The truly saved have covenanted with God to trust and obey Him. God's purpose was to reconcile mankind back to Him. Adam and Eve died spiritually when they listened to Satan instead of Him. Satan became their father. The proper presentation of the gospel will make these things clear because modern understanding had evolved into the idea that God was basically trying to make a way for sinners to go to heaven. Because of that erroneous idea, grace has been exalted above righteousness and truth. To get back to basics we must understand that God wants to be our Father – the one we listen to – the one we heed.

Prov: 4:23-27: Keep thy heart with all diligence; for out of it are the issues of life. Put away from thee a froward mouth, and perverse lips put far from thee. Let thine eyes look right on, and let thine eyelids look straight before thee. Ponder the path of thy feet, and let all thy ways be established. Turn not to the right hand nor to the left: remove thy foot from evil.

Gal: 6:7-8: Be not deceived; God is not mocked: for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap. For he that soweth to his flesh shall of the flesh reap corruption; but he that soweth to the Spirit shall of the Spirit reap life everlasting.

Eph: 2:2-6: Wherein in time past ye walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience: Among whom also we all had our conversation in times past in the lusts of our flesh, fulfilling the desires of the flesh and of the mind; and were by nature the children of wrath, even as others. But God, who is rich in mercy, for his great love wherewith he loved us, Even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved;) And hath raised us up together, and made us sit together in heavenly places in Christ Jesus:

Eph: 4:17-24: This I say therefore, and testify in the Lord, that ye henceforth walk not as other Gentiles walk, in the vanity of their mind, Having the understanding darkened, being alienated from the life of God through the ignorance that is in them, because of the blindness of their heart: Who being past feeling have given themselves over unto lasciviousness, to work all uncleanness with greediness. But ye have not so learned Christ; If so be that ye have heard him, and have been taught by him, as the truth is in Jesus: That ye put off concerning the former conversation the old man, which is corrupt according to the deceitful lusts; And be renewed in the spirit of your mind; And that ye put on the new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness.

Jas: 1:21-24: Wherefore lay apart all filthiness and superfluity of naughtiness, and receive with meekness the engrafted word, which is able to save your souls. But be ye doers of the word, and not hearers only, deceiving your own selves. For if any be a hearer of the word, and not a doer, he is like unto a man beholding his natural face in a glass: For he beholdeth himself, and goeth his way, and straightway forgetteth what manner of man he was.

1Pet: 1:13-16: Wherefore gird up the loins of your mind, be sober, and hope to the end for the grace that is to be brought unto you at the revelation of Jesus Christ; As obedient children, not fashioning yourselves according to the former lusts in your ignorance: But as he which hath called you is holy, so be ye holy in all manner of conversation; Because it is written, Be ye holy; for I am holy.

1Jn: 2:15-17: Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world. If any man love the world, the love of

the Father is not in him. For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, and the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world. And the world passeth away, and the lust thereof: but he that doeth the will of God abideth for ever.

1Jn: 5:18-21: We know that whosoever is born of God sinneth not; but he that is begotten of God keepeth himself, and that wicked one toucheth him not. And we know that we are of God, and the whole world lieth in wickedness. And we know that the Son of God is come, and hath given us an understanding, that we may know him that is true, and we are in him that is true, even in his Son Jesus Christ. This is the true God, and eternal life. Little children, keep yourselves from idols. Amen.

Warning! Worship God, the Creator

Rev: 13:1-6: And I stood upon the sand of the sea, and saw a beast rise up out of the sea, having seven heads and ten horns, and upon his horns ten crowns, and upon his heads the name of blasphemy. 2: And the beast which I saw was like unto a leopard, and his feet were as the feet of a bear, and his mouth as the mouth of a lion: and the dragon gave him his power, and his seat, and great authority. 3: And I saw one of his heads as it were wounded to death; and his deadly wound was healed: and all the world wondered after the beast. 4: And they worshipped the dragon which gave power unto the beast: and they worshipped the beast, saying, Who is like unto the beast? who is able to make war with him? 5: And there was given unto him a mouth speaking great things and blasphemies; and power was given unto him to continue forty and two months. 6: And he opened his mouth in blasphemy against God, to blaspheme his name, and his tabernacle, and them that dwell in heaven.

[Excerpt from AFA Journal-Nov/Dec 2007: CNSNews.com defines the Out Campaign as “a movement started by Dawkins to encourage Americans to proudly display their atheism.” ABC News describes the Blasphemy Challenge as a way “to challenge people to make videos of themselves denying, denouncing or blaspheming the Holy Spirit, and then post them on YouTube.” ABC News also calls it “the cutting edge of a new and emboldened wave of atheism.” The Blasphemy Challenge targets teens while an upcoming movie that may have a similar agenda is likely to appeal to families, especially children.]

What is this beast? It is the nations united – such as in the United Nations or the Common Market. What is the deadly wound? Jesus put Satan under Christians’ feet. In this day, the will of the people resurrected his lie –

Satan used it on Jesus, but Jesus resisted him and put him under His feet. Now most have bought the lie that surely a loving God wouldn't ask difficult or painful things of mankind. The lie is revived and the truth is slain.

How does the beast get to have so much power? The bringing about of this event is in the process right now. Both of the above organizations are working ardently to bring people into agreement with what they believe will bring world peace and prosperity. They are accomplishing their goal of teaching the lawless lies through the schools, through the work-place, and also through legislation and interpretation of legislation. At the right time, the above beast will force his way into office – the majority of nations will be in favor of him. The remaining nations will come into the New World Order reluctantly.

They couldn't have done it without TV and computers. They are very close to achieving their goal of convincing the world population:

- That homosexuality is just a different life-style. [God says in Rom: 1:25-27: Who changed the truth of God into a lie, and worshipped and served the creature more than the Creator, who is blessed for ever. Amen. 26: For this cause God gave them up unto vile affections: for even their women did change the natural use into that which is against nature: 27: And likewise also the men, leaving the natural use of the woman, burned in their lust one toward another; men with men working that which is unseemly, and receiving in themselves that recompense of their error which was meet.]
- That abortion is a woman's right, and that aborted babies should be used for experimentation for the common good. [God says: Thou shall not kill. And choose righteousness.]
- That the youth cannot be expected to abstain from sex so teach them to have sex safely. [God says: Thou shall not commit fornication.]
- That mercy is more important than prudence and justice. [God says they are all very important.]
- That unity is more important than truth. [God says they are both very important.]
- That peace and safety are more important than freedom. [Read the Old Testament; freedom will always be enjoyed or longed after. Peace and safety must be identified within the guidelines of freedom.]
- That all roads lead to God, not just Jesus. [God says in Acts 4:10-12: Be it known unto you all, and to all the people of Israel, that by the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, whom ye crucified, whom God raised from the dead, even by him doth this man stand here before you whole. 11: This is the stone which was set at nought of you builders, which is become the head of the corner. 12: Neither is there salvation in any other: for there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved.]

1Jn: 5:11-12: And this is the record, that God hath given to us eternal life, and this life is in his Son. 12: He that hath the Son hath life; and he that hath not the Son of God hath not life.)

Rev: 13:7-10: And it was given unto him to make war with the saints, and to overcome them: and power was given him over all kindreds, and tongues, and nations. 8: And all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him, whose names are not written in the book of life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world. 9: If any man have an ear, let him hear. 10: He that leadeth into captivity shall go into captivity: he that killeth with the sword must be killed with the sword. Here is the patience and the faith of the saints.

Dan: 7:21-27: I beheld, and the same horn made war with the saints, and prevailed against them; 22: Until the Ancient of days came, and judgment was given to the saints of the most High; and the time came that the saints possessed the kingdom. 23: Thus he said, The fourth beast shall be the fourth kingdom upon earth, which shall be diverse from all kingdoms, and shall devour the whole earth, and shall tread it down, and break it in pieces. 24: And the ten horns out of this kingdom are ten kings that shall arise: and another shall rise after them; and he shall be diverse from the first, and he shall subdue three kings. 25: And he shall speak great words against the most High, and shall wear out the saints of the most High, and think to change times and laws: and they shall be given into his hand until a time and times and the dividing of time. 26: But the judgment shall sit, and they shall take away his dominion, to consume and to destroy it unto the end. 27: And the kingdom and dominion, and the greatness of the kingdom under the whole heaven, shall be given to the people of the saints of the most High, whose kingdom is an everlasting kingdom, and all dominions shall serve and obey him.

It's talking there about removing God's laws to make room for the above precepts and to usher in the most demonic human being ever – the anti-Christ.

2Thess: 2:7-12: For the mystery of iniquity doth already work: only he who now letteth will let, until he be taken out of the way. 8: And then shall that Wicked be revealed, whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy with the brightness of his coming: 9: Even him, whose coming is after the working of Satan with all power and signs and lying wonders, 10: And with all deceivableness of unrighteousness in them that perish; because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved. 11: And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie: 12: That they all might be damned who believed not the truth, but had pleasure in unrighteousness.

Rev: 13:11-12: And I beheld another beast coming up out of the earth; and he had two horns like a lamb, and he spake as a dragon. 12: And he exerciseth all the power of the first beast before him, and causeth the earth and them which dwell therein to worship the first beast, whose deadly wound was healed.

This beast is the one world religion – Babylon revived – and the lawless one or anti-Christ – that will be a conglomeration of all religions. First they must do away with the laws of God and the truth of His Word.

Rev: 13:13-18: And he doeth great wonders, so that he maketh fire come down from heaven on the earth in the sight of men, 14: And deceiveth them that dwell on the earth by the means of those miracles which he had power to do in the sight of the beast; saying to them that dwell on the earth, that they should make an image to the beast, which had the wound by a sword, and did live. 15: And he had power to give life unto the image of the beast that the image of the beast should both speak, and cause that as many as would not worship the image of the beast should be killed. 16: And he causeth all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, to receive a mark in their right hand, or in their foreheads: 17: And that no man might buy or sell, save he that had the mark, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name. 18: Here is wisdom. Let him that hath understanding count the number of the beast: for it is the number of a man; and his number is Six hundred threescore and six.

The man's number is 666. This is the king of the Babylon mentioned above and this number also means man united or joined together. This is anti-Christ and this is the lawless one. This is where people will have to join the New World Order and receive the mark in order to buy and sell. All people will be required to comply with their rules and will therefore have to reject God's teachings. Refer to 2Thess: 2:9-15

Rev: 14:1-7: And I looked, and, lo, a Lamb stood on the mount Sion, and with him an hundred forty and four thousand, having his Father's name written in their foreheads. 2: And I heard a voice from heaven, as the voice of many waters, and as the voice of a great thunder: and I heard the voice of harpers harping with their harps: 3: And they sung as it were a new song before the throne, and before the four beasts, and the elders: and no man could learn that song but the hundred and forty and four thousand, which were redeemed from the earth. 4: These are they which were not defiled with women; for they are virgins. These are they which follow the Lamb whithersoever he goeth. These were redeemed from among men, being the firstfruits unto God and to the Lamb. 5: And in their mouth was found no guile: for they are without fault before the throne of God. 6: And I saw another angel fly in the midst of heaven, having the everlasting gospel to preach unto them that dwell on the earth, and to every nation, and kindred, and tongue, and people, 7: Saying with a loud voice, Fear God, and give glory to him; for the hour of his judgment is come: and worship him that made heaven, and earth, and the sea, and the fountains of waters.

8:12: And there followed another angel, saying, Babylon is fallen, is fallen, that great city, because she made all nations drink of the wine of the wrath of her fornication. 9: And the third angel followed them, saying with a loud voice, If any man worship the beast and his image, and receive his mark in his forehead, or in his hand, 10: The same shall drink of the wine of the wrath of God, which is poured out without mixture into the cup of his indignation; and he shall be tormented with fire and brimstone in the presence of the holy angels, and in the presence of the Lamb: 11: And the smoke of their torment ascendeth up for ever and ever: and they have no rest day nor night, who worship the beast and his image, and whosoever receiveth the mark of his name. 12: Here is the patience of the saints: here are they that keep the commandments of God, and the faith of Jesus.

13-16: And I heard a voice from heaven saying unto me, Write, Blessed are the dead which die in the Lord from henceforth: Yea, saith the Spirit, that they may rest from their labours; and their works do follow them. 14: And I

looked, and behold a white cloud, and upon the cloud one sat like unto the Son of man, having on his head a golden crown, and in his hand a sharp sickle. 15: And another angel came out of the temple, crying with a loud voice to him that sat on the cloud, Thrust in thy sickle, and reap: for the time is come for thee to reap; for the harvest of the earth is ripe. 16: And he that sat on the cloud thrust in his sickle on the earth; and the earth was reaped.

This is talking about those who die because they will not receive the mark of the beast. This is where God harvests His crop. So where the hundred and forty four thousand are mentioned above – the rapture must take place then too as in Rev: 7:2-10 it talks about the hundred and forty four thousand and then depicts the rapture.

(These were the heavenly-minded.) 1 Corinth: 15:45-58: And so it is written, The first man Adam was made a living soul; the last Adam was made a quickening spirit. 46: Howbeit that was not first which is spiritual, but that which is natural; and afterward that which is spiritual. 47: The first man is of the earth, earthy: the second man is the Lord from heaven. 48: As is the earthy, such are they also that are earthy: and as is the heavenly, such are they also that are heavenly. 49: And as we have borne the image of the earthy, we shall also bear the image of the heavenly. 50: Now this I say, brethren, that flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God; neither doth corruption inherit incorruption. 51: Behold, I shew you a mystery; We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed, 52: In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed. 53: For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality. 54: So when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory. 55: O death, where is thy sting? O grave, where is thy victory? 56: The sting of death is sin; and the strength of sin is the law. 57: But thanks be to God, which giveth us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ. 58: Therefore, my beloved brethren, be ye steadfast, unmoveable, always abounding in the work of the Lord, forasmuch as ye know that your labour is not in vain in the Lord.

(These are the earthly minded.) Rev: 14:17-20: And another angel came out of the temple which is in heaven, he also having a sharp sickle. 18: And another angel came out from the altar, which had power over fire; and cried with a loud cry to him that had the sharp sickle, saying, Thrust in thy sharp sickle, and gather the clusters of the vine of the earth; for her grapes are fully ripe. 19: And the angel thrust in his sickle into the earth, and gathered the vine of the earth, and cast it into the great winepress of the wrath of God. 20: And the winepress was trodden without the city, and blood came out of the winepress, even unto the horse bridles, by the space of a thousand and six hundred furlongs.

Uncircumcised Ear – Jer: 6

Jer: 6:8-14: Be thou instructed, O Jerusalem, lest my soul depart from thee; lest I make thee desolate, a land not inhabited. 9: Thus saith the LORD of hosts, They shall throughly glean the remnant of Israel as a vine: turn back thine hand as a grapegatherer into the baskets. 10: To whom shall I speak, and give warning, that they may hear? behold, their ear is uncircumcised, and they cannot hearken: behold, the word of the LORD is unto them a reproach; they have no delight in it. 11: Therefore I am full of the fury of the LORD; I am weary with holding in: I will pour it out upon the children abroad, and upon the assembly of young men together: for even the husband with the wife shall be taken, the aged with him that is full of days. 12: And their houses shall be turned unto others, with their fields and wives together: for I will stretch out my hand upon the inhabitants of the land, saith the LORD. 13: For from the least of them even unto the greatest of them every one is given to covetousness; and from the prophet even unto the priest every one dealeth falsely. 14: They have healed also the hurt of the daughter of my people slightly, saying, Peace, peace; when there is no peace.

Why couldn't the people hear Jeremiah's warning? Because their ears were uncircumcised. This means that in their heart they had not determined to obey God. As Col. 2:11 Amp. V. says, stripping off the body of the flesh [the whole corrupt carnal nature with its passions and lust.] In order to hear what God is saying, a person must humble themselves and repent of their ways and turn to God's ways. They must receive God as their Father and Jesus as their Lord. They must reckon themselves crucified with Christ and resurrected Christ living within.

15-18: Were they ashamed when they had committed abomination? nay, they were not at all ashamed, neither could they blush: therefore they shall fall among them that fall: at the time that I visit them they shall be cast down, saith the LORD. 16: Thus saith the LORD, Stand ye in the ways, and see, and ask for the old paths, where is the good way, and walk therein, and ye shall find rest for your souls. But they said, We will not walk therein. 17: Also I set watchmen over you, saying, Hearken to the sound of the trumpet. But they said, We will not hearken.

18-23: Therefore hear, ye nations, and know, O congregation, what is among them. 19: Hear, O earth: behold, I will bring evil upon this people, even the fruit of their thoughts, because they have not hearkened unto my words, nor to my law, but rejected it. 20: To what purpose cometh there to me incense from Sheba, and the sweet cane from a far country? your burnt offerings are not acceptable, nor your sacrifices sweet unto me. 21: Therefore thus saith the LORD, Behold, I will lay stumblingblocks before this people, and the fathers and the sons together shall fall upon them; the neighbour and his friend shall perish. 22: Thus saith the LORD, Behold, a people cometh from the North Country, and a great nation shall be raised from the sides of the earth. 23: They shall lay hold on bow and spear; they are cruel, and have no mercy; their voice roareth like the sea; and they ride upon horses, set in array as men for war against thee, O daughter of Zion.

I believe this warning applies to the church at this time as it did to Israel at that time. God says that if you are thinking as the world thinks and therefore behaving for the most part as the world behaves, God will not hear your prayers. He also says that behavior is a stumbling block and you will not know the truth when you hear it. You will believe the lie as in 2Thess: 2:3-15.

The people from the north, in this case is the present day theology – the secular theology and the fruit of their own thoughts Christian theology. I'm talking about all the modern Christian understanding that didn't used to be. [Notice Vs: 16] Beware of all theology that goes against the written word of God.

24-26: We have heard the fame thereof: our hands wax feeble: anguish hath taken hold of us, and pain, as of a woman in travail. 25: Go not forth into the field, nor walk by the way; for the sword of the enemy and fear is on every side. 26: O daughter of my people, gird thee with sackcloth, and wallow thyself in ashes: make thee mourning, as for an only son, most bitter lamentation: for the spoiler shall suddenly come upon us.

What needs to be done here is for the church to call the solemn assembly spoken of in Joel: 2:

Joel: 2:1-17: Blow ye the trumpet in Zion, and sound an alarm in my holy mountain: let all the inhabitants of the land tremble: for the day of the LORD cometh, for it is nigh at hand; 2: A day of darkness and of gloominess, a day of clouds and of thick darkness, as the morning spread upon the mountains: a great people and a strong; there hath not been ever the like, neither shall be any more after it, even to the years of many generations. 3: A fire devoureth before them; and behind them a flame burneth: the land is as the garden of Eden before them, and behind them a desolate wilderness; yea, and nothing shall escape them. 4: The appearance of them is as the appearance of horses; and as horsemen, so shall they run. 5: Like the noise of chariots on the tops of mountains shall they leap, like the noise of a flame of fire that devoureth the stubble, as a strong people set in battle array. 6: Before their face the people shall be much pained: all faces shall gather blackness. 7: They shall run like mighty men; they shall climb the wall like men of war; and they shall march every one on his ways, and they shall not break their ranks: 8: Neither shall one thrust another; they shall walk every one in his path: and when they fall upon the sword, they shall not be wounded. 9: They shall run to and fro in the city; they shall run upon the wall, they shall climb up upon the houses; they shall enter in at the windows like a thief. 10: The earth shall quake before them; the heavens shall tremble: the sun and the moon shall be dark, and the stars shall withdraw their shining: 11: And the LORD shall utter his voice before his army: for his camp is very great: for he is strong that executeth his word: for the day of the LORD is great and very terrible; and who can abide it? 12: Therefore also now, saith the LORD, turn ye even to me with all your heart, and with fasting, and with weeping, and with mourning: 13: And rend your heart, and not your garments, and turn unto the LORD your God: for he is gracious and merciful, slow to anger, and of great kindness, and repenteth him of the evil. 14: Who knoweth if he will return and repent, and leave a blessing behind him; even a meat offering and a drink offering unto the LORD your God? 15: Blow the trumpet in Zion, sanctify a fast, call a solemn assembly: 16: Gather the people, sanctify the congregation, assemble the elders, gather the children, and those that suck the breasts: let the bridegroom go forth of his chamber, and the bride out of her closet. 17: Let the priests, the ministers of the LORD, weep

between the porch and the altar, and let them say, Spare thy people, O LORD, and give not thine heritage to reproach, that the heathen should rule over them: wherefore should they say among the people, Where is their God?

18-27: Then will the LORD be jealous for his land, and pity his people. 19: Yea, the LORD will answer and say unto his people, Behold, I will send you corn, and wine, and oil, and ye shall be satisfied therewith: and I will no more make you a reproach among the heathen: 20: But I will remove far off from you the northern army, and will drive him into a land barren and desolate, with his face toward the east sea, and his hinder part toward the utmost sea, and his stink shall come up, and his ill savour shall come up, because he hath done great things. 21: Fear not, O land; be glad and rejoice: for the LORD will do great things. 22: Be not afraid, ye beasts of the field: for the pastures of the wilderness do spring, for the tree beareth her fruit, the fig tree and the vine do yield their strength. 23: Be glad then, ye children of Zion, and rejoice in the LORD your God: for he hath given you the former rain moderately, and he will cause to come down for you the rain, the former rain, and the latter rain in the first month. 24: And the floors shall be full of wheat, and the fats shall overflow with wine and oil. 25: And I will restore to you the years that the locust hath eaten, the cankerworm, and the caterpillar, and the palmerworm, my great army which I sent among you. 26: And ye shall eat in plenty, and be satisfied, and praise the name of the LORD your God, that hath dealt wondrously with you: and my people shall never be ashamed. 27: And ye shall know that I am in the midst of Israel, and that I am the LORD your God, and none else: and my people shall never be ashamed.

The northern army is, in this spiritual warning for the church, Babylonian talk or the same worldly thoughts spoken of in the above verses from Jeremiah. The theology that will bring in the New World Order is that theology that carries the strong delusion spoken of in 2Thess: 2.

28-32: And it shall come to pass afterward, that I will pour out my spirit upon all flesh; and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, your old men shall dream dreams, your young men shall see visions: 29: And also upon the servants and upon the handmaids in those days will I pour out my spirit. 30: And I will shew wonders in the heavens and in the earth, blood, and fire, and pillars of smoke. 31: The sun shall be turned into darkness, and the moon into blood, before the great and the terrible day of the LORD come. 32: And it shall come to pass, that whosoever shall call on the name of the LORD shall be delivered: for in mount Zion and in Jerusalem shall be deliverance, as the LORD hath said, and in the remnant whom the LORD shall call.

This is the finish of the promises spoken of in Acts: 2:17-21.

27-30: I have set thee for a tower and a fortress among my people, that thou mayest know and try their way. 28: They are all grievous revolters, walking with slanders: they are brass and iron; they are all corrupters. 29: The bellows are burned, the lead is consumed of the fire; the founder melteth in vain: for the wicked are not plucked away. 30: Reprobate silver shall men call them, because the LORD hath rejected them.

This is how God sees those who say they are His but are uncircumcised in heart.

Sound the Alarm

Joel: 1-10: Blow ye the trumpet in Zion, and sound an alarm in my holy mountain: let all the inhabitants of the land tremble: for the day of the LORD cometh, for it is nigh at hand; 2: A day of darkness and of gloominess, a day of clouds and of thick darkness, as the morning spread upon the mountains: a great people and a strong; there hath not been ever the like, neither shall be any more after it, even to the years of many generations. 3: A fire devoureth before them; and behind them a flame burneth: the land is as the garden of Eden before them, and behind them a desolate wilderness; yea, and nothing shall escape them. 4: The appearance of them is as the appearance of horses; and as horsemen, so shall they run. 5: Like the noise of chariots on the tops of mountains shall they leap, like the noise of a flame of fire that devoureth the stubble, as a strong people set in battle array. 6: Before their face the people shall be much pained: all faces shall gather blackness. 7: They shall run like mighty men; they shall climb the wall like men of war; and they shall march every one on his ways, and they shall not break their ranks: 8: Neither shall one thrust another; they shall walk every one in his path: and when they fall upon the sword, they shall not be wounded. 9: They shall run to and fro in the city; they shall run upon the wall, they shall climb up upon the houses; they shall enter in at the windows like a thief. 10: The earth shall quake before them; the heavens shall tremble: the sun and the moon shall be dark, and the stars shall withdraw their shining:

I am blowing a trumpet in Zion right now. I am sounding the alarm. These verses are talking about the strong delusion spoken of in 1Thess: 2:7-14:

For the mystery of iniquity doth already work: only he who now letteth will let, until he be taken out of the way. 8: And then shall that Wicked be revealed, whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy with the brightness of his coming: 9: Even him, whose coming is after the working of Satan with all power and signs and lying wonders, 10: And with all deceivableness of unrighteousness in them that perish; because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved. 11: And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie: 12: That they all might be damned who believed not the truth, but had pleasure in unrighteousness. 13: But we are bound to give thanks alway to God for you, brethren beloved of the Lord, because God hath from the beginning chosen you to salvation through sanctification of the

Spirit and belief of the truth: 14: Whereunto he called you by our gospel, to the obtaining of the glory of our Lord Jesus Christ.

God's army spoken of above which brings darkness is the strong delusion. That delusion is what is going forth throughout the earth today – lies and deception to make people believe that God is far more interested in mercy and kindness than He is in righteousness and justice. WRONG!

There are many lies and subtleties out there today. Satan deceived Eve by telling her she would be wise like the gods. He's telling the same lie today. He has many influential people believing that people united can make their own way and do not need to listen to what the Bible teaches. I'm referring to The New World Order. The idea is as old as Babylon, in fact it is the Babylon spoken about in the New Testament. When God says in Revelation, "Come out of her, My people," He means do not agree with the new teachings of the day, stick with the Bible.

Satan tried to suggest to Jesus that His loving Heavenly Father surely would not ask Him to bear the cross, but Jesus only followed one voice – God's. Satan is telling that same old lie today. He is getting people to believe that surely a loving God would not send nice people to hell. A loving God would not send a fornicator to hell, after all He created sex and He knows how powerful it is and how weak mankind is. On and on go his lies in this area. He's the one telling people that Jesus shed His blood so that even though we are sinners we can go to heaven. That sounds close to the truth, but to someone who wants to go to heaven, but does not want to obey God, it's a lie. The truth is that a person must repent and receive Jesus in order to be saved from sin and death.

Joel: 2:11: And the LORD shall utter his voice before his army: for his camp is very great: for he is strong that executeth his word: for the day of the LORD is great and very terrible; and who can abide it?

12-14: Therefore also now, saith the LORD, turn ye even to me with all your heart, and with fasting, and with weeping, and with mourning: 13: And rend your heart, and not your garments, and turn unto the LORD your God: for he is gracious and merciful, slow to anger, and of great kindness, and repenteth him of the evil. 14: Who knoweth if he will return and repent, and leave a blessing behind him; even a meat offering and a drink offering unto the LORD your God?

What can we do to combat these lies?

Joel: 2:15-17: Blow the trumpet in Zion, sanctify a fast, call a solemn assembly: 16: Gather the people, sanctify the congregation, assemble the elders, gather the children, and those that suck the breasts: let the bridegroom go forth of his chamber, and the bride out of her closet. 17: Let the priests, the ministers of the LORD, weep between the porch and the altar, and let them say, Spare thy people, O LORD, and give not thine heritage to

reproach, that the heathen should rule over them: wherefore should they say among the people, Where is their God?

18-20: Then will the LORD be jealous for his land, and pity his people. 19: Yea, the LORD will answer and say unto his people, Behold, I will send you corn, and wine, and oil, and ye shall be satisfied therewith: and I will no more make you a reproach among the heathen: 20: But I will remove far off from you the northern army, and will drive him into a land barren and desolate, with his face toward the east sea, and his hinder part toward the utmost sea, and his stink shall come up, and his ill savour shall come up, because he hath done great things.

21-24: Fear not, O land; be glad and rejoice: for the LORD will do great things. 22: Be not afraid, ye beasts of the field: for the pastures of the wilderness do spring, for the tree beareth her fruit, the fig tree and the vine do yield their strength. 23: Be glad then, ye children of Zion, and rejoice in the LORD your God: for he hath given you the former rain moderately, and he will cause to come down for you the rain, the former rain, and the latter rain in the first month. 24: And the floors shall be full of wheat, and the fats shall overflow with wine and oil.

25-27: And I will restore to you the years that the locust hath eaten, the cankerworm, and the caterpillar, and the palmerworm, my great army which I sent among you. 26: And ye shall eat in plenty, and be satisfied, and praise the name of the LORD your God, that hath dealt wondrously with you: and my people shall never be ashamed. 27: And ye shall know that I am in the midst of Israel, and that I am the LORD your God, and none else: and my people shall never be ashamed.

28-31: And it shall come to pass afterward, that I will pour out my spirit upon all flesh; and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, your old men shall dream dreams, your young men shall see visions: 29: And also upon the servants and upon the handmaids in those days will I pour out my spirit. 30: And I will shew wonders in the heavens and in the earth, blood, and fire, and pillars of smoke. 31: The sun shall be turned into darkness, and the moon into blood, before the great and the terrible day of the LORD come.

32: And it shall come to pass, that whosoever shall call on the name of the LORD shall be delivered: for in mount Zion and in Jerusalem shall be deliverance, as the LORD hath said, and in the remnant whom the LORD shall call.

This is God's battle plan. He wants His church to fast. Not a little dab will do you fast, but an all out serious fast. Not just some of His people, He wants the whole church as one body to gather together and do this all out fast. By each person dropping everything and gathering together and crying out with fervency to God. Weeping over the condition of the church and the world and crying out for revival.

God says if the church will do this, letting everything go and just get before the Lord until He says the mission is accomplished, then He will feed and nurture His church. He will restore our fortunes and He will give us the latter rain. In other words He will pour out His Spirit as in the beginning – at Pentecost.

What has the church done wrong?

Ps: 81:8-9: Hear, O my people, and I will testify unto thee: O Israel, if thou wilt hearken unto me; 9: There shall no strange god be in thee; neither shalt thou worship any strange god.

10: I am the LORD thy God, which brought thee out of the land of Egypt: open thy mouth wide, and I will fill it.

11-12: But my people would not hearken to my voice; and Israel would none of me. 12: So I gave them up unto their own hearts' lust: and they walked in their own counsels.

13-16: Oh that my people had hearkened unto me, and Israel had walked in my ways! 14: I should soon have subdued their enemies, and turned my hand against their adversaries. 15: The haters of the LORD should have submitted themselves unto him: but their time should have endured for ever. 16: He should have fed them also with the finest of the wheat: and with honey out of the rock should I have satisfied thee.

God's Strange Army

Hab: 1: 1-4: The burden which Habakkuk the prophet did see. 2: O LORD, how long shall I cry, and thou wilt not hear! even cry out unto thee of violence, and thou wilt not save! 3: Why dost thou shew me iniquity, and cause me to behold grievance? for spoiling and violence are before me: and there are that raise up strife and contention. 4: Therefore the law is slacked, and judgment doth never go forth: for the wicked doth compass about the righteous; therefore wrong judgment proceedeth.

5-11: Behold ye among the heathen, and regard, and wonder marvellously: for I will work a work in your days,

which ye will not believe, though it be told you. 6: For, lo, I raise up the Chaldeans, that bitter and hasty nation, which shall march through the breadth of the land, to possess the dwelling-places that are not theirs. 7: They are terrible and dreadful: their judgment and their dignity shall proceed of themselves. 8: Their horses also are swifter than the leopards, and are more fierce than the evening wolves: and their horsemen shall spread themselves, and their horsemen shall come from far; they shall fly as the eagle that hasteth to eat. 9: They shall come all for violence: their faces shall sup up as the east wind, and they shall gather the captivity as the sand. 10: And they shall scoff at the kings, and the princes shall be a scorn unto them: they shall deride every strong hold; for they shall heap dust, and take it. 11: Then shall his mind change, and he shall pass over, and offend, imputing this his power unto his god.

12-17: Art thou not from everlasting, O LORD my God, mine Holy One? we shall not die. O LORD, thou hast ordained them for judgment; and, O mighty God, thou hast established them for correction. 13: Thou art of purer eyes than to behold evil, and canst not look on iniquity: wherefore lookest thou upon them that deal treacherously, and holdest thy tongue when the wicked devoureth the man that is more righteous than he? 14: And makest men as the fishes of the sea, as the creeping things, that have no ruler over them? 15: They take up all of them with the angle, they catch them in their net, and gather them in their drag: therefore they rejoice and are glad. 16: Therefore they sacrifice unto their net, and burn incense unto their drag; because by them their portion is fat, and their meat plenteous. 17: Shall they therefore empty their net, and not spare continually to slay the nations?

Hab: 2:1-7: I will stand upon my watch, and set me upon the tower, and will watch to see what he will say unto me, and what I shall answer when I am reproved. 2: And the LORD answered me, and said, Write the vision, and make it plain upon tables, that he may run that readeth it. 3: For the vision is yet for an appointed time, but at the end it shall speak, and not lie: though it tarry, wait for it; because it will surely come, it will not tarry. 4: Behold, his soul which is lifted up is not upright in him: but the just shall live by his faith. 5: Yea also, because he transgresseth by wine, he is a proud man, neither keepeth at home, who enlargeth his desire as hell, and is as death, and cannot be satisfied, but gathereth unto him all nations, and heapeth unto him all people: 6: Shall not all these take up a parable against him, and a taunting proverb against him, and say, Woe to him that increaseth that which is not his! how long? and to him that ladeth himself with thick clay! 7: Shall they not rise up suddenly that shall bite thee, and awake that shall vex thee, and thou shalt be for booties unto them?

8-12: Because thou hast spoiled many nations, all the remnant of the people shall spoil thee; because of men's blood, and for the violence of the land, of the city, and of all that dwell therein. 9: Woe to him that coveteth an evil covetousness to his house, that he may set his nest on high, that he may be delivered from the power of evil! 10: Thou hast consulted shame to thy house by cutting off many people, and hast sinned against thy soul. 11: For the stone shall cry out of the wall, and the beam out of the timber shall answer it. 12: Woe to him that buildeth a town with blood, and stablisheth a city by iniquity!

13-20: Behold, is it not of the LORD of hosts that the people shall labour in the very fire, and the people shall

wear themselves for very vanity? 14: For the earth shall be filled with the knowledge of the glory of the LORD, as the waters cover the sea. 15: Woe unto him that giveth his neighbour drink, that putteth thy bottle to him, and maketh him drunken also, that thou mayest look on their nakedness! 16: Thou art filled with shame for glory: drink thou also, and let thy foreskin be uncovered: the cup of the LORD's right hand shall be turned unto thee, and shameful spewing shall be on thy glory. 17: For the violence of Lebanon shall cover thee, and the spoil of beasts, which made them afraid, because of men's blood, and for the violence of the land, of the city, and of all that dwell therein. 18: What profiteth the graven image that the maker thereof hath graven it; the molten image, and a teacher of lies, that the maker of his work trusteth therein, to make dumb idols? 19: Woe unto him that saith to the wood, Awake; to the dumb stone, Arise, it shall teach! Behold, it is laid over with gold and silver, and there is no breath at all in the midst of it. 20: But the LORD is in his holy temple: let all the earth keep silence before him.

(Habakkuk cries out about a situation that was going on then that is very similar to what is happening today – through different teachings and attitudes the importance of correct doctrine and of righteous living had been greatly diminished. I believe the book of Habakkuk can be applied to what is happening today and that is what I am doing with it here.

The emphasis today is on grace and on charity. Just when the world is breaking all boundaries and all confines, the church is getting more and more lax about righteousness and holiness. Remember, Jesus said the love of the great body grows cold due to iniquity. How can we care about one another when the means of truly helping people is taken out of the way. For it is right choices and right conduct that get people out of messes and keep them out of messes.

Lawlessness and confusion do not provide good ground for ministry. All one can do is emphasize grace and charity, but no one can get emotionally involved because there is no hope of truly helping the down and out start a new and better life. Just when tough love is called for there is nothing but mercy and tolerance. The truth that God greatly emphasized in the Bible that crime doesn't pay, that foolishness is costly, that wrong choices lead to death and destruction are no longer relevant because the assumption is that Jesus made a way for sinners to go to heaven anyway.

This is the situation today and it was the situation in Habakkuk's day. God's answer in verses 5-11 of chapter one is that God will raise up the Chaldeans to teach the world a lesson. The Chaldeans are the Babylonians – the foolish beliefs and teachings of today are babble. God is going to let these foolish lies run their course for the purpose of proving how very wrong and deadly they are. But God says, "The just shall live by faith." (Hab: 2:4) Those who believe the Bible and love the truth will not be fooled. This goes along with 2 Thess: 2 and Dan: 11:30-39.

God's answer is that He is showing mankind the utter devastation that occurs when they utterly rebel against

Him – the one and only true God. God will make an indisputable distinction between those who obey Him and those who do not. He will have this final history lesson be so profound and so graphic that never again can anyone challenge His goodness, His wisdom, nor His knowledge.

This will be the grand finale. The things of Revelation will happen because of the lies going forth in this day and age.

In chapter three, Habakkuk understands that the good times are gone until God is finished with this lesson and he determines to praise the Lord and rejoice though there be no calves in the stall, etc. This will be the determination of those who live by faith as they wait for their deliverance.)

Hab: 3:2-7: O LORD, I have heard thy speech, and was afraid: O LORD, revive thy work in the midst of the years, in the midst of the years make known; in wrath remember mercy. 3: God came from Teman, and the Holy One from mount Paran. Selah. His glory covered the heavens, and the earth was full of his praise. 4: And his brightness was as the light; he had horns coming out of his hand: and there was the hiding of his power. 5: Before him went the pestilence, and burning coals went forth at his feet. 6: He stood, and measured the earth: he beheld, and drove asunder the nations; and the everlasting mountains were scattered, the perpetual hills did bow: his ways are everlasting. 7: I saw the tents of Cushan in affliction: and the curtains of the land of Midian did tremble.

8-15: Was the LORD displeased against the rivers? was thine anger against the rivers? was thy wrath against the sea, that thou didst ride upon thine horses and thy chariots of salvation? 9: Thy bow was made quite naked, according to the oaths of the tribes, even thy word. Selah. Thou didst cleave the earth with rivers. 10: The mountains saw thee, and they trembled: the overflowing of the water passed by: the deep uttered his voice, and lifted up his hands on high. 11: The sun and moon stood still in their habitation: at the light of thine arrows they went, and at the shining of thy glittering spear. 12: Thou didst march through the land in indignation, thou didst thresh the heathen in anger. 13: Thou wentest forth for the salvation of thy people, even for salvation with thine anointed; thou woundedst the head out of the house of the wicked, by discovering the foundation unto the neck. Selah. 14: Thou didst strike through with his staves the head of his villages: they came out as a whirlwind to scatter me: their rejoicing was as to devour the poor secretly. 15: Thou didst walk through the sea with thine horses, through the heap of great waters.

16-19: When I heard, my belly trembled; my lips quivered at the voice: rottenness entered into my bones, and I trembled in myself, that I might rest in the day of trouble: when he cometh up unto the people, he will invade them with his troops. 17: Although the fig tree shall not blossom, neither shall fruit be in the vines; the labour of the olive shall fail, and the fields shall yield no meat; the flock shall be cut off from the fold, and there shall be no herd in the stalls: 18: Yet I will rejoice in the LORD, I will joy in the God of my salvation. 19: The LORD God is my strength, and he will make my feet like hinds' feet, and he will make me to walk upon mine high

places. To the chief singer on my stringed instruments.

The Beginnings of Birth Pangs

We are in the beginnings of birth pangs. Get ready!

Matt: 24:1-3: And Jesus went out, and departed from the temple: and his disciples came to him for to shew him the buildings of the temple. 2: And Jesus said unto them, See ye not all these things? verily I say unto you, There shall not be left here one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down. 3: And as he sat upon the mount of Olives, the disciples came unto him privately, saying, Tell us, when shall these things be? and what shall be the sign of thy coming, and of the end of the world?

4-8: And Jesus answered and said unto them, Take heed that no man deceive you. 5: For many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ; and shall deceive many. 6: And ye shall hear of wars and rumours of wars: see that ye be not troubled: for all these things must come to pass, but the end is not yet. 7: For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: and there shall be famines, and pestilences, and earthquakes, in divers places. 8: All these are the beginning of sorrows.

(Take heed that no man deceive you. That is very noteworthy today. There is all manner of teaching out there today. Cleave to the Holy Bible. Beware of new doctrines – new understanding that changes the understanding of holiness.)

9-14: Then shall they deliver you up to be afflicted, and shall kill you: and ye shall be hated of all nations for my name's sake. 10: And then shall many be offended, and shall betray one another, and shall hate one another. 11: And many false prophets shall rise, and shall deceive many. 12: And because iniquity shall abound, the love of many shall wax cold. 13: But he that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved. 14: And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations; and then shall the end come.

15-22: When ye therefore shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy place, (whoso readeth, let him understand:) 16: Then let them which be in Judaea flee into the mountains: 17: Let him which is on the housetop not come down to take any thing out of his house: 18: Neither let him which is in the field return back to take his clothes. 19: And woe unto them that are with child, and to them that give suck in those days! 20: But pray ye that your flight be not in the winter, neither on the sabbath day: 21: For then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be. 22: And except those days should be shortened, there should no flesh be saved: but for the elect's sake those days shall be shortened.

(The abomination of desolation will be when the anti-christ sits on the throne in the temple and declares himself to be God. He will have been known as a disciple of Christ's. He will look like the new Christ – the picture painted of Christ today – tolerant of sin, jovial, fun-loving, and laid back. He will be the worst of sinners though that may not be known at that time. When he shows his true colors, he will be much worse than Hitler.)

Dan: 12:9-12: And he said, Go thy way, Daniel: for the words are closed up and sealed till the time of the end. 10: Many shall be purified, and made white, and tried; but the wicked shall do wickedly: and none of the wicked shall understand; but the wise shall understand. 11: And from the time that the daily sacrifice shall be taken away, and the abomination that maketh desolate set up, there shall be a thousand two hundred and ninety days. 12: Blessed is he that waiteth, and cometh to the thousand three hundred and five and thirty days.

2Thess: 2:3-4: Let no man deceive you by any means: for that day shall not come, except there come a falling away first, and that man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition; 4: Who opposeth and exalteth himself above all that is called God, or that is worshipped; so that he as God sitteth in the temple of God, shewing himself that he is God.

23-28: Then if any man shall say unto you, Lo, here is Christ, or there; believe it not. 24: For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall shew great signs and wonders; insomuch that, if it were possible, they shall deceive the very elect. 25: Behold, I have told you before. 26: Wherefore if they shall say unto you, Behold, he is in the desert; go not forth: behold, he is in the secret chambers; believe it not. 27: For as the lightning cometh out of the east, and shineth even unto the west; so shall also the coming of the Son of man be. 28: For wheresoever the carcase is, there will the eagles be gathered together.

(When Jesus comes everyone will see Him.)

29-31: Immediately after the tribulation of those days shall the sun be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light, and the stars shall fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens shall be shaken: 30: And then shall appear the sign of the Son of man in heaven: and then shall all the tribes of the earth mourn, and they shall see

the Son of man coming in the clouds of heaven with power and great glory. 31: And he shall send his angels with a great sound of a trumpet, and they shall gather together his elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other.

(He's talking about the tribulation we are presently going through and are about to go through – Wars, pestilence, epidemic diseases, tsunamis, and economic collapse, etc. This is not the great tribulation – that comes when the anti-christ shows his true colors as in 1Thess: 5:1-3: But of the times and the seasons, brethren, ye have no need that I write unto you. 2: For yourselves know perfectly that the day of the Lord so cometh as a thief in the night. 3: For when they shall say, Peace and safety; then sudden destruction cometh upon them, as travail upon a woman with child; and they shall not escape. After this tribulation all hell breaks loose as described in verse 29.)

32-36: Now learn a parable of the fig tree; When his branch is yet tender, and putteth forth leaves, ye know that summer is nigh: 33: So likewise ye, when ye shall see all these things, know that it is near, even at the doors. 34: Verily I say unto you, This generation shall not pass, till all these things be fulfilled. 35: Heaven and earth shall pass away, but my words shall not pass away. 36: But of that day and hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels of heaven, but my Father only.

(He wants us to know when the time is near.)

37-42: But as the days of Noe were, so shall also the coming of the Son of man be. 38: For as in the days that were before the flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noe entered into the ark, 39: And knew not until the flood came, and took them all away; so shall also the coming of the Son of man be. 40: Then shall two be in the field; the one shall be taken, and the other left. 41: Two women shall be grinding at the mill; the one shall be taken, and the other left. 42: Watch therefore: for ye know not what hour your Lord doth come.

(It will happen unexpectedly. Notice that those who are ready will be taken. Yes, taken out of here and this happens before all hell breaks loose, because if it were after, Christians would not be taken by surprise, they would be constantly watching for their deliverance.)

43-51: But know this, that if the goodman of the house had known in what watch the thief would come, he would have watched, and would not have suffered his house to be broken up. 44: Therefore be ye also ready: for in such an hour as ye think not the Son of man cometh. 45: Who then is a faithful and wise servant, whom his lord hath made ruler over his household, to give them meat in due season? 46: Blessed is that servant, whom his lord when he cometh shall find so doing. 47: Verily I say unto you, That he shall make him ruler over all his goods. 48: But and if that evil servant shall say in his heart, My lord delayeth his coming; 49: And shall begin to

smite his fellowservants, and to eat and drink with the drunken; 50: The lord of that servant shall come in a day when he looketh not for him, and in an hour that he is not aware of, 51: And shall cut him asunder, and appoint him his portion with the hypocrites: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

(Jesus wants us to be using our talents and watching for His return until He comes.)

Revelation 12

Rev: 12:1-4: And there appeared a great wonder in heaven; a woman clothed with the sun, and the moon under her feet, and upon her head a crown of twelve stars: 2: And she being with child cried, travailing in birth, and pained to be delivered. 3: And there appeared another wonder in heaven; and behold a great red dragon, having seven heads and ten horns, and seven crowns upon his heads. 4: And his tail drew the third part of the stars of heaven, and did cast them to the earth: and the dragon stood before the woman which was ready to be delivered, for to devour her child as soon as it was born.

(This is a symbolic vision. The woman is the New Covenant (Note Vs. 17) and she is giving birth to true Christianity. The dragon is the deceiver, accuser, traducer – Satan. The ten nation confederacy could be the Common Market or the UN. Why do I say it could be the UN? Because it fits the description better that the Common Market and ten is the number for fullness or completeness. So when the Bible says ten nations it probably means the full number of nations. The seven horns or powers – seven means the perfect number or perfected number. So the ten heads and seven horns means the full number of nations perfected for their task of destroying the whore. This is about destroying Babylon forever. [Babylon is religion – all teachings and belief systems that appose the written word of God.]

The dragon's tail sweeps a third of the stars to earth means the fallen angels are involved in what's going on. It's their hay day. God is letting mankind get what they are asking for – their freedom from Him. Along with freedom from Him comes sin, sickness, disease, turmoil, darkness, perversion, war and death. That's where the fallen angels come in. They do the opposite of what good angels do.)

5: And she brought forth a man child, who was to rule all nations with a rod of iron: and her child was caught up unto God, and to his throne.

(The male child that is taken up to heaven are those who are watching, active and alert – watching for the return of their Lord. They are ready and will be taken up to heaven for the wedding feast. When this is accomplished – what Jesus set out to do has been brought to fruition.)

6-12: And the woman fled into the wilderness, where she hath a place prepared of God, that they should feed her there a thousand two hundred and threescore days. [almost 3 ½ yrs.] 7: And there was war in heaven: Michael and his angels fought against the dragon; and the dragon fought and his angels, 8: And prevailed not; neither was

their place found any more in heaven. 9: And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world: he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him. 10: And I heard a loud voice saying in heaven, Now is come salvation, and strength, and the kingdom of our God, and the power of his Christ: for the accuser of our brethren is cast down, which accused them before our God day and night. 11: And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony; and they loved not their lives unto the death. 12: Therefore rejoice, ye heavens, and ye that dwell in them. Woe to the inhabitors of the earth and of the sea! for the devil is come down unto you, having great wrath, because he knoweth that he hath but a short time.

(The church and Bibles then must go into hiding because the anti-christ has come into power and has forbid what he and his crowd call intolerance and discrimination. This means that he has decreed that it is unlawful to say that abortion, homo-sexuality, and euthanasia, or stem-cell experiments are wrong or a sin. And he has decreed that it is unlawful to believe or say that Jesus is the only way to God. If you are caught doing so, you will be beheaded.)

13-14: And when the dragon saw that he was cast unto the earth, he persecuted the woman which brought forth the man child. 14: And to the woman were given two wings of a great eagle, that she might fly into the wilderness, into her place, where she is nourished for a time, and times, and half a time, from the face of the serpent.

15-17: And the serpent cast out of his mouth water as a flood after the woman, that he might cause her to be carried away of the flood. 16: And the earth helped the woman, and the earth opened her mouth, and swallowed up the flood which the dragon cast out of his mouth. 17: And the dragon was wroth with the woman, and went to make war with the remnant of her seed, which keep the commandments of God, and have the testimony of Jesus Christ.

(The anti-Christ explains the missing Christians with some huge lie that vilifies Christianity. For a moment it will look as if the world is going to buy this lie which would destroy the validity of the New Covenant, but God has something profound happen that stops that lie. The enemy will be totally steamed and he will then hunt down Christians to behead them. This means that the liar, seducer, bully will used every trick in the book to get Christians to speak the unlawful things above so that he can behead them.

Christians will still have to overcome by the blood of the lamb and their word of their testimony. They will have to do what those at the wedding feast did – put on the Lord Jesus Christ – He said do not fear man. He said be like your master. It is written in Rev: 21:7-8: He that overcometh shall inherit all things; and I will be his God, and he shall be my son. 8: But the fearful, and unbelieving, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, shall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone: which is the second death.)

Cares, Riches, and Lusts

In Mk: 4:18-19 Jesus taught: And these are they which are sown among thorns; such as hear the word, And the cares of this world, and the deceitfulness of riches, and the lusts of other things entering in, choke the word, and it becometh unfruitful.

He did not use the word thorns lightly for in Josh: 23:6-13 it says; Be ye therefore very courageous to keep and to do all that is written in the book of the law of Moses, that ye turn not aside therefrom to the right hand or to the left; That ye come not among these nations, these that remain among you; neither make mention of the name of their gods, nor cause to swear by them, neither serve them, nor bow yourselves unto them: But cleave unto the LORD your God, as ye have done unto this day. For the LORD hath driven out from before you great nations and strong: but as for you, no man hath been able to stand before you unto this day. One man of you shall chase a thousand: for the LORD your God, he it is that fighteth for you, as he hath promised you. Take good heed therefore unto yourselves, that ye love the LORD your God. Else if ye do in any wise go back, and cleave unto the remnant of these nations, even these that remain among you, and shall make marriages with them, and go in unto them, and they to you: Know for a certainty that the LORD your God will no more drive out any of these nations from before you; but they shall be snares and traps unto you, and scourges in your sides, and thorns in your eyes, until ye perish from off this good land which the LORD your God hath given you.

These instructions are for Christians too. Jesus has made a way into the Promise Land and Christians are to follow in His footsteps. He took the land this way – by getting rid of the enemy and having nothing to do with him. In His case and in the Christian's case the enemies are the things that separate the believer from God. In order for a Christian to overcome, they must cultivate the ground of their heart, getting rid of weeds and thorns and planting the Word of God intent upon growing good crops (faith, strength, knowledge, and understanding). They must tend the garden and keep the weeds and pests out of it and make sure the crops are well watered (Bible teaching) and are exposed to sunlight (love of God).

Jesus used the word thorns for this reason. Christians who want to be caught up when Jesus comes must not be caught up in the cares of this world (involved with the things the world is involved with), nor the deceitfulness of riches (thinking money will solve their problems), nor lust or high pressure for other things (thinking they must have all the latest gadgets, technology, and fashions and is caught up in figuring out ways to get these things and in dreaming of having and enjoying them when they get them.)

In Lk: 21:34-36 Jesus warns; And take heed to yourselves, lest at any time your hearts be overcharged with surfeiting, and drunkenness, and cares of this life, and so that day come upon you unawares. 35: For as a snare shall it come on all them that dwell on the face of the whole earth. 36: Watch ye therefore, and pray always, that ye may be accounted worthy to escape all these things that shall come to pass, and to stand before the Son of man.

So I am giving this warning that the cares of this world, the deceitfulness of riches, the lust for other things will cause you to miss the coming of the Lord and you will be unprepared for what's coming on the earth.

And that day come upon you unawares, Jesus said. What day? The day He talks about in Mk: 13:33-37: Take ye heed, watch and pray: for ye know not when the time is. For the Son of man is as a man taking a far journey, who left his house, and gave authority to his servants, and to every man his work, and commanded the porter to watch. Watch ye therefore: for ye know not when the master of the house cometh, at even, or at midnight, or at the cock-crowing, or in the morning: Lest coming suddenly he find you sleeping. 37: And what I say unto you I say unto all, Watch.

And in Matt: 24:36-46: But of that day and hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels of heaven, but my Father only. But as the days of Noe were, so shall also the coming of the Son of man be. For as in the days that were before the flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noe entered into the ark, And knew not until the flood came, and took them all away; so shall also the coming of the Son of man be. Then shall two be in the field; the one shall be taken, and the other left. Two women shall be grinding at the mill; the one shall be taken, and the other left. Watch therefore: for ye know not what hour your Lord doth come. But know this, that if the goodman of the house had known in what watch the thief would come, he would have watched, and would not have suffered his house to be broken up. Therefore be ye also ready: for in such an hour as ye think not the Son of man cometh. Who then is a faithful and wise servant, whom his lord hath made ruler over his household, to give them meat in due season? Blessed is that servant, whom his lord when he cometh shall find so doing.

47-51: Verily I say unto you, That he shall make him ruler over all his goods. But and if that evil servant shall say in his heart, My lord delayeth his coming; And shall begin to smite his fellowservants, and to eat and drink with the drunken; The lord of that servant shall come in a day when he looketh not for him, and in an hour that he is not aware of, And shall cut him asunder, and appoint him his portion with the hypocrites: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

Yes, Jesus expects every Christian to be busy producing. Look at Jn: 15:1-6: I am the true vine, and my Father is the husbandman. Every branch in me that beareth not fruit he taketh away: and every branch that beareth fruit, he purgeth it, that it may bring forth more fruit. Now ye are clean through the word which I have spoken unto

you. Abide in me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, except it abide in the vine; no more can ye, except ye abide in me. I am the vine, ye are the branches: He that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: for without me ye can do nothing. If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered; and men gather them, and cast them into the fire, and they are burned.

The reader of this article is forewarned. No more fooling around. You belong to God and you better get with His program because evil times are coming. Be prepared!

Keep Active and Alert

(From what I've observed, I would say most Christians are not ready for what is coming on the earth. I've written a few articles that are intended to help Christians put on the full armor of God and be ready for the evil day. This is another one. Jesus gave some important instruction here.)

Lk: 21:5-8: And as some spake of the temple, how it was adorned with goodly stones and gifts, he said, 6: As for these things which ye behold, the days will come, in the which there shall not be left one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down. 7: And they asked him, saying, Master, but when shall these things be? and what sign will there be when these things shall come to pass? 8: And he said, Take heed that ye be not deceived: for many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ; and the time draweth near: go ye not therefore after them.

9-11: But when ye shall hear of wars and commotions, be not terrified: for these things must first come to pass; but the end is not by and by. 10: Then said he unto them, Nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: 11: And great earthquakes shall be in divers places, and famines, and pestilences; and fearful sights and great signs shall there be from heaven.

(I know that He was talking to Jews and that some think this message is only for their situation. I don't believe that. There are several reasons why I don't. One is that He may have started off talking about the destruction of the temple, but He seems to have used that subject to catapult into warnings about the end times. The warnings are actually for all times of testing and trial. I am working to prepare people for the end times. Notice He says the end is not yet in verse 9. He goes on to describe some signs of the times)

12-15: But before all these, they shall lay their hands on you, and persecute you, delivering you up to the synagogues, and into prisons, being brought before kings and rulers for my name's sake. 13: And it shall turn to you for a testimony. 14: Settle it therefore in your hearts, not to meditate before what ye shall answer: 15: For I will give you a mouth and wisdom, which all your adversaries shall not be able to gainsay nor resist.

16-19: And ye shall be betrayed both by parents, and brethren, and kinsfolks, and friends; and some of you shall they cause to be put to death. 17: And ye shall be hated of all men for my name's sake. 18: But there shall not an hair of your head perish. 19: In your patience possess ye your souls.

(Of course this part about kinfolk being opposed to one another can be related to Jews rejecting Christ as the Messiah and forbidding their loved ones to believe in Him, but it should also be applied to what is happening in our day. There is a division growing in the so called "body of Christ".)

There should be a division because:

Lk: 51-53: Suppose ye that I am come to give peace on earth? I tell you, Nay; but rather division: 52: For from henceforth there shall be five in one house divided, three against two, and two against three. 53: The father shall be divided against the son, and the son against the father; the mother against the daughter, and the daughter against the mother; the mother in law against her daughter in law, and the daughter in law against her mother in law.

1Jn: 2:18-19: Little children, it is the last time: and as ye have heard that antichrist shall come, even now are there many antichrists; whereby we know that it is the last time. 19: They went out from us, but they were not of us; for if they had been of us, they would no doubt have continued with us: but they went out, that they might be made manifest that they were not all of us.

Matt: 7:13-21: Enter ye in at the strait gate: for wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many there be which go in thereat: 14: Because strait is the gate, and narrow is the way, which leadeth unto life, and few there be that find it. 15: Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves. 16: Ye shall know them by their fruits. Do men gather grapes of thorns, or figs of thistles? 17: Even so every good tree bringeth forth good fruit; but a corrupt tree bringeth forth evil fruit. 18: A good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit, neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit. 19: Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire. 20: Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them. 21: Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven.

Mk: 8:38: Whosoever therefore shall be ashamed of me and of my words in this adulterous and sinful generation; of him also shall the Son of man be ashamed, when he cometh in the glory of his Father with the holy angels.

2Tim: 1:8: Be not thou therefore ashamed of the testimony of our Lord, nor of me his prisoner: but be thou partaker of the afflictions of the gospel according to the power of God;

(As you can see hatred of the Truth causes division and for the Jews and Christians the argument is – is Jesus the Messiah? For the church the argument is – do Christians have to give up sin in order to receive Jesus? The battle is in full swing. Children will indeed turn their parents and/or siblings into the authorities because they won't bend – they won't agree with the anti-Christ spirit that is manifest today.)

Matt: 24:20-24: And when ye shall see Jerusalem compassed with armies, then know that the desolation thereof is nigh. 21: Then let them which are in Judaea flee to the mountains; and let them which are in the midst of it depart out; and let not them that are in the countries enter thereinto. 22: For these be the days of vengeance, that all things which are written may be fulfilled. 23: But woe unto them that are with child, and to them that give suck, in those days! for there shall be great distress in the land, and wrath upon this people. 24: And they shall fall by the edge of the sword, and shall be led away captive into all nations: and Jerusalem shall be trodden down of the Gentiles, until the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled.

(I think that part is a warning to those who live in Israel, it was for back when Jerusalem was destroyed after Jesus' death and now when Israel is again surrounded by armies.)

25-28: And there shall be signs in the sun, and in the moon, and in the stars; and upon the earth distress of nations, with perplexity; the sea and the waves roaring; 26: Men's hearts failing them for fear, and for looking after those things which are coming on the earth: for the powers of heaven shall be shaken. 27: And then shall they see the Son of man coming in a cloud with power and great glory. 28: And when these things begin to come to pass, then look up, and lift up your heads; for your redemption draweth nigh.

(We do see these things happening and our Lord has told us to be ready and He has told us to look beyond what is happening to our redemption. We are to read it as a sign that our redemption is very close.)

29-33: And he spake to them a parable; Behold the fig tree, and all the trees; 30: When they now shoot forth, ye see and know of your own selves that summer is now nigh at hand. 31: So likewise ye, when ye see these things

come to pass, know ye that the kingdom of God is nigh at hand. 32: Verily I say unto you, This generation shall not pass away, till all be fulfilled. 33: Heaven and earth shall pass away: but my words shall not pass away.

34-36: And take heed to yourselves, lest at any time your hearts be overcharged with surfeiting, and drunkenness, and cares of this life, and so that day come upon you unawares. 35: For as a snare shall it come on all them that dwell on the face of the whole earth. 36: Watch ye therefore, and pray always, that ye may be accounted worthy to escape all these things that shall come to pass, and to stand before the Son of man.

(This is the part I was getting to. I have another article about cares and such, but this is about watching and being ready. Paul admonished Christians to live as though they had no cares in this present world. He wanted their attention centered on serving the Lord. 1Cor: 7:29-33 Jesus instructs us to be aware of what is taking place in these end times and to live in such a way that we will be accounted worthy to escape and to stand before Him. This escape may be the rapture or it may just be that since we have paid attention to the written Word of God we cannot be fooled and therefore will escape from the enemy's net. The stand before the Son of man may mean at the rapture or it may mean that we were ready when our time came and so we past the test. In any case, Jesus said we are to pay attention and when the enemy makes a move, we should have a counter move ready.

We are in a war. The only way to win individually and as the church – the witness – is to put on the full armor and do battle. You may say, “I don't like to fight. I'm a lover.” The Bible says, all must fight and all must love – there is a time and season for both. The war is in full swing. Choose what side you are on and stand and fight!)

Lk: 19:12-13: He said therefore, A certain nobleman went into a far country to receive for himself a kingdom, and to return. 13: And he called his ten servants, and delivered them ten pounds, and said unto them, Occupy till I come.

Jesus' Letters to the Churches

Jesus' letters show His true Spirit toward sin and toward righteousness. Therefore, they are very important not only for instruction, but to show what God does really cares about. It will show that the spirit loose today that claims God is mainly interested in whether we show clarity or not and is not too upset with misconduct and sin is

false. I will emphasize the truths that the church seems to have lost or mislaid.

Rev: 2:1-3: Unto the angel of the church of Ephesus write; These things saith he that holdeth the seven stars in his right hand, who walketh in the midst of the seven golden candlesticks; 2: I know thy works, and thy labour, and thy patience, and how thou canst not bear them which are evil: and thou hast tried them which say they are apostles, and are not, and hast found them liars: 3: And hast borne, and hast patience, and for my name's sake hast laboured, and hast not fainted.

4-7: Nevertheless I have somewhat against thee, because thou hast left thy first love. 5: Remember therefore from whence thou art fallen, and repent, and do the first works; or else I will come unto thee quickly, and will remove thy candlestick out of his place, except thou repent. 6: But this thou hast, that thou hatest the deeds of the Nicolaitans, which I also hate. 7: He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches; To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the tree of life, which is in the midst of the paradise of God.

(Jesus emphasizes His office as head of the church. He then tells the church at Ephesus what they are doing that pleases Him. That is the tactful way of doing things. If He had given the negative first, He risks turning them off so that they could not accept the negative nor rejoice in the positive. They were doing a good many things right. I would guess that most churches today would think they were doing quite well if they had this list to their credit.

They were obviously hard at work for the Lord and not only that, but they were practicing patience. They were addressing the issues and standing against sin. What more could He want?

He wanted something more so much so that He warned them that their candlestick was in danger. In other words, they would not even be considered His church if they did not do their first works; which I would guess was to love, care, and reach out to people, having the good news flourishing in their hearts.

Please take note that Jesus doesn't settle for half measures or partial truth.)

8-9: And unto the angel of the church in Smyrna write; These things saith the first and the last, which was dead, and is alive; 9: I know thy works, and tribulation, and poverty, (but thou art rich) and I know the blasphemy of them which say they are Jews, and are not, but are the synagogue of Satan.

10-11: Fear none of those things which thou shalt suffer: behold, the devil shall cast some of you into prison, that ye may be tried; and ye shall have tribulation ten days: be thou faithful unto death, and I will give thee a

crown of life. 11: He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches; He that overcometh shall not be hurt of the second death.

(Jesus identifies Himself as the resurrected Christ to put across what He wants to say to the church at Smyrna. This church was having it rough – persecution and poverty. And apparently the Jews were calling their Savior bad names. That’s why He identifies Himself as the one who was dead and is alive – because their very lives were being threatened.

Jesus tells them not to fear what they might suffer, even jail. He lets them know it will be for only a definite period of time and that they are to focus on the crown of life that they are winning.

He does not reprimand them for anything. They apparently were just trying to be Christ followers. He encourages them.)

12-13: And to the angel of the church in Pergamos write; These things saith he which hath the sharp sword with two edges; 13: I know thy works, and where thou dwellest, even where Satan’s seat is: and thou holdest fast my name, and hast not denied my faith, even in those days wherein Antipas was my faithful martyr, who was slain among you, where Satan dwelleth.

14-15: But I have a few things against thee, because thou hast there them that hold the doctrine of Balaam, who taught Balac to cast a stumblingblock before the children of Israel, to eat things sacrificed unto idols, and to commit fornication. 15: So hast thou also them that hold the doctrine of the Nicolaitans, which thing I hate.

16-17: Repent; or else I will come unto thee quickly, and will fight against them with the sword of my mouth. 17: He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches; To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the hidden manna, and will give him a white stone, and in the stone a new name written, which no man knoweth saving he that receiveth it.

(The church at Pergamos was unfortunate enough to be located in a wicked city. The church was holding fast to Jesus’ name and keeping the faith even in the midst of violent persecution. But that was not enough for Jesus. He wanted them to have nothing to do with those whose lewd behavior was a stumbling block to all those who might have been drawn to Him by them.

He calls for them to repent of their tolerance of these things. If they wouldn’t repent, they would be cut off from the true vine or true church by the sword of Jesus’ mouth which is the Word of God. He will quote scripture that tell what happens to those who practice such things.

If they repented of this wrongful tolerance, they would be included with the recipients of the hidden manna and white stone. I don't know what these two mean exactly, but I know it's going to be good)

18-19: And unto the angel of the church in Thyatira write; These things saith the Son of God, who hath his eyes like unto a flame of fire, and his feet are like fine brass; 19: I know thy works, and charity, and service, and faith, and thy patience, and thy works; and the last to be more than the first.

20-23: Notwithstanding I have a few things against thee, because thou sufferest that woman Jezebel, which calleth herself a prophetess, to teach and to seduce my servants to commit fornication, and to eat things sacrificed unto idols. 21: And I gave her space to repent of her fornication; and she repented not. 22: Behold, I will cast her into a bed, and them that commit adultery with her into great tribulation, except they repent of their deeds. 23: And I will kill her children with death; and all the churches shall know that I am he which searcheth the reins and hearts: and I will give unto every one of you according to your works.

24-29: But unto you I say, and unto the rest in Thyatira, as many as have not this doctrine, and which have not known the depths of Satan, as they speak; I will put upon you none other burden. 25: But that which ye have already hold fast till I come. 26: And he that overcometh, and keepeth my works unto the end, to him will I give power over the nations: 27: And he shall rule them with a rod of iron; as the vessels of a potter shall they be broken to shivers: even as I received of my Father. 28: And I will give him the morning star. 29: He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches.

(He comes to the Church at Thyatira emphasizing His office as the son of the living God. He mentions his flaming eyes and brass feet. Apparently the flaming eyes cannot look on things such as Jezebel is doing and the feet of brass address how Christians should walk. Brass is used in musical instruments, it is used to note high-ranking offices, and it is used as a term to describe the bold. Jesus notes their works, which are impressive – works of charity, service, faith and patience.

Then He tells them what He thinks of those who teach others to behave lewdly or commit adultery and He reveals the punishment that is coming on those who practice these things. He wants the church to know just how bad an abomination these things are. He warns them that He searches the heart and know what's hidden there.

He encourages those who are holding fast to the truth to continue to do so till He comes. He assures them that their reward will be to rule with Him and enforce the truth forever.)

Rev: 3:1-3: And unto the angel of the church in Sardis write; These things saith he that hath the seven Spirits of

God, and the seven stars; I know thy works, that thou hast a name that thou livest, and art dead. 2: Be watchful, and strengthen the things which remain, that are ready to die: for I have not found thy works perfect before God. 3: Remember therefore how thou hast received and heard, and hold fast, and repent. If therefore thou shalt not watch, I will come on thee as a thief, and thou shalt not know what hour I will come upon thee.

4-6: Thou hast a few names even in Sardis which have not defiled their garments; and they shall walk with me in white: for they are worthy. 5: He that overcometh, the same shall be clothed in white raiment; and I will not blot out his name out of the book of life, but I will confess his name before my Father, and before his angels. 6: He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches.

(To the church at Sardis, Jesus points out that He is the fullness of the Spirit and that that church was not living up to their calling in any way. He tells them to pay attention and to do their homework otherwise they are about to lose it all.

He then encourages the few who have not defiled their garments, telling them that they will walk with Him in white. He again promises to confess the name of those who overcome to the Father and that their names will be found listed in the book of life.)

7-9: And to the angel of the church in Philadelphia write; These things saith he that is holy, he that is true, he that hath the key of David, he that openeth, and no man shutteth; and shutteth, and no man openeth; 8: I know thy works: behold, I have set before thee an open door, and no man can shut it: for thou hast a little strength, and hast kept my word, and hast not denied my name. 9: Behold, I will make them of the synagogue of Satan, which say they are Jews, and are not, but do lie; behold, I will make them to come and worship before thy feet, and to know that I have loved thee.

10-11: Because thou hast kept the word of my patience, I also will keep thee from the hour of temptation, which shall come upon all the world, to try them that dwell upon the earth. 11: Behold, I come quickly: hold that fast which thou hast, that no man take thy crown.

12-13: Him that overcometh will I make a pillar in the temple of my God, and he shall go no more out: and I will write upon him the name of my God, and the name of the city of my God, which is new Jerusalem, which cometh down out of heaven from my God: and I will write upon him my new name. 13: He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches.

(He shows Himself as holy and truth to the church of brotherly love. He finds no fault with them. He tells them that He has opened a door to them and that no man can shut it. Based on what Jesus said, I think the key of

David is reverential fear and awe of the Lord. Once one is fully armed with it, God can open doors for them, because he or she will heed the holy and true.

He tells them that because they have been true to Him, He will spare them from going through the great tribulation. He assures them also that those who say they belong to God but don't obey Him will bow down to those who do revere and obey Him.

This time the over-comers are promised to be publicly acknowledged as belonging to God, having Jesus in their heart, and that they are citizens of the new Jerusalem. And not only a citizen, but an important citizen – a pillar [support] of God's temple.)

14-17: And unto the angel of the church of the Laodiceans write; These things saith the Amen, the faithful and true witness, the beginning of the creation of God; 15: I know thy works, that thou art neither cold nor hot: I would thou wert cold or hot. 16: So then because thou art lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will spue thee out of my mouth. 17: Because thou sayest, I am rich, and increased with goods, and have need of nothing; and knowest not that thou art wretched, and miserable, and poor, and blind, and naked:

18-19: I counsel thee to buy of me gold tried in the fire, that thou mayest be rich; and white raiment, that thou mayest be clothed, and that the shame of thy nakedness do not appear; and anoint thine eyes with eyesalve, that thou mayest see. 19: As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten: be zealous therefore, and repent.

20-22: Behold, I stand at the door, and knock: if any man hear my voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with me. 21: To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with me in my throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with my Father in his throne. 22: He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches.

(Jesus addresses the church at Laodicea presenting Himself as the Amen – the last word, the faithful and true witness, and the beginning of creation. Apparently their lukewarm works were evidence that they were not a faithful and true witness. Here He makes it completely clear what will happen to those who are not faithful and true – who are luke warm in their heart and their behavior toward God. They will lose their way. They will not overcome. They will not be acknowledged as belonging to Him.

According to Peter it is the Christian's faith that is tried to see if it is gold. So Jesus is telling them to shape up and be faithful and true to Him and to put on their white [pure] garments. The New Testament tells us what to put off and what to put on. Christians that do not heed these things that Jesus is referring to will be caught naked and vulnerable. He tells them to tend to the matter of seeing with their spiritual eyes. True to character, He then

assures them that He is being hard on them because He loves them.

He gives us a picture of Him standing at the door of our heart knocking, if we let Him in, He will give us spiritual food and share its true meaning with us. And He finishes by promising that the over-comer will sit with Him on His throne.)

There you have it church. Heed these seven letters and you will overcome. You will eat of the tree of life and live forever. You will be given a new name – a fitting and highly honorable name. You will be given heavenly garments, acknowledged as prominent citizens of the New Jerusalem, and you will sit with Jesus on His throne and reign with Him.

The Word of God

This is for all those who believe or were told that God is overlooking sin because of the blood. Read this very carefully. God tells us all through the Bible that He is doing away with sin and the sinner. If you don't get rid of sin by repenting of it now, God will deal with you as He says here:

Rev: 19:1-6: And after these things I heard a great voice of much people in heaven, saying, Alleluia; Salvation, and glory, and honour, and power, unto the Lord our God: For true and righteous are his judgments: for he hath judged the great whore, which did corrupt the earth with her fornication, and hath avenged the blood of his servants at her hand: And again they said, Alleluia. And her smoke rose up for ever and ever. And the four and twenty elders and the four beasts fell down and worshipped God that sat on the throne, saying, Amen; Alleluia. And a voice came out of the throne, saying, Praise our God, all ye his servants, and ye that fear him, both small and great. And I heard as it were the voice of a great multitude, and as the voice of many waters, and as the voice of mighty thunderings, saying, Alleluia: for the Lord God omnipotent reigneth.

7-10: Let us be glad and rejoice, and give honour to him: for the marriage of the Lamb is come, and his wife hath made herself ready. And to her was granted that she should be arrayed in fine linen, clean and white: for the fine linen is the righteousness of saints. And he saith unto me, Write, Blessed are they which are called unto the marriage supper of the Lamb. And he saith unto me, These are the true sayings of God. And I fell at his feet to

worship him. And he said unto me, See thou do it not: I am thy fellow-servant, and of thy brethren that have the testimony of Jesus: worship God: for the testimony of Jesus is the spirit of prophecy.

11-16: And I saw heaven opened, and behold a white horse; and he that sat upon him was called Faithful and True, and in righteousness he doth judge and make war. His eyes were as a flame of fire, and on his head were many crowns; and he had a name written, that no man knew, but he himself. And he was clothed with a vesture dipped in blood: and his name is called The Word of God. And the armies which were in heaven followed him upon white horses, clothed in fine linen, white and clean. And out of his mouth goeth a sharp sword, that with it he should smite the nations: and he shall rule them with a rod of iron: and he treadeth the winepress of the fierceness and wrath of Almighty God. And he hath on his vesture and on his thigh a name written, KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS.

17-21: And I saw an angel standing in the sun; and he cried with a loud voice, saying to all the fowls that fly in the midst of heaven, Come and gather yourselves together unto the supper of the great God; That ye may eat the flesh of kings, and the flesh of captains, and the flesh of mighty men, and the flesh of horses, and of them that sit on them, and the flesh of all men, both free and bond, both small and great. And I saw the beast, and the kings of the earth, and their armies, gathered together to make war against him that sat on the horse, and against his army. And the beast was taken, and with him the false prophet that wrought miracles before him, with which he deceived them that had received the mark of the beast, and them that worshipped his image. These both were cast alive into a lake of fire burning with brimstone. And the remnant were slain with the sword of him that sat upon the horse, which sword proceeded out of his mouth: and all the fowls were filled with their flesh.

Woe to the Foolish Prophets

Ezek: 13:1-2: And the word of the LORD came unto me, saying, 2: Son of man, prophesy against the prophets of Israel that prophesy, and say thou unto them that prophesy out of their own hearts,

(The foolish prophets I have in mind in this paper are those who address the church, but are speaking out of their own heart and understanding rather than from the written word and God's Spirit. This article is intended to show the difference between God's message and the dreamer.)

3-5: Hear ye the word of the LORD; 3: Thus saith the Lord GOD; Woe unto the foolish prophets, that follow their own spirit, and have seen nothing! 4: O Israel, thy prophets are like the foxes in the deserts. 5: Ye have not gone up into the gaps, neither made up the hedge for the house of Israel to stand in the battle in the day of the LORD.

(The first thing the false prophets don't do, which causes them to perceive God's message wrongly, is that they are blind to the fact that the people don't have on the full armor of God, yet they assure them that they are safe. God hates this. No one is safe unless they have on the full armor of God.)

6-9: They have seen vanity and lying divination, saying, The LORD saith: and the LORD hath not sent them: and they have made others to hope that they would confirm the word. 7: Have ye not seen a vain vision, and have ye not spoken a lying divination, whereas ye say, The LORD saith it; albeit I have not spoken? 8: Therefore thus saith the Lord GOD; Because ye have spoken vanity, and seen lies, therefore, behold, I am against you, saith the Lord GOD. 9: And mine hand shall be upon the prophets that see vanity, and that divine lies: they shall not be in the assembly of my people, neither shall they be written in the writing of the house of Israel, neither shall they enter into the land of Israel; and ye shall know that I am the Lord GOD.

(God is saying here, that because the teachers and preachers are not telling it like it is, they and all the people will not be able to go forward with Him. They will stay the same – not poured from one vessel to another. See what happened to Moab: Jer: 48:7-12: For because thou hast trusted in thy works and in thy treasures, thou shalt also be taken: and Chemosh shall go forth into captivity with his priests and his princes together. 8: And the spoiler shall come upon every city, and no city shall escape: the valley also shall perish, and the plain shall be destroyed, as the LORD hath spoken. 9: Give wings unto Moab, that it may flee and get away: for the cities thereof shall be desolate, without any to dwell therein. 10: Cursed be he that doeth the work of the LORD

deceitfully, and cursed be he that keepeth back his sword from blood. 11: Moab hath been at ease from his youth, and he hath settled on his lees, and hath not been emptied from vessel to vessel, neither hath he gone into captivity: therefore his taste remained in him, and his scent is not changed. 12: Therefore, behold, the days come, saith the LORD, that I will send unto him wanderers, that shall cause him to wander, and shall empty his vessels, and break their bottles.)

10-16: Because, even because they have seduced my people, saying, Peace; and there was no peace; and one built up a wall, and, lo, others daubed it with untempered mortar: 11: Say unto them which daub it with untempered mortar, that it shall fall: there shall be an overflowing shower; and ye, O great hailstones, shall fall; and a stormy wind shall rend it. 12: Lo, when the wall is fallen, shall it not be said unto you, Where is the daubing wherewith ye have daubed it? 13: Therefore thus saith the Lord GOD; I will even rend it with a stormy wind in my fury; and there shall be an overflowing shower in mine anger, and great hailstones in my fury to consume it. 14: So will I break down the wall that ye have daubed with untempered mortar, and bring it down to the ground, so that the foundation thereof shall be discovered, and it shall fall, and ye shall be consumed in the midst thereof: and ye shall know that I am the LORD. 15: Thus will I accomplish my wrath upon the wall, and upon them that have daubed it with untempered mortar, and will say unto you, The wall is no more, neither they that daubed it; 16: To wit, the prophets of Israel which prophesy concerning Jerusalem, and which see visions of peace for her, and there is no peace, saith the Lord GOD.

(Notice that God calls it seducing His people when speakers assure them that it is well with them when it is not. People look at me funny when I call a spade a spade these days. People are used to beating around the bush and mellowing everything. He calls it building with weak materials. He is angry because His children's houses are not ready for the storm.

Note what Jesus said in Matt: 7:24-28: Therefore whosoever heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them, I will liken him unto a wise man, which built his house upon a rock: 25: And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell not: for it was founded upon a rock. 26: And every one that heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them not, shall be likened unto a foolish man, which built his house upon the sand: 27: And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell: and great was the fall of it. 28: And it came to pass, when Jesus had ended these sayings, the people were astonished at his doctrine:

Here again, today the people are being assured of their well-being, yet they are not doing what Jesus taught.)

17-23: Likewise, thou son of man, set thy face against the daughters of thy people, which prophesy out of their own heart; and prophesy thou against them, 18: And say, Thus saith the Lord GOD; Woe to the women that sew pillows to all armholes, and make kerchiefs upon the head of every stature to hunt souls! Will ye hunt the souls of my people, and will ye save the souls alive that come unto you? 19: And will ye pollute me among my people

for handfuls of barley and for pieces of bread, to slay the souls that should not die, and to save the souls alive that should not live, by your lying to my people that hear your lies? 20: Wherefore thus saith the Lord GOD; Behold, I am against your pillows, wherewith ye there hunt the souls to make them fly, and I will tear them from your arms, and will let the souls go, even the souls that ye hunt to make them fly. 21: Your kerchiefs also will I tear, and deliver my people out of your hand, and they shall be no more in your hand to be hunted; and ye shall know that I am the LORD. 22: Because with lies ye have made the heart of the righteous sad, whom I have not made sad; and strengthened the hands of the wicked, that he should not return from his wicked way, by promising him life: 23: Therefore ye shall see no more vanity, nor divine divinations: for I will deliver my people out of your hand: and ye shall know that I am the LORD.

(How does this apply to today? The pillows and kerchiefs imply the use of magic and there's a lot of that going on as well as Christians paying attention to the Zodiac simply because they are not being taught that God hates divination. But I'm going to address the wily ways in which the gospel is presented in many cases today. Often people are told that all they have to do is what it says in Rom: 10:9-10 and they will be saved or they take John 3:16 and tell people that that is all there is to it in order to be saved.)

Let's look at these verses:

Rom: 10: 9-10: That if thou shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and shalt believe in thine heart that God hath raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved. 10: For with the heart man believeth unto righteousness; and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation.

John 3:16: For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life.

(They tell people these things and then make the people who are proclaiming all of God's word the bad guys. You know – Bible-thumpers – long-nosed finger pointers – legalist – super-Christians.

That's how they are making the righteous sad and strengthening the arm of the wicked.

Those two verses are true, but they must be taken in context with all of scripture and therefore the truth is that if you believe Jesus is the Son of God and confess Him as Lord, you will act like it – if He is Lord, you will listen to what He teaches. If He has saved you – you have His Spirit living within you and you live your life led by it.

Rom: 8

Back to what God is saying here in Ezekiel, why is God so angry? Because when the gospel is mishandled, people only pay attention to some of what God has taught and therefore they are not equipped to overcome. When they do not overcome, they take others down with them and the number who are hurt by this practice or lack of it multiplies as fast as rabbits do. All the ills of the church and America can be traced to this mishandling of the gospel. God has given Christians everything they need to overcome. Church should be the place where they share every word of God and see that the people are fully equipped to overcome and to help others overcome.)

Matt: 4:3-4: And when the tempter came to him, he said, If thou be the Son of God, command that these stones be made bread. 4: But he answered and said, It is written, Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God.

2Cor: 2:17: For we are not as many, which corrupt the word of God: but as of sincerity, but as of God, in the sight of God speak we in Christ.

2Cor: 4:2: But have renounced the hidden things of dishonesty, not walking in craftiness, nor handling the word of God deceitfully; but by manifestation of the truth commending ourselves to every man's conscience in the sight of God.

The Saints Are Given Over

Dan: 7:1-3: In the first year of Belshazzar king of Babylon Daniel had a dream and visions of his head upon his bed: then he wrote the dream, and told the sum of the matters. 2: Daniel spake and said, I saw in my vision by night, and, behold, the four winds of the heaven strove upon the great sea. 3: And four great beasts came up from the sea, diverse one from another.

(The beasts are political powers or kingdoms.)

4: The first was like a lion, and had eagle's wings: I beheld till the wings thereof were plucked, and it was lifted up from the earth, and made stand upon the feet as a man, and a man's heart was given to it.

(The lion is considered the king of the jungle. An eagle can lock his wings and soar above the most violent of storms. This kingdom was a mighty conqueror and could soar above the storms of life. Sounds like the kingdom of God. Those who live in the kingdom of God can live as conquerors and can soar above the storms. But look what happened. Over time he lost his wings and his lion heart and became a mere man. This, I believe has happened to the church in general.

It happens when man forgets who God is. An emancipation has taken place and the authority has become the servant and the child has become the authority. Before Dr. Spock, parents were the authority in the home. Now children call the shots. This is what has happened in the church also. So called Christians are trying to use God to get what they want. The theme of today's gospel is about what God wants to do for people. I heard a song today that told of God's supply saying, if you need this and that I will be whatever for you. It even said, "If you need a pillow, I'll be your pillow." We're talking about God Almighty. Father!

I know that it is true that God loves us and wants to do many wonderful things for us, but I've got news – He can only do those wonderful things for those who are in right relationship with Him. He is Father. We are children. He is God. We are as helpless as sheep in His sight. Jesus never talked about the rewards without talking about the duties. When He talked about God's part, He also talked about our part. A relationship has a part for each participator. Children must trust and obey, and then Father can heap blessings on us.

When we get back into a place of repentance where we can have truth and understanding again we will be saved from ourselves. But I'm getting ahead of myself. Daniel prays that further on.)

5: And behold another beast, a second, like to a bear, and it raised up itself on one side, and it had three ribs in the mouth of it between the teeth of it: and they said thus unto it, Arise, devour much flesh.

(The original interpretation was in terms of earthly kingdoms or empires and the one above was Babylon and this one Persia, but I have been given a spiritual interpretation as you can see and so we will not be talking about earthly kingdoms. We will relate this to what's happening spiritually.

Because the lion-hearted became a mere man in his thinking – the church no longer operated super-naturally, the bear was able to devour a portion of God's blessing to the church.)

6: After this I beheld, and lo another, like a leopard, which had upon the back of it four wings of a fowl; the beast had also four heads; and dominion was given to it.

(The leopard, for the purpose of this article, represents subtleness. Subtly, teaching and understanding of the gospel changed. As a leopard can't change its spots, the church could not change God's gospel, but it changed. Instead of God's way being the desire of the church, four desires emerged and came into power – a desire to be saved and serve God, but to serve mammon also, a desire to go to heaven, but to enjoy worldly pleasure while here, a desire to live a godly life, but think like the world, a desire to have God, but to be able to call the shots. The leopard subtly came into dominion.)

7-8: After this I saw in the night visions, and behold a fourth beast, dreadful and terrible, and strong exceedingly; and it had great iron teeth: it devoured and brake in pieces, and stamped the residue with the feet of it: and it was diverse from all the beasts that were before it; and it had ten horns. 8: I considered the horns, and, behold, there came up among them another little horn, before whom there were three of the first horns plucked up by the roots: and, behold, in this horn were eyes like the eyes of man, and a mouth speaking great things.

(Because these things happened to the church, the beast (the anti-Christ) is coming into power. There is something that can be done. Let's see what Daniel teaches.)

9-12: I beheld till the thrones were cast down, and the Ancient of days did sit, whose garment was white as snow, and the hair of his head like the pure wool: his throne was like the fiery flame, and his wheels as burning fire. 10: A fiery stream issued and came forth from before him: thousand thousands ministered unto him, and ten thousand times ten thousand stood before him: the judgment was set, and the books were opened. 11: I beheld then because of the voice of the great words which the horn spake: I beheld even till the beast was slain, and his body destroyed, and given to the burning flame. 12: As concerning the rest of the beasts, they had their dominion taken away: yet their lives were prolonged for a season and time.

(This describes the God we should be serving. And this is what will happen to the beast and his followers. But before that happens, the saints will be given over to the beast for a time. Let's read on.)

13-14: I saw in the night visions, and, behold, one like the Son of man came with the clouds of heaven, and came to the Ancient of days, and they brought him near before him. 14: And there was given him dominion, and glory, and a kingdom, that all people, nations, and languages, should serve him: his dominion is an everlasting dominion, which shall not pass away, and his kingdom that which shall not be destroyed.

15-18: I Daniel was grieved in my spirit in the midst of my body, and the visions of my head troubled me. 16: I

came near unto one of them that stood by, and asked him the truth of all this. So he told me, and made me know the interpretation of the things. 17: These great beasts, which are four, are four kings, which shall arise out of the earth. 18: But the saints of the most High shall take the kingdom, and possess the kingdom for ever, even for ever and ever.

(This is the final outcome – my God reigns! Rev: 17:14, 19:6 But more has to happen. Let's look.)

19-20: Then I would know the truth of the fourth beast, which was diverse from all the others, exceeding dreadful, whose teeth were of iron, and his nails of brass; which devoured, brake in pieces, and stamped the residue with his feet; 20: And of the ten horns that were in his head, and of the other which came up, and before whom three fell; even of that horn that had eyes, and a mouth that spake very great things, whose look was more stout than his fellows.

(This is where we're at on God's timetable right now.)

21-28: I beheld, and the same horn made war with the saints, and prevailed against them; 22: Until the Ancient of days came, and judgment was given to the saints of the most High; and the time came that the saints possessed the kingdom. 23: Thus he said, The fourth beast shall be the fourth kingdom upon earth, which shall be diverse from all kingdoms, and shall devour the whole earth, and shall tread it down, and break it in pieces. 24: And the ten horns out of this kingdom are ten kings that shall arise: and another shall rise after them; and he shall be diverse from the first, and he shall subdue three kings. 25: And he shall speak great words against the most High, and shall wear out the saints of the most High, and think to change times and laws: and they shall be given into his hand until a time and times and the dividing of time. 26: But the judgment shall sit, and they shall take away his dominion, to consume and to destroy it unto the end. 27: And the kingdom and dominion, and the greatness of the kingdom under the whole heaven, shall be given to the people of the saints of the most High, whose kingdom is an everlasting kingdom, and all dominions shall serve and obey him. 28: Hitherto is the end of the matter. As for me Daniel, my cogitations much troubled me, and my countenance changed in me: but I kept the matter in my heart.

(I said there was something we need to do. We'll find out what that is in Chapter 9.)

Dan: 8:9-14: And out of one of them came forth a little horn, which waxed exceeding great, toward the south, and toward the east, and toward the pleasant land. 10: And it waxed great, even to the host of heaven; and it cast down some of the host and of the stars to the ground, and stamped upon them. 11: Yea, he magnified himself even to the prince of the host, and by him the daily sacrifice was taken away, and the place of his sanctuary was cast down. 12: And an host was given him against the daily sacrifice by reason of transgression, and it cast down the truth to the ground; and it practised, and prospered. 13: Then I heard one saint speaking, and another saint

said unto that certain saint which spake, How long shall be the vision concerning the daily sacrifice, and the transgression of desolation, to give both the sanctuary and the host to be trodden under foot? 14: And he said unto me, Unto two thousand and three hundred days; then shall the sanctuary be cleansed.

(The anti-Christ spirit will prevail and the saints – that's church people who have compromised the Word – will be deceived and join the anti-Christ. Those who stand their ground will be ridiculed and ignored. They will have no influence over the church or the world at that time. Rev: 13 also)

Dan: 9:1-2: In the first year of Darius the son of Ahasuerus, of the seed of the Medes, which was made king over the realm of the Chaldeans; 2: In the first year of his reign I Daniel understood by books the number of the years, whereof the word of the LORD came to Jeremiah the prophet, that he would accomplish seventy years in the desolations of Jerusalem.

(The Chaldeans are the Babylonians and Rev: 17 and 18 foretell of spiritual Babylon's fall.

Spiritual Babylon is all philosophy that is not from God. It's Babbling. The church represented as the City of Peace here will be overrun with these subtle mutations of the truth for 70 years or the perfect number of years. That would be 70 years from its conception and that could be traced back to where the church first started to get along with the world.)

(This prayer of Daniel's is what the church needs to pray in the fashion described in Joel. Call a solemn assembly. Drop everything and go to the house of prayer and cry out to God in agony of spirit.)

3-7: And I set my face unto the Lord God, to seek by prayer and supplication, with fasting, and sackcloth, and ashes: 4: And I prayed unto the LORD my God, and made my confession, and said, O Lord, the great and dreadful God, keeping the covenant and mercy to them that love him, and to them that keep his commandments; 5: We have sinned, and have committed iniquity, and have done wickedly, and have rebelled, even by departing from thy precepts and from thy judgments: 6: Neither have we hearkened unto thy servants the prophets, which spake in thy name to our kings, our princes, and our fathers, and to all the people of the land. 7: O Lord, righteousness belongeth unto thee, but unto us confusion of faces, as at this day; to the men of Judah, and to the inhabitants of Jerusalem, and unto all Israel, that are near, and that are far off, through all the countries whither thou hast driven them, because of their trespass that they have trespassed against thee.

(Daniel addresses the downfall of God's people – we are in this derision and confusion due to our own sin . . .)

8-14: O Lord, to us belongeth confusion of face, to our kings, to our princes, and to our fathers, because we have sinned against thee. 9: To the Lord our God belong mercies and forgivenesses, though we have rebelled against him; 10: Neither have we obeyed the voice of the LORD our God, to walk in his laws, which he set before us by his servants the prophets. 11: Yea, all Israel have transgressed thy law, even by departing, that they might not obey thy voice; therefore the curse is poured upon us, and the oath that is written in the law of Moses the servant of God, because we have sinned against him. 12: And he hath confirmed his words, which he spake against us, and against our judges that judged us, by bringing upon us a great evil: for under the whole heaven hath not been done as hath been done upon Jerusalem. 13: As it is written in the law of Moses, all this evil is come upon us: yet made we not our prayer before the LORD our God, that we might turn from our iniquities, and understand thy truth. 14: Therefore hath the LORD watched upon the evil, and brought it upon us: for the LORD our God is righteous in all his works which he doeth: for we obeyed not his voice.

(The church is guilty of not obeying God's Word. You may ask, "What Word?" Put on the full armor of God. Protect you heart for out of it are the issues of life. Man does not live by bread alone, but by every Word of God. You cannot serve God and mammon. You are not your own, you have been bought with a price. Be ye holy as He is holy. Need I go on?

Daniel says in verse 13: Yet made we not our prayer before the LORD our God, that we might turn from our iniquities, and understand thy truth That's what we need to pray at the solemn assembly. Daniel basically prayed: You are a God who keeps His covenants and we are in this confusion and derision due to our own sins. Please bring us to a place of repentance whereby we will be able to receive truth and understanding again.)

Why is this Happening? – Jer: 4-5

Jer: 4:19-22: My bowels, my bowels! I am pained at my very heart; my heart maketh a noise in me; I cannot hold my peace, because thou hast heard, O my soul, the sound of the trumpet, the alarm of war. 20: Destruction upon destruction is cried; for the whole land is spoiled: suddenly are my tents spoiled, and my curtains in a moment. 21: How long shall I see the standard, and hear the sound of the trumpet? 22: For my people is foolish, they have not known me; they are sottish children, and they have none understanding: they are wise to do evil, but to do good they have no knowledge.

23-27: I beheld the earth, and, lo, it was without form, and void; and the heavens, and they had no light. 24: I beheld the mountains, and, lo, they trembled, and all the hills moved lightly. 25: I beheld, and, lo, there was no man, and all the birds of the heavens were fled. 26: I beheld, and, lo, the fruitful place was a wilderness, and all the cities thereof were broken down at the presence of the LORD, and by his fierce anger. 27: For thus hath the LORD said, The whole land shall be desolate; yet will I not make a full end.

(God is grieved. Why? He is grieved because He had this cry recorded in Jeremiah to teach the church and to reveal the answer to this problem of unproductiveness and stagnation. I will show you His deliverance later. Let's read on.)

28-31: For this shall the earth mourn, and the heavens above be black: because I have spoken it, I have purposed it, and will not repent, neither will I turn back from it. 29: The whole city shall flee for the noise of the horsemen and bowmen; they shall go into thickets, and climb up upon the rocks: every city shall be forsaken, and not a man dwell therein. 30: And when thou art spoiled, what wilt thou do? Though thou clothest thyself with crimson, though thou deckest thee with ornaments of gold, though thou rentest thy face with painting, in vain shalt thou make thyself fair; thy lovers will despise thee, they will seek thy life. 31: For I have heard a voice as of a woman in travail, and the anguish as of her that bringeth forth her first child, the voice of the daughter of Zion, that bewaileth herself, that spreadeth her hands, saying, Woe is me now! for my soul is wearied because of murderers.

(I am applying all this to the condition of the church and the world today. The church is, for the most part, no more effective in ministry than those trained for that purpose in the world. I'm saying we should be walking by faith in God not "do it yourself" programs. I'm saying we should be healed by the power of our super-natural God not by doctors and medicine. We should be able to lay hands on the sick and they should recover. We should be able to convey the power and majesty of the Lord Jesus Christ to a dying world and see many resurrected to new life. We should see confessing Christians living as new creatures in Christ Jesus.)

God says to us:

Jer: 5:1-2: Run ye to and fro through the streets of Jerusalem, and see now, and know, and seek in the broad places thereof, if ye can find a man, if there be any that executeth judgment, that seeketh the truth; and I will pardon it. 2: And though they say, The LORD liveth; surely they swear falsely.

(I believe that is how God sees the church today. I know that He has a remnant that has not bowed their knee to Baal. I'm talking about the church that the world sees – the one that keeps dressing up to impress the world, but she is not clothed in the glory of the Lord and the beast is going to strip her naked.

But take heart for the prayer warriors are busy and they are travailing and the birth that God wants will take place.)

3-5: O LORD, are not thine eyes upon the truth? thou hast stricken them, but they have not grieved; thou hast consumed them, but they have refused to receive correction: they have made their faces harder than a rock; they have refused to return. 4: Therefore I said, Surely these are poor; they are foolish: for they know not the way of the LORD, nor the judgment of their God. 5: I will get me unto the great men, and will speak unto them; for they have known the way of the LORD, and the judgment of their God: but these have altogether broken the yoke, and burst the bonds.

6-9: Wherefore a lion out of the forest shall slay them, and a wolf of the evenings shall spoil them, a leopard shall watch over their cities: every one that goeth out thence shall be torn in pieces: because their transgressions are many, and their backslidings are increased. 7: How shall I pardon thee for this? thy children have forsaken me, and sworn by them that are no gods: when I had fed them to the full, they then committed adultery, and assembled themselves by troops in the harlots' houses. 8: They were as fed horses in the morning: every one neighed after his neighbour's wife. 9: Shall I not visit for these things? saith the LORD: and shall not my soul be avenged on such a nation as this?

10-13: Go ye up upon her walls, and destroy; but make not a full end: take away her battlements; for they are not the LORD's. 11: For the house of Israel and the house of Judah have dealt very treacherously against me, saith the LORD. 12: They have belied the LORD, and said, It is not he; neither shall evil come upon us; neither shall we see sword nor famine: 13: And the prophets shall become wind, and the word is not in them: thus shall it be done unto them.

(God has had His prophets crying out and exhorting the people to turn wholly to the Lord, but many leaders do not completely agree with this evaluation. They assure the people that a few adjustments will make everything all right. But true Christianity is a radical about face. And those who are half-hearted are not empowered to walk by the spirit. This is why many have sincerely chosen to follow Jesus, but have followed man instead. Their lower nature still had enough power to sway their decisions and actions. This is the state of the church today.

This is why we can be described as barren and desolate as in Isa: 26:18: We have been with child, we have been in pain, we have as it were brought forth wind; we have not wrought any deliverance in the earth; neither have the inhabitants of the world fallen.)

What God says will happen to the whore:

Rev: 17:1: And there came one of the seven angels which had the seven vials, and talked with me, saying unto me, Come hither; I will shew unto thee the judgment of the great whore that sitteth upon many waters:

Rev: 17:15: And he saith unto me, The waters which thou sawest, where the whore sitteth, are peoples, and multitudes, and nations, and tongues.

Rev: 17:16: And the ten horns which thou sawest upon the beast, these shall hate the whore, and shall make her desolate and naked, and shall eat her flesh, and burn her with fire.

Rev: 19:2: For true and righteous are his judgments: for he hath judged the great whore, which did corrupt the earth with her fornication, and hath avenged the blood of his servants at her hand.

(The whore is all those who join the Babylonian way to thinking and living. Babylon is where the foolish, ungodly, and vain philosophers live. To remedy this situation, God is going to allow the beast to have his head for a season. He will strip the whore naked and at that time many will call upon the Lord in a true state of repentance and will be enabled to put on the wedding garment – Jesus Christ.)

Babylonia:

14-17: Wherefore thus saith the LORD God of hosts, Because ye speak this word, behold, I will make my words in thy mouth fire, and this people wood, and it shall devour them. 15: Lo, I will bring a nation upon you from far, O house of Israel, saith the LORD: it is a mighty nation, it is an ancient nation, a nation whose language thou knowest not, neither understandest what they say. 16: Their quiver is as an open sepulchre, they are all mighty men. 17: And they shall eat up thine harvest, and thy bread, which thy sons and thy daughters should eat: they shall eat up thy flocks and thine herds: they shall eat up thy vines and thy fig trees: they shall impoverish thy fenced cities, wherein thou trustedst, with the sword.

18-24: Nevertheless in those days, saith the LORD, I will not make a full end with you. 19: And it shall come to pass, when ye shall say, Wherefore doeth the LORD our God all these things unto us? then shalt thou answer them, Like as ye have forsaken me, and served strange gods in your land, so shall ye serve strangers in a land that is not yours. 20: Declare this in the house of Jacob, and publish it in Judah, saying, 21: Hear now this, O foolish people, and without understanding; which have eyes, and see not; which have ears, and hear not: 22: Fear ye not me? saith the LORD: will ye not tremble at my presence, which have placed the sand for the bound of the sea by a perpetual decree, that it cannot pass it: and though the waves thereof toss themselves, yet can they not prevail; though they roar, yet can they not pass over it? 23: But this people hath a revolting and a rebellious

heart; they are revolted and gone. 24: Neither say they in their heart, Let us now fear the LORD our God, that giveth rain, both the former and the latter, in his season: he reserveth unto us the appointed weeks of the harvest.

25-31: Your iniquities have turned away these things, and your sins have withholden good things from you. 26: For among my people are found wicked men: they lay wait, as he that setteth snares; they set a trap, they catch men. 27: As a cage is full of birds, so are their houses full of deceit: therefore they are become great, and waxen rich. 28: They are waxen fat, they shine: yea, they overpass the deeds of the wicked: they judge not the cause, the cause of the fatherless, yet they prosper; and the right of the needy do they not judge. 29: Shall I not visit for these things? saith the LORD: shall not my soul be avenged on such a nation as this? 30: A wonderful and horrible thing is committed in the land; 31: The prophets prophesy falsely, and the priests bear rule by their means; and my people love to have it so: and what will ye do in the end thereof?

God's remedy is:

Isa: 54:1-5: Sing, O barren, thou that didst not bear; break forth into singing, and cry aloud, thou that didst not travail with child: for more are the children of the desolate than the children of the married wife, saith the LORD. 2: Enlarge the place of thy tent, and let them stretch forth the curtains of thine habitations: spare not, lengthen thy cords, and strengthen thy stakes; 3: For thou shalt break forth on the right hand and on the left; and thy seed shall inherit the Gentiles, and make the desolate cities to be inhabited. 4: Fear not; for thou shalt not be ashamed: neither be thou confounded; for thou shalt not be put to shame: for thou shalt forget the shame of thy youth, and shalt not remember the reproach of thy widowhood any more. 5: For thy Maker is thine husband; the LORD of hosts is his name; and thy Redeemer the Holy One of Israel; The God of the whole earth shall he be called.

6-10: For the LORD hath called thee as a woman forsaken and grieved in spirit, and a wife of youth, when thou wast refused, saith thy God. 7: For a small moment have I forsaken thee; but with great mercies will I gather thee. 8: In a little wrath I hid my face from thee for a moment; but with everlasting kindness will I have mercy on thee, saith the LORD thy Redeemer. 9: For this is as the waters of Noah unto me: for as I have sworn that the waters of Noah should no more go over the earth; so have I sworn that I would not be wroth with thee, nor rebuke thee. 10: For the mountains shall depart, and the hills be removed; but my kindness shall not depart from thee, neither shall the covenant of my peace be removed, saith the LORD that hath mercy on thee.

11-17: O thou afflicted, tossed with tempest, and not comforted, behold, I will lay thy stones with fair colours, and lay thy foundations with sapphires. 12: And I will make thy windows of agates, and thy gates of carbuncles, and all thy borders of pleasant stones. 13: And all thy children shall be taught of the LORD; and great shall be the peace of thy children. 14: In righteousness shalt thou be established: thou shalt be far from oppression; for thou shalt not fear: and from terror; for it shall not come near thee. 15: Behold, they shall surely gather together, but not by me: whosoever shall gather together against thee shall fall for thy sake. 16: Behold, I have created the

smith that bloweth the coals in the fire, and that bringeth forth an instrument for his work; and I have created the waster to destroy. 17: No weapon that is formed against thee shall prosper; and every tongue that shall rise against thee in judgment thou shalt condemn. This is the heritage of the servants of the LORD, and their righteousness is of me, saith the LORD.

(Some will say; “There, you see, God promised the church peace and prosperity.” Yes, He did. And that’s what He intends to give her just as soon as she quits whoring around and receives a heart to be a chaste virgin unto the Lord. At that time, the wedding feast will take place.)

The Man of Lawlessness

Dan: 8:23-27: And in the latter time of their kingdom, when the transgressors are come to the full, a king of fierce countenance, and understanding dark sentences, shall stand up. 24: And his power shall be mighty, but not by his own power: and he shall destroy wonderfully, and shall prosper, and practise, and shall destroy the mighty and the holy people. 25: And through his policy also he shall cause craft to prosper in his hand; and he shall magnify himself in his heart, and by peace shall destroy many: he shall also stand up against the Prince of princes; but he shall be broken without hand. 26: And the vision of the evening and the morning which was told is true: wherefore shut thou up the vision; for it shall be for many days. 27: And I Daniel fainted, and was sick certain days; afterward I rose up, and did the king’s business; and I was astonished at the vision, but none understood it.

(Some may argue that it isn’t clear that this is about the man of lawlessness, but I say it is clear because of vs. 23 – latter times and transgressor come to fullness.

Take note of the clues:

- A lot of power.
- He didn’t earn the power.

- He will make decisions that are destructive and have good success at doing it.
- He will make decisions that will bind the Holy people.
- Through his policies he will cause craft – interpreted trickery, deception, dupery, fraud – to succeed.
- He will get puffed up and he will capture many through an illusion of peace.
- He stands up against Jesus, which will be his demise.)

Dan: 9: 25-27: Know therefore and understand, that from the going forth of the commandment to restore and to build Jerusalem unto the Messiah the Prince shall be seven weeks, and threescore and two weeks: the street shall be built again, and the wall, even in troublous times. 26: And after threescore and two weeks shall Messiah be cut off, but not for himself: and the people of the prince that shall come shall destroy the city and the sanctuary; and the end thereof shall be with a flood, and unto the end of the war desolations are determined. 27: And he shall confirm the covenant with many for one week: and in the midst of the week he shall cause the sacrifice and the oblation to cease, and for the overspreading of abominations he shall make it desolate, even until the consummation, and that determined shall be poured upon the desolate.

- (It's for today – it says the Messiah. I believe the flood spoken of here is a flood of lies such as in Isa: 59: 19 . . . When the enemy shall come in like a flood, the Spirit of the LORD shall lift up a standard against him. With these lies the enemy will undermine the church. Till the end of the war between Christ and the anti-Christ there will be desolations. Refer to Jer: 11:30-35
- He will bring about the signing of the peace treaty that will signify only seven years are left, until Jesus comes to reign.
- In this peace treaty there will be an agreement to muffle Christians and Jews.
- Iniquity will abound until God pours out His wrath.)

Dan: 11:21-24: And in his estate shall stand up a vile person, to whom they shall not give the honour of the kingdom: but he shall come in peaceably, and obtain the kingdom by flatteries. 22: And with the arms of a flood shall they be overflowed from before him, and shall be broken; yea, also the prince of the covenant. 23: And after the league made with him he shall work deceitfully: for he shall come up, and shall become strong with a small people. 24: He shall enter peaceably even upon the fattest places of the province; and he shall do that which his fathers have not done, nor his fathers' fathers; he shall scatter among them the prey, and spoil, and riches: yea, and he shall forecast his devices against the strong holds, even for a time.

- (He is a vile person. This means he looks good, but he has diabolical intentions.
- He doesn't really qualify to reign, but he obtains the kingdom by flatteries. That is saying what the people want to hear.

- He will work deceitfully. This means he will not be what he claims to be and he will not do what he claimed he would do.
- He gets the kingdom with the help of a small number of very influential people.
- He will spread the wealth around.
- He shall implement plans to break through the Christian strong-holds.)

Dan: 11:36-39: And the king shall do according to his will; and he shall exalt himself, and magnify himself above every god, and shall speak marvellous things against the God of gods, and shall prosper till the indignation be accomplished: for that that is determined shall be done. 37: Neither shall he regard the God of his fathers, nor the desire of women, nor regard any god: for he shall magnify himself above all. 38: But in his estate shall he honour the God of forces: and a god whom his fathers knew not shall he honour with gold, and silver, and with precious stones, and pleasant things. 39: Thus shall he do in the most strong holds with a strange god, whom he shall acknowledge and increase with glory: and he shall cause them to rule over many, and shall divide the land for gain.

- (Not at first, but at a time when he thinks he is so powerful that he can't be stopped, the man of lawlessness i.e. the anti-Christ will begin to openly do his thing. One thing he will do is begin to tell lies and slur God and Jesus. Probably in the order of what Dan Brown is doing.
- He will make his own rules and exult himself.
- It sounds to me like he will be promoting evolution – the god of forces. Or maybe it is Islam. If it's evolution the riches will go to fight environmental issues and if its Islam it will go to win the holy war.)

Jn: 7:27: Howbeit we know this man whence he is: but when Christ cometh, no man knoweth whence he is.

(People will discuss where he might have come from.)

Lk: 7:19: And John calling unto him two of his disciples sent them to Jesus, saying, Art thou he that should come? or look we for another?

- (People will wonder if he is who he looks like or not.)

Jn: 5:43-44: I am come in my Father's name, and ye receive me not: if another shall come in his own name, him ye will receive. 44: How can ye believe, which receive honour one of another, and seek not the honour that cometh from God only?

- (People will believe in him because they seek not the honour that comes from God. In other words he says what they want to hear, not what God wants to say.)

1Jn: 2:18-23: Little children, it is the last time: and as ye have heard that antichrist shall come, even now are there many antichrists; whereby we know that it is the last time. They went out from us, but they were not of us; for if they had been of us, they would no doubt have continued with us: but they went out, that they might be made manifest that they were not all of us. 20: But ye have an unction from the Holy One, and ye know all things. 21: I have not written unto you because ye know not the truth, but because ye know it, and that no lie is of the truth. 22: Who is a liar but he that denieth that Jesus is the Christ? He is antichrist, that denieth the Father and the Son. 23: Whosoever denieth the Son, the same hath not the Father: (but) he that acknowledgeth the Son hath the Father also.

(This is where the man of lawlessness is known as the anti-Christ.)

- It is when he denies God and denies that Jesus is the Son of God come in the flesh.)

1Jn: 4:1-3: Beloved, believe not every spirit, but try the spirits whether they are of God: because many false prophets are gone out into the world. 2: Hereby know ye the Spirit of God: Every spirit that confesseth that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is of God: 3: And every spirit that confesseth not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is not of God: and this is that spirit of antichrist, whereof ye have heard that it should come; and even now already is it in the world.

They Loved Not the Truth

2 Thess: 2:1-5: Now we beseech you, brethren, by the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, and by our gathering together unto him, 2: That ye be not soon shaken in mind, or be troubled, neither by spirit, nor by word, nor by letter as from us, as that the day of Christ is at hand. Let no man deceive you by any means: for that day shall not come, except there come a falling away first, and that man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition; 4: Who opposeth and exalteth himself above all that is called God, or that is worshipped; so that he as God sitteth in the

temple of God, shewing himself that he is God. 5: Remember ye not, that, when I was yet with you, I told you these things?

(In studying this passage, what has to happen before Jesus comes for His church? There has to be a great falling away from the truth. The church will fall into error. There will be a remnant that will love the truth and remain faithful to God.

The second thing that must happen before Jesus comes for His spotless bride will be the revealing of the anti-Christ. I know many teach that this doesn't have to happen first, but I don't know why they teach that – it's written right here. How will we know the anti-Christ? He will oppose what the Bible teaches and exalt himself as the one who was to come.

If you examine what Oprah is teaching, you will have a good idea what the anti-Christ's philosophy will be.)

6-7: And now ye know what withholdeth that he might be revealed in his time. 7: For the mystery of iniquity doth already work: only he who now letteth will let, until he be taken out of the way.

(Everyone believes that the Holy Spirit is keeping the anti-Christ spirit at bay, but I sincerely believe it is the Truth that is in Satan's way. Let's read on and see. The Truth can be called He because Jesus is the Truth.)

8-12: And then shall that Wicked be revealed, whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy with the brightness of his coming: 9: Even him, whose coming is after the working of Satan with all power and signs and lying wonders, 10: And with all deceivableness of unrighteousness in them that perish; because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved. 11: And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie: 12: That they all might be damned who believed not the truth, but had pleasure in unrighteousness.

(What causes the church to fall away? They love not the Truth. What enables the liar to sow deceptive teachings and a strong delusion? People love not the Truth. How does lawlessness take over? People love not the Truth.)

13-17: But we are bound to give thanks alway to God for you, brethren beloved of the Lord, because God hath from the beginning chosen you to salvation through sanctification of the Spirit and belief of the truth: 14: Whereunto he called you by our gospel, to the obtaining of the glory of our Lord Jesus Christ. 15: Therefore, brethren, stand fast, and hold the traditions which ye have been taught, whether by word, or our epistle. 16: Now our Lord Jesus Christ himself, and God, even our Father, which hath loved us, and hath given us everlasting consolation and good hope through grace, 17: Comfort your hearts, and stablish you in every good word and

work.

(How can one be spared from the strong delusion? They must love the truth. What is the Truth?

Paul writes here urging the brethren to stand fast and hold on to what is taught in the New Testament and the New Testament cannot be understood as it should be without the teachings in the Old Testament.

The truth is that God calls us to repent and turn away from unrighteousness and turn to the living God.

Do not be deceived by the teachings of the age. Hold fast to the Truth. Hold fast to what the Holy Bible teaches. Man does not live by bread alone, but by every word of God. Mt: 4:4)

Pray, that Ye Be Accounted Worthy

Lk: 21:5-9: And as some spake of the temple, how it was adorned with goodly stones and gifts, he said, 6: As for these things which ye behold, the days will come, in the which there shall not be left one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down. 7: And they asked him, saying, Master, but when shall these things be? and what sign will there be when these things shall come to pass? 8: And he said, Take heed that ye be not deceived: for many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ; and the time draweth near: go ye not therefore after them. 9: But when ye shall hear of wars and commotions, be not terrified: for these things must first come to pass; but the end is not by and by.

Jesus prophesied the destruction of the Jewish temple. His disciples asked Him when that would happen and what signs would precede its happening. Jesus cautions His listeners to watch what's happening so as not to be deceived.

Sign #1:

He says before the time of the end many false prophets would rise to fame and deceive many with their erroneous teachings. Many cults would develop and hurt the truth.

10-11: Then said he unto them, nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: 11: And great earthquakes shall be in divers places, and famines, and pestilences; and fearful sights and great signs shall there be from heaven.

Sign #2:

World wars and national wars and civil wars, increase in earthquakes and famines, as well as scary things happening in the sky.

12-15: But before all these, they shall lay their hands on you, and persecute you, delivering you up to the synagogues, and into prisons, being brought before kings and rulers for my name's sake. 13: And it shall turn to you for a testimony. 14: Settle it therefore in your hearts, not to meditate before what ye shall answer: 15: For I will give you a mouth and wisdom, which all your adversaries shall not be able to gainsay nor resist.

After Jesus went to heaven, Christianity developed and was unwelcome by the majority, so it is today. So we can take this passage as instruction for now because there is a world wide war on Christianity in the making. Jesus lets us know that God's purpose in it is to have the arrested Christians boldly testify for the truth and that He will give His witnesses the words to say when they need them.

16-24: And ye shall be betrayed both by parents, and brethren, and kinsfolks, and friends; and some of you shall they cause to be put to death. 17: And ye shall be hated of all men for my name's sake. 18: But there shall not an hair of your head perish. 19: In your patience possess ye your souls. 20: And when ye shall see Jerusalem compassed with armies, then know that the desolation thereof is nigh. 21: Then let them which are in Judaea flee to the mountains; and let them which are in the midst of it depart out; and let not them that are in the countries enter thereinto. 22: For these be the days of vengeance, that all things which are written may be fulfilled. 23: But woe unto them that are with child, and to them that give suck, in those days! for there shall be great distress in the land, and wrath upon this people. 24: And they shall fall by the edge of the sword, and shall be led away captive into all nations: and Jerusalem shall be trodden down of the Gentiles, until the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled.

Sign 3#:

The early Jewish Christians went through this, but it's not over. All that Jesus said here is happening to the Jews and the Christians in these last days. This is the grand finale in the war between good and evil. The devil is having a heyday. It will end with God's wrath which is the inevitable result of habitually disregarding His Word.

Christians, even in the United States of America – if it exists at the peak of this thing, will suffer this kind of persecution. Our own families will fight against us and will turn us into the authorities. They will sneer and scream hateful things at us because we are considered the intolerant. Never mind that they are completely intolerant toward true Christianity. They hate Christians because they will not go along with global thinking which they deem necessary to establish a new world order.

25-26: And there shall be signs in the sun, and in the moon, and in the stars; and upon the earth distress of nations, with perplexity; the sea and the waves roaring; 26: Men's hearts failing them for fear, and for looking after those things which are coming on the earth: for the powers of heaven shall be shaken.

Sign #4:

There is going to be a number of cataclysmic events that will shake thing up. This may be due to bombs or rockets or it may be due to a comet or some other natural event, but in any case it will be very frightening and devastating.

27-28: And then shall they see the Son of man coming in a cloud with power and great glory. 28: And when these things begin to come to pass, then look up, and lift up your heads; for your redemption draweth nigh.

29-33: And he spake to them a parable; Behold the fig tree, and all the trees; 30: When they now shoot forth, ye see and know of your own selves that summer is now nigh at hand. 31: So likewise ye, when ye see these things come to pass, know ye that the kingdom of God is nigh at hand. 32: Verily I say unto you, This generation shall not pass away, till all be fulfilled. 33: Heaven and earth shall pass away: but my words shall not pass away.

Sign #5:

When we see all these thing happening together or right after each other we are to know that He's coming soon – in our generation. We are to watch for Him and make sure we are not caught up in what the world is doing.

34-36: And take heed to yourselves, lest at any time your hearts be overcharged with surfeiting, and drunkenness, and cares of this life, and so that day come upon you unawares. 35: For as a snare shall it come on all them that dwell on the face of the whole earth. 36: Watch ye therefore, and pray always, that ye may be accounted worthy to escape all these things that shall come to pass, and to stand before the Son of man.

We need to pray that we will be accounted worthy to escape all these things that shall come to pass and to stand before the Son of man. Along with praying this we need to be doing our part to see that we are prepared and ready. I want to emphasize this important instruction. This is the day and the hour to be praying that we will be accounted worthy. This could mean worthy of the rapture – that is our vessels are full of oil and we are ready for the bridegroom or it could mean that Christians must be watching and have on the full armor of God to escape from all the snares that are being laid for them by the enemy. In any case I urge you to carefully observe all biblical instruction and be ready because we are not escaping on our looks or on any name-dropping such as “I belong to Jesus.” You will escape if you are accounted worthy.